

# **PUZZLES**

VOLUME I

**God's Puzzle Solved**

Part I

**God's Puzzle Completed**

Part II

**The Mystery Of God**

Part III

**Prophecy Is Cyclical**

Part IV

**God's Mystery Fulfilled**

Part V

By

Art Mokarow

# **GOD'S PUZZLE SOLVED**

## **Part 1**

**By**

**ART MOKAROW**

***God's Puzzle Solved* is Part 1 of Puzzles – Vol. I.**

**The following books comprise Volume I**

<b><i>God's Puzzle Solved</i></b>	<b><i>Part 1</i></b>
<b><i>God's Puzzle Completed</i></b>	<b><i>Part 2</i></b>
<b><i>The Mystery of God</i></b>	<b><i>Part 3</i></b>
<b><i>Prophecy Is Cyclical</i></b>	<b><i>Part 4</i></b>
<b><i>God's Mystery Fulfilled</i></b>	<b><i>Part 5</i></b>

**Written By Art Mokarow**

**Copyright TXu 1-167-465 – *God's Puzzle Solved***

**All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.**

# CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	v
<i>CHART (DESIGNED BY DAVID McMULLEN)</i>	vii
<b>IS GOD REAL?</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>GOD'S PUZZLE</b>	<b>37</b>
<b>WHO IS GOD?</b>	<b>65</b>
<b>GOD'S CHARACTER AND PERSONALITY</b>	<b>99</b>
<b>GOD'S LIBRARY</b>	<b>131</b>
<b>GOD'S MIND REVEALED</b>	<b>161</b>
<b>THE TRUE GOSPEL</b>	<b>207</b>
<b>MARRIAGE, THE GREAT MYSTERY</b>	<b>259</b>
<b>THE COVENANTS</b>	<b>303</b>
<b>WHAT WAS ADDED TO THE LAW?</b>	<b>349</b>
<b>THE SPIRIT VS. THE LETTER</b>	<b>363</b>
<b>SATAN – GOD'S HELPER</b>	<b>383</b>
<b>GOD'S ETERNAL FIRE</b>	<b>413</b>
<b>GOD'S KINGDOM</b>	<b>463</b>

## PREFACE

God, The Father and His Son, Jesus, want you to keep *growing spiritually* – all your life. To do so, you need to spend much time in prayer and Bible study. Prayer is your way to talk to God and let Him know your needs and wishes. Reading and studying *The Bible* (His Holy Word) is how God speaks to you.

Through *The Bible*, God reveals to you who He is, what His *purpose is* and *what He wants you to do*. *The Bible* is written as a mystery or a puzzle (Matthew 13:10-11). God states those who seek Him, diligently, will understand The Mystery of His Kingdom (but not necessarily The Mystery of *The Bible* as no one can know everything).

God will, little by little, open your mind to greater understanding. Albert Einstein once said, “*I want to know God’s thoughts...the rest are details.*” This book’s *only purpose* is to piece together *the major parts* of this puzzle, so in your personal Bible Study, your *spiritual understanding* will be increased. Ultimately, a complete story from *Genesis* to *Revelation* will become apparent.

You will understand the great love that The Almighty God and His Son, Jesus have for you. The contents of this book are strictly as *The Bible* reveals. No consideration has been given to any church groups, denominations, sects or ideologies and there is no attachment to any religious group. These contents have been (totally) written as revealed from God’s Word.

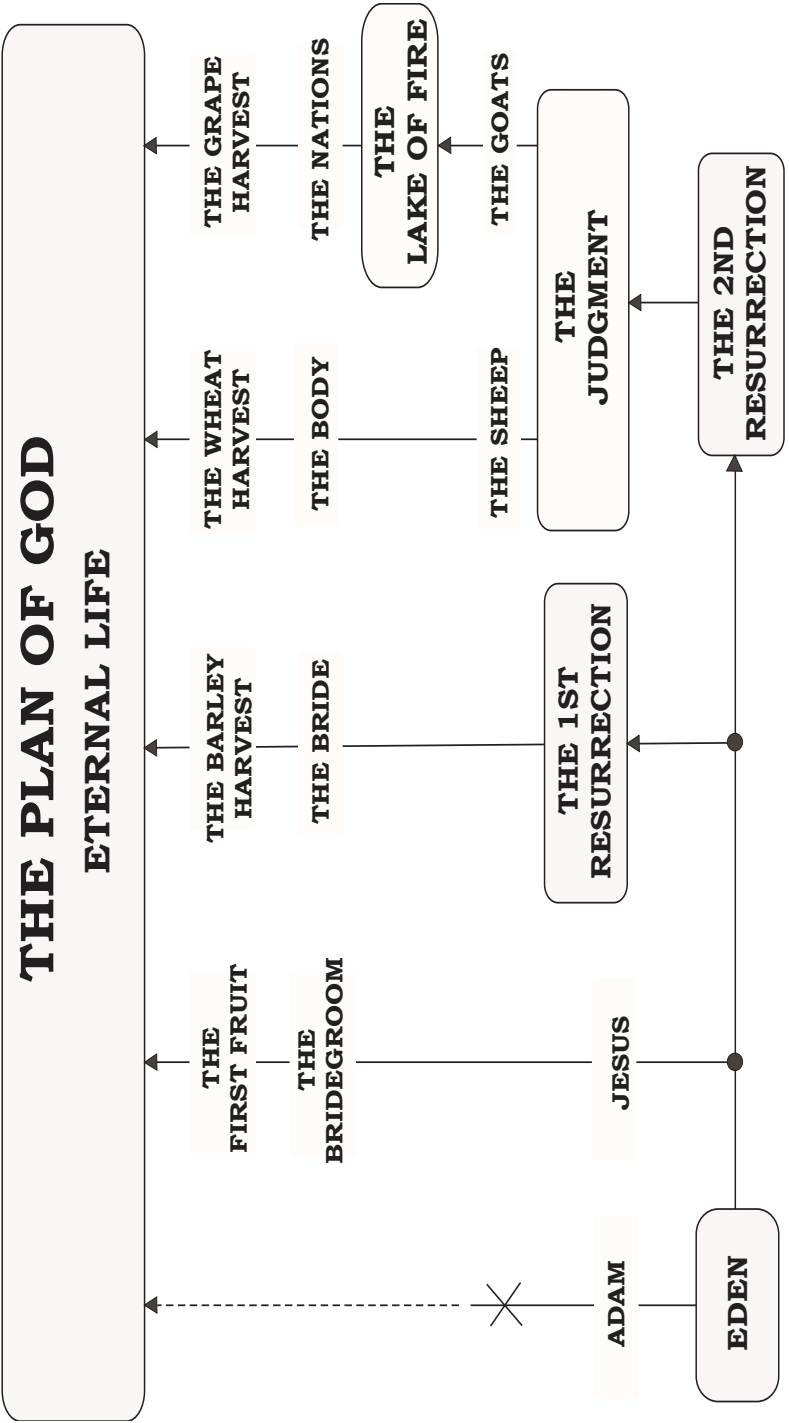
The Apostle Paul states *the most* anyone can know about God’s *truth* is only “*in part*” (I Corinthians 13:9). No person or group has all *the truth*.

**Comments and criticisms are welcomed. Please, if you disagree, include *Scripture* to prove your point. As usual, no money is accepted for these books. All books are absolutely free. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given).**

**So far, Art has written 54 books. The last published books are now on a CD disc. You can read all of them on your computer. Please request your free copy. All books can be downloaded *free of charge* from the website. Any biblical questions you may have can be e-mailed or sent by mail.**

**Art Mokarow  
Box 1197  
Montgomery, TX 77356**

**Email:      [art@mokarow.com](mailto:art@mokarow.com) (comments and questions)  
Website:    [www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com](http://www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com) (books)  
              [www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.com](http://www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.com) (articles)**



# Chapter 1

## IS GOD REAL?

Since The Garden of Eden, mankind has approached *life* as a bewildering puzzle. *Creation*, itself, stands before you as the grandest of conundrums. What started *life* and who started it? Why was it started? Why are humans here?

In the search for the answers to *life's questions*, Science has evolved to try to explain it all. Most recently, scientists have given birth to The Theory of Everything. How close are you to really knowing the correct answers to the most profound questions about your *life*?

Many religions, philosophies and sciences have struggled with these issues. *The mystery surrounding the truth* is more complex than any cleric, philosopher, scientist, scholar or all of mankind's thoughts collectively could possibly conjure up. In this search for a reasonable, rational view of *the creation* and *the explanation of life*, you must look at the various possibilities. When you implement simple detective work, coupled with common sense in studying *The Scriptures*, you will finally get a true glimpse of the answers to these questions. Down through the ages, mankind has shown an abundance of evidence that confirms you cannot find the answers to *life's great puzzle*. God, Himself, is The Only One who has these answers. Within the pages of *The Bible*, you will find an outline of His *plan*, which answers *life's puzzling questions*.



## Searching For Answers

When you begin the search for answers, it looks like an impossible puzzle. Yet, the pieces of this puzzle can be put together if you know where to begin. If the outline of *The Bible* is followed carefully, an account of a great, *unconditional Love Story* will be discovered. *God's Puzzle Solved* reveals the most exceptional and incomparable Love Story ever imagined. God's love will explain all of life's puzzling questions. You will know how it all started, what started it and why it was started in the first place. Finally, you will have the answer as to why you have been placed here on this planet.

To understand God and the love He has for all His *creation*, is truly beyond one's human comprehension. No human words are adequate or will ever be sufficient to fully explain *the marvelous plan* your Heavenly Father has for you. What you will find is that your Father has given all the means you need to understand. True science, physics and mathematics have helped solve the complex *equation* called *life*.

## How It All Started

*The Bible* is *mankind's instructional book*. It will show you how to research these age-old questions so that you can find the real answers. *The Book of Job* is one of the oldest books in *The Bible*. It is estimated to have been written from 2,500 to 4,000 years ago. Job not only had many problems but great sufferings. Job's three friends added to his misery by recounting and defining more of his problems. None of them actually came up with the

real answer about why Job was having problems. To appreciate the real questions, God said the following to Job directly.

Job 38:3-7 <sup>3</sup>Gird up now your loins like a man; for I will demand of you, and answer you me. <sup>4</sup>Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare, if you have understanding. <sup>5</sup>Who has laid the measures thereof, if you know? Or who has stretched the line upon it? <sup>6</sup>Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? Or who laid the corner stone thereof; <sup>7</sup>When the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy?

God tells Job, “<sup>3</sup>*Gird up now your loins like a man.*” Paraphrasing, He asks if Job thinks he knows the answer to *everything*. He wants to know if Job knew who created all things and if he understands *the purpose of life*. God is calling Job to *account*. He asks, “<sup>4</sup>*Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth?*”

## The Foundation Of The Earth

How would you answer these questions if you were Job? “*Who made the foundation of the earth? What was it laid upon?*” God is asking Job very significant and very important questions. Where was Job when all this happened? Where were you? “<sup>5</sup>*Who has laid the measures thereof, if you know? Or who had stretched the line upon it?*” God spoke in terms that Job would understand. Job would, indeed, have known how to construct a building by first surveying the site, laying the foundation and then erecting the structure. But could Job even begin to measure

the earth, the solar system and the universe? Hardly! It has been only in the last few centuries that astronomers and astrophysicists have made accurate measurements of the earth, the solar system and the galaxies. With high-tech instruments like The Hubble Space Telescope and advanced mathematics, scientists are now attempting to measure the vast distances and complex parameters of the universe. This would be compared to “*stretching the line*” (*The Bible's* measurement) upon it.

So, the questions that God asked Job aren't ludicrous after all. He is asking, “[Where were you] *when the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy?*” It took thousands of years for science to begin to understand the forces that actually hold the earth together. Job did not have the tools of modern science in order to answer God's penetrating questions.

## A State Of Mind

To prove that God exists, one must understand something about human reasoning. Mankind can always come up with an excuse to explain his own thoughts and personal opinions. When you hear the simple explanations offered by *The Bible*, you can only come to one conclusion. That conclusion is *no one* was there in *the beginning*. Job wasn't there and neither were you. Only God was there and He reveals the answers in His *word*.

Proverbs 8:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Does not wisdom cry? And understanding put forth her voice? <sup>2</sup>She stands in the top of high places, by the way in the places of the paths.

In *The Book Of Proverbs*, God reveals *the process of creation* to you. This is the chapter about *wisdom* and the personification of *wisdom*. Some say that *wisdom* refers to Christ, while others say it applies to God. Whether Solomon is talking about Jesus Christ or God, it doesn't matter because the subject here is *wisdom*. What is wisdom? *"Does not wisdom cry? And understanding put forth her voice?"* The Hebrew word for "*wisdom*" is "*hokmah*." It can, also, be translated as "*intelligent skill*." The person who has wisdom possesses skill in intelligence. It means the person is smart or wise.

*"She [meaning wisdom] stands in the top of high places, by the way in the places of the paths."* In other words, in the development of intelligent skills, common sense (logic) can be found all around you. From the beginning, God gave humanity *free choice* to follow Him or to ignore Him. When Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden and ate from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil, it was because they wanted to *decide, immediately, for themselves* what was *right* and what was *wrong*. They could have chosen The Tree of Life, which would have, immediately, revealed to them what was *right*. Instead, Adam and Eve wanted to be independent and to decide everything for themselves.

## The Scientific Method

Consider the first loaves of bread ever made. Did the loaves taste good? How many loaves of bread had to be made before the recipe was good enough so that the loaves were really delicious? No doubt it was a process that required some trial and error. This is truly the basis for

the process of The Scientific Method, which is studying by observation, guesswork and trial and error. All this is done to see what is true, logical and makes sense. That is the exact process that humanity has chosen from the time of Adam and Eve. It is that simple. God allows you to decide everything for yourself, for your benefit or demise. Ironically, there is a hunger to want to know why things work a certain way, so man has always explored the unknown.

Proverbs 8:3-5 <sup>3</sup>She cries at the gates, at the entry of the city, at the coming in at the doors. <sup>4</sup>To you, O men, I call; and my voice is to the sons of man. <sup>5</sup>O you simple, understand wisdom: and, you fools, be you of an understanding heart.

God asked Job to stand up like a man and asked where he was when the foundation of the earth was laid. “<sup>5</sup>*Oh you simple, understand wisdom and you fools, be you of an understanding heart.*” The problem is *the heart*. “*The heart*” is the term used by *The Bible* to define “*the organ of emotional motivation.*” With your heart, you feel everything emotionally. In general, mankind doesn’t want to find out how simple it is to prove that God exists. Too many individuals make decisions based on the emotions of their hearts. Few use the logic of their minds. This is what Adam and Eve did. Make sure that you have a heart that is motivated by common sense (a heart that has logic and understanding).

## A Matter Of Faith

It is often said that in order to know God, it is a matter of

**faith. However, it takes more faith to believe in Science than it does to believe in God. You must have more faith to believe in evolution than to believe in God.**

**Proverbs 8:6-7** *“Hear; for I will speak of excellent things; and the opening of my lips shall be right things. <sup>7</sup>For my mouth shall speak truth; and wickedness is an abomination to my lips.*

*“Hear, for I will speak of excellent things [God speaking to you]; And the opening of my lips shall be right things.”* Some people give religious words *“mystical meanings”* for their own purposes. They do not take The Words in *The Bible* for the basic, simple reality they express. Instead, it is common for critics to explain them using vague and obscure meanings. Either that or else these words are made to fit into some mystical belief or into their religious system.

## **Destructive Religion**

Clearly, religion can be used for destructive purposes. God’s *messages* can become twisted, obfuscated and variously interpreted to fit anyone’s agenda (whether for good or evil). God tells you that when He opens His lips, He will disclose *“very excellent things.”* He will tell you what is right and good. His mouth speaks only the truth, *“<sup>7</sup>For my mouth shall speak truth; and wickedness is an abomination to my lips.”* God declares that He is telling you *only* what is *right* and *true*.

**Proverbs 8:22-23** <sup>22</sup>The LORD possessed me in the beginning of his way, before his works of old. <sup>23</sup>I was

set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was.

Where can you get wisdom and understanding? Who is going to tell you the real truth, so you know the right way to think? God, through Solomon, is talking about wisdom and how wisdom existed long before *the creation of the universe*. Intellectual skill existed before the universe. “<sup>23</sup>*I was set up from everlasting.*” The word “*everlasting*” in Hebrew is “*olam,*” meaning “*eon*” or “*age.*”

### How Long Is Forever?

When God tells you that something is “*forever,*” then it actually means “*age lasting.*” There are many different “*age-lasting*” periods. Some call it “*dispensation,*” as in “*The Noachian Dispensation*” or “*The Dispensation of Grace.*” “*Dispensation*” is an age-lasting period during which God accomplishes His *purpose* for mankind. So, God is telling you that through all the different ages, there is *no time* for Him. God does not need a wrist watch.

Malachi 3:6 For I am the LORD, I change not; therefore you sons of Jacob are not consumed.

God says, “*I change not.*” If God never changes, never had *a beginning* and will never have *an end,* then time means nothing to God. He is telling you about age-lasting events that do happen, as in the beginning of the universe. “*I was set up* [speaking of wisdom] *from everlasting, from the beginning or ever the earth was*” (Proverbs 8:23). So, this is going back to *the creation of all things.* You can know how it all happened.

## Seeking Wisdom

Everyone must seek wisdom. To get wisdom, an individual must seek understanding (truth) along with knowledge. The Hebrew word “*yadá*” in English means “*knowledge*” or “*certainly certain.*” When the word “*knowledge*” is used in *The Bible*, it is talking about *facts*. It means “*truth.*” There are no *ifs*, *ands* or *buts*. Rather, it is *certainly certain*. That is true knowledge. No theories, no conjecture, just that which is “*certainly certain.*”

Romans 1:16-19 <sup>16</sup>For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God to salvation to every one that believes; to the Jew first and also to the Greek. <sup>17</sup>For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith. <sup>18</sup>For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; <sup>19</sup>Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God has showed it to them.

In *Romans*, God talks about *the beginning of creation*. Paul writes about the actual process of *creation* itself. He tells you how it all came about and the reason for it. He makes clear that humanity is without excuse when asking whether there is a God or whether God created everything.

## Two Groups

God separates people into *two groups*. *The first group* is pliable and willing to understand, but *the second group*,



purposely, is not interested in wanting to understand *the truth*. They couldn't care less how or why the universe was made. *The Truth of God* is revealed through *increasing faith*. In other words, if you believe God, listen and hear Him through His *word*.

Only then, will you begin to understand and grow in wisdom. In the beginning, it takes *faith*. As God reveals Himself and His *power*, a greater sense of clarity will be revealed to you. “<sup>17</sup>*As it is written, the just shall live by faith.*” Here is *the first group* of human beings who, by *faith*, have decided to believe God and the message of *The Gospel*. By doing so, they experience an understanding of The Power of God. “<sup>18</sup>*For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness.*”

*The second group* of individuals consists of The Atheists and Agnostics (those who do not believe). Atheists refuse to believe and The Agnostics don't know what to believe. Scientists are divided. Some, who believe in God, have discovered that *the laws of science* help reveal The True Living God. Others believe the universe started by *accident* with no *intelligent* First Cause (God).

## Creation Versus Non-Creation

“<sup>18</sup>*For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men.*” Those who do not believe in God are considered to be *the ungodly* or *unrighteous*. “*Unrighteousness*” means “*you are doing wrong.*” Of course, this is an opinion from those who believe in God as The Creator. The primary trouble concerns

those whose opinions (after seeking proof) are *right* and those whose opinions (without seeking proof) are *wrong*. You must recognize *the truth* in the statement, “<sup>19</sup>*Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them.*” Be sure to understand the point God is telling you through The Apostle Paul. God can be known! Yes, you can prove that God exists. The Greek word for “*manifest*” is “*phaneros*” which means “*utterly obvious.*” He said, “<sup>19</sup>*For God has showed it to them.*” This refers to *the two groups of people*. One group, through *faith*, believes in God. They believe that God, being *The First Cause* or *The Beginner of Everything*, is *The One* who made all things.

*This group* believes by faith. As they believe and continue to study and learn (little by little), the true concepts become clearer. *The second group* chooses to live by their preconceived ideas. God allows them to believe a lie as a result of their personal opinions. All humanity fits into one of *these two groups*. God allows everyone to choose to either be with Him or without Him. Either way, God is with you and ultimately you find that everyone will come to *the truth*.

## How God Reveals Himself

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.

What maintains the universe? There are invisible forces that uphold everything in the physical universe. Look at some of those forces and how they reveal God, “<sup>20</sup>*For the*

*invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen*" (physically seen or perceived).

God tells you where you must look to understand Him and His *power*. God tells you *the things that are made* reveal Him and His *power*. The words "*the things that are made*" translated into Greek are, "*ho poiema*," which means "*the creation*," "*work*" or "*activity*." Everything that God has created which can be seen, perceived or detected (whether observable or hidden) reveal Him.

$$F = G \frac{m_1 m_2}{r^2}$$

Where:

F = force due to gravity

G =  $6.672 \times 10^{11} \text{ m kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-2}$   
(the Universal Gravitational Constant)

m1, m2 = mass

r = distance between masses

## The Invisible Things

To whom can these things be revealed? They are revealed to everyone! God leaves everyone all of the clues (by means of all things that are made). There will always be someone who will ask, "*If there is a God, why doesn't He show Himself?*" Actually, God does reveal Himself, "<sup>20</sup>*For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood.*" God discloses (in the texts) that there were *visible* and *invisible things* when the universe was made. The fundamental particles and forces of nature, *from the creation of the world*, reveal God's *power* and *divinity*. Science calls this "*Particle Physics*."

Gaze upward into the heavenly expanse. Behold the ocean of stars that are cast into the firmament. These are stars which appear as little diamonds. Witness the spectrum of

spectacular colors as the billowy clouds roll by before the sun sets below the horizon. When you see all these wondrous sights in the universe unfolding before your very eyes, there can be no doubt that there is a God who created it all for you.

Still, as overpowering and beautiful as the night sky is, the proof of God is found in all the invisible fundamental forces in the universe. You can prove the invisible things of God, “<sup>20</sup>*even His eternal power and Godhead...by the things that are made, so that they are without excuse.*” The essence of

God is His *invisible power*. For now, eliminate religious mysticism and the personal opinions of men. Accept The Word of God for what it says.

$$E = hf$$

Where:  
 E = energy  
 $h = 6.626 \times 10^{-34} \text{ m J s}$   
 (Planck's Constant)  
 f = frequency

## Four Fundamental Forces

There are *four fundamental* forces in the world that are invisible – but the effects of those forces are visible. These forces interact between the various sub-atomic particles. They determine the large-scale behavior of matter throughout the universe. The first force is *Gravity* (Newton's Law of Gravitation) which states that every particle in the universe attracts every other particle in the universe. It has a force proportional to the mass of the particles and inversely proportional to the square of the distance between them (see formula).

The more mass that something has, the greater the gravi-

tational pull that is exerted. However, gravity is the weakest of the four forces. It diminishes exponentially with the square of the distance and extends to infinity. Have you ever seen gravity? No one has, because gravity is invisible. However, no one can deny its existence, because you can feel it, experience it and see its affects. When you jump in the air, there is a force that pulls you down. It is invisible, but it is undeniably there doing its specially “designated job.” The second type of invisible force is *Electromagnetism*, which can be explained as waves (radio and TV signals). Are these waves visible? Can you see them? If so, where are they? Are they invisible? Electromagnetic forces include gamma rays, ultra-violet rays, x-rays and so forth.

$$E = mc_2$$

Where:

E = energy

m = mass

c = the speed of light

## What Is Light?

One of the most amazing forces is *light*. Light can be very bright but you don't actually see *the light waves* themselves. Electric lamps light a room or an object. You can pass your hand through the light but you can't feel the light itself. When you grab some light waves, you have captured nothing. You can't grab light waves. Electricity goes through a light bulb, heats the filament and diffuses the light on to the table or throughout the room. Nonetheless, the forces at work are all invisible. Science has found that light has waves just like the ocean has waves. The more waves per unit, the greater the frequency, which means more *light energy*. Interestingly, you find that, “*God is light*” (I John 1:5). The word for “*light*” in Greek

is “*phos*” from which you get the word “*photon*.” Photons transmit light energy. Light is an invisible electromagnetic force.

The third invisible force is *The Strong Nuclear Force*. This force acts within the nucleus of atoms in order to hold together the protons and neutrons. It is the strongest of the four forces. It diminishes exponentially with distance to the seventh power and extends to infinity. Einstein developed a formula based on this third invisible force. His famous equation equates mass and energy (see formula). Mass is anything that occupies space and has weight, such as the earth, a rock or a tiny piece of dust. The total mass of the atoms of an object multiplied by the speed of light squared equals *energy*! Light travels at 186,300 miles per second. If you take an object like a rock or even the earth itself and multiply its mass by the speed of light squared, you get energy. Indeed, this is an incredible amount of energy. This equation is the foundation of nuclear weapons. And yet, these subatomic forces are invisible as well.

### Power In A Pint

A pint of water converted into energy would yield enough energy to supply The United States with electricity for twelve days. On this basis, one fifty-gallon barrel of water could provide The U.S. with enough electricity to last ten years! This goes to show the enormous amount of power potential when matter is reduced to pure energy.

The fourth invisible force is *The Weak Nuclear Force*. This force, like the Strong Nuclear Force, also operates within the nucleus of an atom. It governs the process of radioac-

tive decay. The sun's thermonuclear reactions would not be able to function without it. The Weak Nuclear Force is necessary for the buildup of heavy nuclei. God told you about all this in *The Book of Romans*. This concerns *the forces*, the invisible forces, that you can *discover in the material universe* that discloses God's *power*. All forces, visible and invisible, come from God and reveal Him by *the very powers* they contain.

Romans 1:21-23 <sup>21</sup>Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations and their foolish heart was darkened. <sup>22</sup>Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools. <sup>23</sup>And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man and to birds and four-footed beasts and creeping things.

**Ironically, there was a time in the beginning when God (through an angel) was in Eden. This was when everyone, including Adam, Eve, Abel and Cain, knew God personally (after Abel was slain by Cain, God had to be sought until the time of Noah). “<sup>21</sup>Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations.”**

**They didn't have wisdom. They didn't stick to understanding or to true knowledge and facts, “<sup>21</sup>and their foolish heart was darkened. <sup>22</sup>Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools.” God calls an evolutionist who doesn't believe in Him “a fool.” “<sup>23</sup>And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God.” What was The Glory? The Glory was from these invisible forces that manifested God's *power*.**

## Exchanged Glory

Then, they changed Him from a glorious, incorruptible God into *an object*. The God who is omniscient, omnipotent, all knowing and all-powerful, with all His capabilities, was about to be reduced into *a mere idol*. They reduced God into an object made of gold, silver, wood, granite, marble, cement, ceramic or any other convenient material.

Is it any wonder that God became angry? Parents can perhaps empathize, in a very small degree, with the hurt God feels. This is similar to when a child is told a fact but the child refuses to believe. “*Don’t touch the hot stove because it will burn you.*” But the child touches it nonetheless. Parents commiserate with the children’s pain because they know what a painful experience it is. God is hurt when you do not believe His truths. It truly hurts Him.

Matthew 23:37 <sup>37</sup>O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you that kills the prophets and stones them which are sent to you, how often would I have gathered your children together, even as a hen gathers her chickens under her wings and you would not!

Surely, you can understand why Christ, The Son, is also hurt. When He saw Jerusalem, He brought the above message to His children, Israel. They changed His Father, the incorruptible God, into an image made corrupt by man. God, in the eyes of His *creation*, had been fashioned into an idol. He was compared to the image of birds, fish, creeping things and four-footed beasts!



## Why Study Science?

When studying science, you can confirm many *biblical truths*. But understand that *the result* of scientific investigation will be *wrong* if it does not point to God. Ironically, there are many major splits and divisive theories among scientists. Some say “*the world is facing a greenhouse effect.*” Others point to a forthcoming *ice age*. Some say humanity impacts the greenhouse effect, while others say it is arrogant to think that mankind can significantly *alter* nature.

Some scientists believe God is The Creator while other scientists, who don't understand Him, will not even acknowledge His *existence*. Instead, they teach everything that goes against God. They promote their evolutionist conclusions in volumes of books that are taught in many of the school systems. What possible chance do students have to learn *the truth* about God? Schools are teaching children the opposite of what God is. It is a big statement to make, but it is universally accepted by believers and non-believers alike. The statement is that evolution is not a fact! Evolution, they proudly declare, happens by accident (no intellect, design or intended law). It is just *plain time and chance* – a pure accident!

## God Discloses What He Is

John 4:23-24 <sup>23</sup>But the hour comes and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him. <sup>24</sup>God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

Biblically, God tells you about *the invisible things* that disclose His *power*. When Jesus Christ was talking to a Samaritan woman about the worship of God, she stated that Samaritans worship God in Mount Gerizim, while The Jews worship God in Jerusalem. Jesus Christ told this Samaritan woman that “<sup>23</sup>*the hour comes and now is when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him.*” Why? “<sup>24</sup>*God is a Spirit.*”

## What Is Spirit?

As used in *The Old Testament*, the word “*Spirit*,” in Hebrew, is “*ruah*” which means “*strong wind*.” In *The New Testament*, the word in Greek “*pneuma*” is used (from which you get the word “*pneumatic*”). It also means “*wind*,” but it is infinitely more potent. In Greek, it translates to “*a blast of wind*” or something forceful and full of energy. So, God is *energy* just like the wind. In The Netherlands, the people use many windmills. No one can see the energy from the wind, but you do see the result just as you see the results of light. It is remarkable that wind has the power to make electricity, to turn on light bulbs and to run all sorts of equipment and machinery. Spirit is not a vapor. It is not a smoke-like appearance. It is a force which contains great energy.

I John 1:1-4 <sup>1</sup>That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; <sup>2</sup>(For the life was manifested and we have seen it and bear witness and show to you that eternal life, which was with the Father

and was manifested to us;) <sup>3</sup>That which we have seen and heard declare we to you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup>And these things write we to you, that your joy may be full.

There are some amazing facts in *The Bible*. When dealing with the beginning of creation, “<sup>1</sup>*That which was from the beginning* [Speaking of Jesus], *which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes* [John, The Apostle, lived with Christ], *which we have looked upon and our hands have handled, of the Word of life*; <sup>2</sup>*For the life was manifested* [made obvious] *and we have seen it and bear witness.*”

## How To Be An Apostle

To be an Apostle, they had to see Christ just as Paul saw Him when he was struck down on the road to Damascus. Consequently, the text goes on, “*and show to you that eternal life, which was with the Father, was manifested to us*; <sup>3</sup>*That which we have seen and heard declare we to you.*” The Apostles are telling you about *this being* who was from the very beginning and what He is like, “*that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.* [He writes this because] <sup>4</sup>*And these things we write to you, that your joy may be full.*” When you learn the process of understanding God's word, it will fill you with great joy. As you learn *the truth*, you will understand that God started it all. He created everything you see and everything you don't see. He had *a specific purpose in the way* He made all things. It was not an accident. It was the only right way to create everything.

## The Perfect Plan

Astoundingly, God made His Creation and His *plan perfect* in order to reveal Himself to those who choose to know Him. This is for those who want to be part of His *plan*. “*This is the message which we have heard of Him and declare to you, that God is light and in Him is no darkness at all*” (I John 1:5).

One of the hidden forces discovered, scientifically, is the electromagnetic force of light. God is *light-energy* – an *invisible force* that reveals *the power* of God. The energy force of photons emanate from God. Everything, but everything, comes from God. “<sup>5</sup>*God is light and in him is no darkness at all.*” When mass is dense enough, nothing can escape, including light. This is called a *Black Hole*. Black Holes possess such gravitational power that they absorb light completely and reflect none. When *matter*, even a star, gets sucked into a dense Black Hole, the matter disappears completely – forever. God does not have any darkness. God is totally *spirit* and *light*. Christians who believe God, in *faith*, will grow in wisdom. They will start to have understanding and can, then, see the true facts (Romans 1). They will perceive His power through the visible and invisible things that are all around them. A small group of scientists are now finding this to be true. You have seen that God, Himself created these individual forces.

You see that *Spirit* is nothing more than wind or energy. God is *light*. The wave energies (photons), the gravitational forces and the nuclear forces all depict how God created the universe (Romans 1).

## Accidental Creation Not Possible

**Job had some insights into this and now, you will be exposed to the questions God asked Job:**

**Job 38:4** Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare, if you have understanding.

***“Understanding,”*** as you have learned, is ***“logic”*** or ***“common sense”*** coupled with ***“wisdom”*** which is ***“the skill to handle the facts*** (the knowledge and the truth).” Put some of this knowledge together.

In *Job*, God explains the earth was like a circle. Job knew the earth was not flat, although some people thought it was well into The Middle Ages. How did God position the foundation of the earth? Scientists tell you that *gravitational pull* depends on the mass and distance. Interestingly, the earth does not orbit in a perfect circle but elliptically around the sun. The sun, having a much larger mass than the earth, exerts a stronger gravitational pull. The moon has a smaller mass, less gravity and orbits the earth. The moon is the major contributor to the tides. The effect of the sun on the tides is less than half that of the moon.

Many Christians ask, ***“How can people believe in evolution?”*** Evolution works on two principles: 1) survival of the fittest and 2) adaptation to changing environmental conditions. All this is supposed to happen entirely by chance. In other words, when a species is trying to survive, it adapts to its environment in whatever way it possibly can. So, the scientists who believe in evolution have caused their own problems. They put a date on the uni-



## How Many Lifetimes?

How many lifetimes would it take to evolve enough molecules to make a human being? With approximately  $1.6 \times 10^{27}$  molecules in the average adult human body, it could take *a bewildering  $5.8 \times 10^{84}$  lifetimes!* The evolution theory requires an almost implausible amount of time for mankind to be created. Evolution is logically improbable. Yockey concluded, "*The origin of life, by chance in a primeval soup, is impossible in probability, in the same way that a perpetual motion machine is impossible in probability.*"

If the foundation of the earth was to be laid, there had to be time. In fact, by evolution's own criteria, it had to be a great deal of time. The earth remains in its orbit around the sun by gravitation. How much time was needed for the earth (all these forces) to come into existence and then to remain in its stable orbit? Forever! On a mathematical basis, the probability of species evolving over the evolutionary time period is not feasible, even if the earth had existed for a hundred billion years. *Evolution* just isn't based upon *scientific facts*.

## Law Of Probability

The Law of Probability should be enough to discredit evolution. The geologic timetable of fossils, which the evolutionists so fondly embrace, contributes to the invalidation of evolution. In the final analysis, the theory of evolution remains a theory.

It is an assumption that just doesn't add up logically. The world famous scientist Stephen J. Gould, co-authored a

paper in 1977 in which he proposed the theory of *Punctuated Equilibrium*. Rather than a slow, continuous progression of species, *Punctuated Equilibrium* is characterized by long periods of virtual standstill (equilibrium) *punctuated* by episodes of very fast development with new life forms. The lack of proof of Darwinian *evolution* in the fossil record, going all the way back to the earliest geological time periods, fostered this idea of *Punctuated Equilibrium*. This theory has been developed as a cover for *the failure of the theory of evolution*.

## Punctuated Equilibrium

*Punctuated Equilibrium* is the theory (which in itself lacks scientific proof) that *new species pop-up* at some point and did not evolve over long periods of time. The cause of these new species is some sort of random environmental change or mutation. The entire perspective revealed by the fossil evidence is claimed to demonstrate evolutionary change.

According to Gould, the appearance of *pop-up species* in the fossil record must happen very fast in small isolated areas. Denton, another scientist, has cited studies (based upon modern species) that suggest up to 85% of all animals are preserved in the fossil records.

He further states that there is absolutely no reason whatsoever to assume the fossil record is anything other than a highly accurate and detailed account of the development of life on earth. However, the sudden arrival of almost all modern phyla of invertebrate life is a direct contradiction to the prediction made by Darwin's theory of *gradual*



*change and intermediate forms.* In other words, The Darwinian Theory of Evolution is held as *an article of faith* and is devoid of *a provable factual basis.*

After The Big Bang happened and the universe started to expand, how long did it take for gravity, electromagnetism and the strong and weak nuclear forces to evolve into their current state (now seen through the telescopes)? This includes planets revolving around stars, stars revolving around their galactic centers and groups of galaxies moving through space. Scientists haven't allowed enough time (10-20 billion years) for this to take place. Twenty billion multiplied by twenty billion years is still not enough. It is mathematically impossible for creation to begin in evolutionary terms.

### Precise Mathematical Balance

All the factors needed for life to exist on earth have to occur in a precise mathematical balance. The earth needs to be the right distance from the sun. If it is too close, the earth is burned into cosmic dust. If it is too far, the earth turns frigidly cold. The moon must have its mathematical gravitational pull exactly in balance with the earth's gravitational pull. If it were off just a fraction, the earth would be flooded with huge tidal waves. One scientist, Hugh Ross, estimated the probability of finding a planetary body with the necessary parameters for supporting life – *Probability for a Life Support Body, An Estimate of the Probability for Attaining the Necessary Parameters for Life Support and Reasons to Believe.*

After analyzing 165 parameters for life support, he con-

cluded that there was less than 1 chance in  $10^{182}$  that even one such planet would occur anywhere in the universe. How in the world could evolution *accidentally* get it all mathematically correct? How can scientists expect you to follow this, mathematically, when their theories virtually have no substance?

## The First Cause

Some scientists think, from the beginning, there wasn't a God. How do they believe it all started? One of the latest theories is that the cosmos got its start from *a little light wave*. Now, what was the origin of that little light wave? In other words, what started it all? The evolutionists theorize that it all started from nothing. How could everything start from *nothing*? Light, traveling at 186,300 miles per second, can only do so through a vacuum. What is a vacuum?

It means there is nothing. There's nothing there because if you put any mass in front of light, it either gets diffused (spreads out when it hits the mass), is refracted (dissipates as it breaks up) or it is reflected off at an angle. That's what happens to light.

## The First Wave

So what started the first wave? You don't even have to assume it is *a wave*. Evolutionists are in error because the first wave cannot come from nothing. It had to start from something. It's a very simple premise. You cannot start something from nothing. *Nothing plus nothing equals nothing*. That's not complicated. It doesn't take

a rocket scientist to understand this. You can't get something from nothing, that is an absolute truth. What if there was something there, either God or something else? Well, if it wasn't God but something else, then what started *that something*? Scientists say *something* else started *that something*. Well, what started *that something*, when *something* else started *that something*? As you can see, this thinking process goes on endlessly. In other words, it either all started from *something* or there never was a start. If there never was a start, you can't have things evolve into *something*.

In reality, you are left with only one conclusion, whatever there was that was *in the beginning, that something* had to *always be*. The circular trap that there was always something before something else never ends. You will never reach a beginning. Realistically, you know there must be a *beginning*. René Descartes (1596-1650), a French philosopher, published in 1641 his most famous work, *Meditations on First Philosophy*. In this set of six essays, he speculated on, among other things, his actual existence. His conclusion is the famous Latin phrase, "*cogito, ergo sum*" ("*I think, therefore, I am*"). He said, "*Since I'm conscious and I'm here, then I'm here. I exist because I think.*"

## Questions About Evolution

Well, God says, "*Since you see the universe, therefore, it was created.*" It could not have started from nothing. When you ask questions about evolution, you deal with these answers. Evolutionists say, "*I don't know,*" or evade the question and attempt to throw you off track. It is usually one or the other.

Dealing with the forces and throwing time into evolution, there is simply just not enough time to make sense of the theory of evolution. You would need *an uncalculated amount of time*. Mathematically, an equation cannot be created to resolve the evolutionary conundrum. You couldn't prove it if you tried! There's not enough time. (You can't do an  $E = mc^2$ ). Did the four fundamental forces exist before The Big Bang? If so, where did they come from? Most know there are asexual things in the world such as amoebas. Amoebas self-produce. If a scientist believes in evolution, he might say, "*Well, you know, the amoeba – it reproduces itself.*" Yes, that's a fact. But how in the world did we evolve from this amoeba to a species requiring another being for reproduction?

## The First Human

How did the first human being (not considering Adam and Eve) come into being? How long could that human – that very first one, whether it was male or female – wait around for the other one to come along in order to reproduce? How about the first wolf? How about the first orchards, bushes and flowers, which didn't know that bees had to pollinate them? They never would have survived and you certainly can't adapt to what doesn't happen. That's just another strike against evolution and reveals how ridiculous the theory truly is. Species do, indeed, disappear through environmental changes, whether caused by man or by nature. But for all the species that exist in the macro-world (the huge world including the universe around you) and the micro-world (the viral and bacterium) which require a mate for reproduction, how long did it take those mates to come into being? Evolution is not the answer.

Ultimately, if you have these micro and macro species all over the earth, you should see the changes all over the world. But you find not one missing link. What you see is one *kind* born after its own *kind*. The changes that evolution predicts are not found. They are no where. There are just *too many* things in God's *creation*! To evolve to all the myriads of species that have ever existed, there is just not enough time to calculate it logically. Even if the earth and the universe are ten to twelve billion years old – that is still not enough time. Even a hundred billion years would still not be enough time for every microbe, every plant, every animal and every human being to evolve into what they are today.

## God, The Designer

There just was not enough time for everything to evolve from nothing. God, The Designer and The Creator is *a being* who had to always exist.

Exodus 3:13-14 <sup>13</sup>And Moses said to God, Behold, when I come to the children of Israel and shall say to them, The God of your fathers has sent me to you and they shall say to me, What is his name? What shall I say to them? <sup>14</sup>And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.

God's name depicts The First Cause. Moses was given the big job by God to lead his people out of Egypt. Moses asked, "<sup>13</sup>*When I come to the children of Israel and shall say to them, The God of your fathers has sent me to you and they shall say to me, What is his name?*" God said

to Moses, “<sup>14</sup>*I AM THAT I AM.*” This is written this way because in Hebrew it really means, “*I’ve always existed, I exist now and I always will exist* (in the future).” You may ask, “*How can it be that God always existed?*” If something didn’t always exist, does that mean there was something before that? If there was always something before that, there was no beginning because there was always something before that. It makes more sense for there to be a First Cause that had *all intelligence* and *all power* (as *creation* itself shows). The forces were always there from The Beginning of Creation. So states true science.

## The Choice

On one side, you have evolutionists who say the universe and everything in it happened by accident. On the other side, you have God who is revealed through *the things that are made*, including the four fundamental forces. Which of these two approaches makes more sense? Which choice is wiser to believe in? It takes more *faith* to believe in mindless evolution than it takes to believe in the God who always was, who is today and who always will be.

1 Corinthians 2:14 But the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness to him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Putting this into perspective, it is far more rational and much more logical to say there is an all-mighty *Being* with *force* and *power*. The Being is eternal and The One who *intelligently* created everything. Anyone with common sense would find it illogical to come to the conclusion that

it all happened from nothing (happenstance). The reason evolutionists do not see it and why they cannot see it is, “<sup>14</sup>*the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness to him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*” You now understand the invisible forces that cannot be seen. They hold up the foundation of the world and they maintain the smallest atom to the largest galaxy in its ordered arrangement. God says once you start to learn about His invisible forces, you are without excuse. God reveals His proof through His *Word* that *creation* came only from Him. God is *real*. God *exists*. It is *an absolute*.

## Time For Choosing

It is your turn to choose. True science has shown how the universe was made and how it exists by these fundamental forces. Science, however, has to admit that the existence of these forces before *The Big Bang* cannot be known. Even though *The Bible* does not state the universe started from a Big Bang, it agrees with the plausibility of it when God rolled out the universe as a curtain. It clearly shows that real science does indeed agree with God's *word*.

Psalm 104:2 Who covers yourself with light as with a garment: who stretches out the heavens like a curtain.

God tells you these invisible forces come from Him. He created *The Big Bang*. God stretched “<sup>2</sup>*out the heavens like a curtain,*” perhaps just as you open up a curtain or a drape. Science calls it *The Fabric of The Universe*. As detailed earlier, evolution is loaded with inconsistencies.

It has been demonstrated here that if you give evolution the benefit of the doubt (considering all the matter in the universe), the only conclusion you can come to is there just isn't enough time for everything to evolve in a slow, uniform manner. The Second Law of Thermodynamics states that things do not go from the simple to complex, but rather, everything, *including creation itself*, is in the process of decay.

### What Is A Theory?

*A theory* is just a model of what scientists guess as to what could possibly be the answer. One of the world's most prominent scientists of our day, Stephen W. Hawking, states in his book, *A Brief History of Time* (pages 140-141), "So long as the universe had a beginning, we could suppose it had a Creator." Many scientists, rather than admit that the universe had a beginning and that there has to be a God, persistently search for proof that the universe never had a beginning. Hence, *an omnipotent, omnipresent and timeless designer* was unnecessary. Among the latest conjectures on how the universe came to be, as postulated by Stephen Hawking and others, is *the M-Theory*. This theory hypothesizes that there are other dimensions besides the four dimensions of length, width, height and time.

Hawking believes that a fifth dimension may exist and perhaps even more dimensions beyond that. If this is so, he postulates a fifth dimension existed before *The Big Bang*, which started the present universe. Now comes the significant part. Hawking states that before there was *The Big Bang*, everything was a true vacuum or *nothing*. There was nothing. However, something had to be there to start



everything. Hawking theorized there was an “*ekpyrosis*.” This is a Greek word meaning “*conflagration*” or “*consuming fire*” and refers to *an ancient Stoic cosmological model*. According to the model, the universe was created in a sudden burst of *fire*. Hence, the current universe evolved from that *initial fire*.

### A Consuming Fire

“*For our God is a consuming fire*” (Hebrews 12:29). This is the very same definition given by Hawking. In addition, Stephen Hawking said this consuming fire (*ekpyrosis*) always existed. He reservedly assigns *a First Cause* for everything, but did not describe *this ekpyrosis* as intelligent. God is The First Cause who is an all-intelligent *Being* and an all-consuming *fire*.

True science actually confirms the very existence of God. Other leading scientists agree with Hawking that *intelligence* was behind The Creation of The Universe. Allan Sandage, one of the world's leading astronomers, has declared that *The Big Bang* can be understood only as *a miracle*. Charles Townes, a Nobel-winning physicist and co-inventor of the Laser, said the discoveries of physics “*seem to reflect intelligence at work in natural law.*”

### Illogical Thinking

- 1) Something can start from nothing. Remember, *nothing can start from nothing.*
- 2) Evolution follows the laws of science. *They do not.*

- 3) Species can engender new species. *Can they really?*
- 4) To pursue evolution, given all the unresolved complexities confronting it, is too futile to make sense of it, let alone follow. *How very true.*

### Logical Thinking

- 1) The universe substantiates a design involving complex laws. Open your eyes and see the handiwork of God.
- 2) God always existed and needs no beginning. He is The First and The Last.
- 3) The universe, including all mankind, demands intelligence as its genesis rather than an accidental beginning from nothingness. It is what gives sense and meaning to life itself!

It takes logic to accept a First Cause by *The One* who had *Intelligence* and all *the power* to make it happen perfectly. Logic dictates logic. You are left with the choice of either pursuing the illogical approach – that the universe came about by accident – or that God created mankind and His universe with *a divine purpose*. Common sense demands the latter choice. There is no getting around it. God is *the creator of the universe* and of *all mankind*.

## Chapter 2

### GOD'S PUZZLE

*The Bible* is God's instructional book about vital concerns in life. It gives broad *overall* concepts. When a person learns about The First Cause and accepts this Great Power as The Maker of The Universe – it is time to follow all *the laws* He laid forth – and embrace His Word. Then you will discover *the purpose of life*. In this process, the so-called *puzzle of life* will come together.

Eventually, you will be on the road to understanding the complete story. But you must make the effort to read and study God's *word*. When you do, it will be amazing how the pieces of the puzzle begin to fall into place. These pieces create a wondrous mosaic for your life! Now consider what God said to Moses.

Exodus 3:14 <sup>14</sup>And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.

God said that His name is, “<sup>14</sup>*I am that I am.*” God is saying, “*I always was, I am now, and I always will be: I am what I am*” (paraphrased). By this declaration, humans are confronted with a challenge to understand, intellectually, that God created everything. Why did God create everything? Why were humans born? To find the answers to these and other questions, you must find out who God is.

## Many Claims Are Made

Many religions claim to know *the truth*. The Judeo-Christian religion bases its belief on *The Old Testament*. Then, secular Christians base their belief on *The New Testament*, while generally ignoring *The Old Testament*. Then, there are other Christians who believe in both *The New* and *The Old Testaments*. Other religions such as Islam (with over a billion followers) believe in *The Qur'an* (Koran).

Of course, there are many other large religious faiths, including Buddhism, Hinduism and Taoism. From these sources, each individual will need to decide where to find *The True God*, His *purpose* and His *plan* for all *mankind*. Muslims believe that *Allah* is God – The One and Only True God. Biblically, in Hebrew, you find the word “*El*” (or Allah) means “*one God*.”

Muslims also believe that Mohammed is their Prophet. Mohammed believed in four books, three of which are found in *The Bible*. Some think that Muslims only believe in *The Koran*. However, they accept a total of four books and consider them to be of *divine origin*. These four books are: 1) *The Law of Moses* which is *The Book of Moses*, 2) *The Book of David* (the account of King David), 3) *The New Testament* about Jesus Christ (deeming it divine) and 4) *The Koran*.

*The Koran* tells Muslims that *the purpose* of God is to have His *believers* go into *the garden* – meaning *The Garden of Eden* (or *Paradise*). With the events on 9/11/01, this nation was made aware that *The Muslim faith* proclaims they do not fear death. When a Muslim dies, they believe that

they immediately go to *paradise*. However, this does not guide a person to *the true purpose* of God's *plan* here on earth. Something more is required.

Then, there are those who follow Buddha. He was born in 563 B.C. and eventually became known as *The Enlightened One* or *the bringer of knowledge*. Buddhists believe that to be human and worldly, is to be wicked. Buddha's teachings were intended to enlighten everyone with a variety of one-paragraph statements on how to avoid wickedness. Through meditation, Buddhists believe they can exist outside the physical reality of this world. By following these meditation rituals, Buddhists can get rid of all the negative or evil things that are part of the human experience. Their central purpose in life is to become *enlightened* or to finally reach what is called Nirvana. They felt they would become *one with the universe*.

### Why Are You Here?

But what about *the big plan* regarding why *you* are here? Who is *The True God* that these religions presume to introduce? What is His *plan*? Buddhism is a road map *without* a beginning and with only a vague destination. The claim is that God is *one* – but this concept of *oneness* is held in a different sense than that proposed by The West.

On the other hand, The Hindus believe in many, many gods. These gods guide them through the labyrinth of life. Teaching a person to speak less and listen more is accepted as a positive behavioral structure. But Hinduism provides only *a path*. You do not find a beginning or an end.

## Incomplete Understanding

These are only simple examples of the philosophies found in various religions and they all point to the incompleteness of their core beliefs. No matter what books you may read about the various religious beliefs, only *The Bible* gives you the complete understanding of God and His *purpose*. *The Bible* not only tells you who God is, what He is composed of, how He *looks* and what His *powers* are, but it also defines God's personality and character. Consequently, Christianity is a religion that is amazingly different from all the other alternatives.

*The Bible* tells you God's entire *plan* and *purpose* from the time when He created the universe all the way to the time when His *plan* will be completed. After looking at the different religions from a logical viewpoint, it should make more sense to go to the true source which tells all about God. It is *The Bible* that gives you the complete answer. When a person speaks with other individuals who are not familiar with *The Bible*, a common response is that *The Bible* is confusing to them. When I was inducted into the military service, it was near the end of World War II. It was then that I opened *The Bible* for the first time.

## While In The Navy

When in the service, the military placed me on a weather vessel to go out into The Pacific Ocean for 30 days at a time. This job consisted of tracking hurricanes! When bad weather was found, we could radio this vital information back to The United States. This data informed aircraft flight crews about where they could or could not fly.

So there have been many *hurricanes* in my life. They're no fun.

The Pacific Ocean is just what the word says – "*Pacific*" – meaning "*very peaceful*" and "*calm.*" Often our ship would be thousands of miles from land and as one looked out over the ocean, it was so calm that it resembled a sheet of glass. It looked like you could walk on that smooth glass-like surface. Then, at other times, it was so bad that everyone was seasick, including the salty captain. Everyone would sit on the deck trying to get all the fresh air they could breathe in. Some prearranged to have crates of oranges handy to suck on. I would get so sick and implore God, "*Please let me die.*" On the other hand, it was quite boring in between the hurricanes and the calm of the blue Pacific Ocean. So, I read everything in the ship's library. In time, at 30-day intervals, any sailor would run out of books. I found there was one book that hadn't been read. That is when I opened up a book called *The Bible*.

### Opening *The Bible*

Reading and studying *The Bible* in between frequent bouts of hurricane induced seasickness gave me the opportunity to attempt to understand *The Bible's meaning*. Most of it was confusing and it didn't make sense. Coming from a Christian background, I understood many things like the existence of God and that Jesus Christ was The Son of God. He sacrificed Himself to *save* all the people in the world. I understood all about that, but I never really comprehended where *this Bible* information was leading. I knew about God and Christ and the stories about Mo-

ses, Daniel and The Lion's Den. I knew about Noah in The Ark just as most young people do. Everyone usually knows about Noah and all the animals. But, not many know any more.

As I began to read *The Bible*, there were so many things in it that my church didn't believe in. This was perplexing. I was on the road to reading and studying *The Bible*. If you just read what *The Bible* says and believe exactly what it says, then it tells a story that is different from the one you've been told. Here is the story.

## The Biblical Puzzle

*The Bible* contains a puzzle. First of all, I must state God is *The First Cause*. Does God really reveal Himself in this Book and does He really unravel the puzzle? When you buy a puzzle box with all the pieces, you usually see the picture of the puzzle on the box. The box containing a *new Bible* usually has no picture on it. So, you would need to go through all the many pieces of information in order to know what the contents tell you (the big picture).

After over 50 years, I am still looking to see if one little piece will fit with another little piece. I've lived long enough now to recognize – and truly believe – that all of the pieces in this grand puzzle fit together into a wonderful mosaic. In other words, God's *puzzle* can be solved! This means that as you proceed to study *The Bible*, you will understand what God is doing and exactly why you are here.

II Timothy 3:14-15 <sup>14</sup>But continue you in the things



which you have learned and have been assured of, knowing of whom you have learned them; <sup>15</sup>And that from a child you have known the holy scriptures, which are able to make you wise to salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

As God reveals the overall picture, He gives instructions to those who want to understand His *puzzle*. As you study the individual pieces, you will come to know *where to anchor major pieces* and how they fit into the whole picture. The more you study God's *word*, the easier it will be for you to put the puzzle together. You will become so excited when you start to see the whole picture being assembled before your eyes. Do wonders ever cease?

### A Child Learns

My little granddaughter loves to put puzzles together. She brings the puzzle to me when she is finished. Her face will be glowing as a sense of triumph and accomplishment radiates from her face. She is absolutely happy and says, "Look!" Then I bait her by saying, "You put all those 50 pieces together?" She says, "Yes, Grandpa!" And that's exactly the way I feel when I find an important piece of the puzzle that completes another aspect of *the biblical picture*. In prayer, I am excited in the same way as my granddaughter. I thank God for each extra bud of knowledge that He allows me to learn. It is a joy. It is exhilarating and wonderful. God is wonderful! God gives you instructions about putting the puzzle together. The Apostle Paul gave Timothy, The Evangelist, important teachings by explaining how he should behave himself. Paul knew it wasn't going to be long before Timothy

would be required to rely totally on himself. Paul said, “*And that from a child you have known the holy scriptures which are able to make you wise to salvation*” (II Timothy 3:15). When you read *The Bible*, you should think of it from the standpoint that you are acquiring *wisdom*. Furthermore, this is “*wisdom to Salvation.*”

## The Holy Scriptures

Here in this text, you find that the first thing a person should learn is how to rightly divide the teachings of *The Bible*. Where it says “*holy scriptures,*” you must discern that “*Holy*” first signifies “*pure*” or “*unblemished.*” Make no mistake about that. These are *The Holy Scriptures which are able to make you wise* so you can learn about *Salvation*. This is the culmination of what God has *planned* for every person through *faith* which is “*Christ Jesus – In You.*” All *Scripture*, at that time, was found only in *The Old Testament*. *The New Testament* had not yet been completed. Realize that God not only looks to *The Old Testament* as *Holy Scripture* but also to *The New Testament*. Christians must come to understand that *The Holy Scriptures* consist of *The Old Testament* along with *The New Testament*. Paul told Timothy, “*Study to show yourself approved to God, a workman that need not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth*” (II Timothy 2:15). Nothing comes easy. You cannot study *The Bible* too often.

## Faith With Prayer And Study

*The Scriptures* tell you that *The Bible* is a puzzle and you must know how to separate or develop *The Word*. It is unwise to make an interpretation that does *not fit the con-*

*text.* Rather, you just need to find another piece of the puzzle. With prayer and study, in time, you will find it. Have *faith*. Hence, with time and study, you will be able to assemble the complete picture.

II Peter 3:16 As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, to their own destruction.

In reality, *The New Testament* tells you that this section of *the overall Bible* can also be called *The Holy Scriptures* (II Peter 3:16). Hence, the entire *Bible* consists of *The Old and New Testaments*. You see how all of Christ's *words* come from God, "*All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness*" (II Timothy 3:16). This means that *The Scriptures* will teach you about The True God who made the universe and how it was made. *The Bible* contains, in detail, God's *purpose* and *plan*. In short, *The Bible* explains how to piece the puzzle together.

## The Triangle Game

Once in a while, my family goes to a restaurant where they have a little triangle game with pegs in it to pass the time. Our granddaughter jumps one over the other. When you finally get down to two, you are quite intelligent. If you get down to one, you are close to being a genius! My little granddaughter will say, "*I have five left.*" I answer, "*Do it again.*" Then she's busy for another period of time. Later she'll say, "*I've got three.*" I encourage her, "*Oh that's*

*pretty good. Do it again.*” Well, lo and behold, once in a while, she gets down to two. Later, we found they have a little pamphlet that tells you what to do to get to one – *genius level*. *The Bible*, also, has instructions with a formula that will unscramble *The Puzzle of Life*.

Isaiah 28:9-10 <sup>9</sup>Whom shall he teach knowledge? And whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk and drawn from the breasts. <sup>10</sup>For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little and there a little.

God is a loving Father, an omnipotent being, who will never leave you in the dark. “*Whom shall he teach knowledge?*” Who is God? What is He like? What is He made of? How does He think? What is God’s personality? What is His character? What is He doing? Why are you here? All these can be found in this one statement, “*Whom shall he [God] teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand [learn] doctrine?*”

## Understanding Doctrine

“*Doctrine*” just means “*teaching*.” It is not a special ritual, although some groups do have ritualistic doctrines. This *Bible text* specifies how you can understand the knowledge about what God is doing on this earth. “*Them that are weaned from the milk and drawn from the breast.*” The first thing you must do to begin to understand *this biblical puzzle* is to become as a little child. “<sup>10</sup>*For precept must be upon precept.*” One thought is compared with another thought. Not only is this an idea-upon-idea concept, but

it is also a line-upon-line study. There is one line here and another line there. It is “*here a little and there a little.*” You must be innocent, eager to learn and have no preset ideas.

Why did God design it this way? It would have been much easier if He had written an outline-type of story. He could have explained everything by laying it out *simply* – just like an instructional manual. He could have said that He was God, what He's made of, what He looks like and what His *plan* is. He could have explained how life is to be lived. But God wanted all this to be a *puzzle*. Look at a couple of examples that illustrate a *biblical puzzle*. This may come as a shock as you put the pieces together.

Revelations 16:17-18 <sup>17</sup>And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done. <sup>18</sup>And there were voices and thunders and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake and so great.

## A Mystical Book

*The Bible* is purposely mysterious and *The Book of Revelation* is known as *the mystical book*. In *Revelation*, “*seven seals*” and “*seven thunders*” are mentioned. It reveals a *tribulation* that has *the vial of wrath* from God at the very end. This could be quite confusing to the reader who sees the seventh angel pouring out his violence into the air! This is the time just before The Return of Jesus. “<sup>17</sup>*And the seventh angel poured out his vile into the air and became*

*a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne saying, It is done.*" Now the completion of The Plan of God is ready to take place. <sup>18</sup>*And there were voices and thunders and lightnings and there was a great earthquake."*

## The Great Earthquake

Who would think this major piece of the puzzle would be at the conclusion of *The Bible*? This isn't in *The Old Testament* – it is in *The New Testament*! You will find an important piece of the puzzle in Revelation 16 that connects with the beginning of *Genesis*! The connection is astounding! It tells you about a great earthquake such as <sup>16</sup>*was not since men were on the earth.*" This comes completely out of the blue. *The Bible* states that a tremendous earthquake will occur in The City of Jerusalem. One-third of *the city* will fall while only two-thirds of the city will remain.

A major feature of geography concerns The Great Rift Valley that goes down through Jerusalem into The Gulf of Aqaba and out to The Red Sea. From there, it reaches into Africa. Then it extends all the way down to South Africa and goes out into The Indian Ocean. How big and of what magnitude was the earthquake that created this great crack in the earth? This one may have been a 20 on The Richter Scale. Scientists say that with each increasing point on The Richter Scale, the force is comparable to a hundred thousand pounds of dynamite exploding. The force is horrendous. What in the world is the conclusion of *The New Testament* telling you? Astoundingly, it is telling you what happened in the very beginning before man appeared in the creation in *Genesis*.

Genesis 1:1-13 <sup>1</sup>In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. <sup>2</sup>And the earth was without form and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. <sup>3</sup>And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. <sup>4</sup>And God saw the light, that it was good and God divided the light from the darkness. <sup>5</sup>And God called the light Day and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. <sup>6</sup>And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters and let it divide the waters from the waters. <sup>7</sup>And God made the firmament and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above firmament: and it was so. <sup>8</sup>And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day. <sup>9</sup>And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together to one place and let the dry land appear: and it was so. <sup>10</sup>And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good. <sup>11</sup>And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. <sup>12</sup>And the earth brought forth grass and herb yielding seed after his kind and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. <sup>13</sup>And the evening and the morning were the third day.

**In going back to the beginning, your goal is to fit the puzzle together. There are very simple statements in *The Book of Genesis* which are rather astounding.**

<sup>1</sup>In the beginning, God [God being the first cause] created the heaven and the earth. <sup>2</sup>And the earth was without form and void and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

Different theories exist in the various religious groups about these two verses. One is called *The Gap Theory*. From Genesis 1:1 to Genesis 1:2 there is a big gap of time – hence the name, *The Gap Theory*. But how can you prove it?

## Original State Of The World

The earth “*became void and without form,*” which in Hebrew is “*bohuw*” or “*tohuw*” (Genesis 1). These two words show how the earth was in the beginning. When God created it, it could have already been billions of years old. “<sup>2</sup>*And the earth.*” Was the earth created in six days? No, it was already in existence. You may have thought it was created in six days, but *Genesis* tells you that it was already there as a physical reality.

Was there an earthquake before Adam and Eve? Look at this little piece of the puzzle at the end of *The Bible* in *Revelation*. It tells you that there was never an earthquake like the one that is going to shake Jerusalem at the end-time. Well, if the earth was created in six days, what are you going to find? It was an earthquake shaking everything up. If you don't find an earthquake, what does that mean? It means that an earthquake happened before the six days of man's creation. “<sup>3</sup>*God said, Let there be light: and there was light.*” Then you find that He made day and



night and that was the end of the first day. Concerning the earthquake, there is no statement of an earthquake. “*God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters* [because the earth was already there].” He definitely did not create the earth in six days, because it existed long before the first six days. It was already in place, except there was water above the earth in the atmosphere.

### The First Light

You, also, find that God first caused the light to penetrate from above, which leads one to realize how the sun must have been in position. If the sun was not created until the fourth day, then where did this light come from? Well, there is an explanation. It could have come from God, because God is *light*. Keep that in mind for now, but continue to examine the concept of this earthquake. God said, “*Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters.*” Then, He made the heavens (the atmosphere). Still there is no earthquake to take into account. Then, dry land appears. Finally, “*earth brought forth grass and herb yielding seed...*<sup>12</sup>*And the evening and the morning were the third day.*”

Genesis 1:14-19 <sup>14</sup>And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and for seasons and for days and years: <sup>15</sup>And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. <sup>16</sup>And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. <sup>17</sup>And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon

the earth. <sup>18</sup>And to rule over the day and over the night and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. <sup>19</sup>And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

## The Fourth Day

During the fourth day, God points to the lights that were already in the heavens. So, He didn't make the sun and the moon on the fourth day. They were already there. All He did was adjust them. But for what *purpose*? It was for *seasons* and *times*. So where is the earthquake? There is no earthquake. Then, there is the sixth day, bringing forth the animals and man. There is no earthquake then, either. *The Book of Genesis* declares that before Adam and Eve were made, there was a great earthquake. Did that great earthquake need to happen before the sixth day? If you were going to take that little piece of the puzzle, where would you put it? You would have to put it between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2. Do you understand this? How many years do you think you would need to study in order to put all the pieces of the puzzle together? Most would agree that it would take a long time.

Genesis 15:15-16 <sup>15</sup>And you shall go to your fathers in peace; you shall be buried in a good old age. <sup>16</sup>But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.

## Faithfulness Of Abraham

Another piece of the puzzle shows Abraham being completely *faithful* to God by offering his own son, Isaac, as a

sacrifice (it was an example patterned by God's offering of Christ). For Abraham's faithfulness, God made *promises* to him. One promise was, "*Your seed is going to inherit this land.*" What comes to your mind? It could be, "*Those poor Amorites and Canaanites – why would God allow their land to be taken?*"

When Israel was ready to cross The Jordan River on their way to *the promised land*, God intended to kill all the inhabitants of the land because of their wickedness. Where does it say this? God tells Abraham, "<sup>15</sup>*And you shall go to your fathers in peace, you shall be buried in a good old age.*" Abraham was going to live out his life. He was to have a peaceful life and die very peaceably. He would just go to sleep. God told Abraham, "<sup>16</sup>*But in the fourth generation* [which was 400 years to 430 years later] *they shall come here again* [Abraham's seed will come back] *for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.*" God gave the land to Israel because The Canaanites kept filling it with *sin* and God said that situation *had to end*.

## Promised Land Rejects People

What chance do you have to understand all this? You learn of an earthquake at the end of *The Bible* (in *Revelation*) and it's actually telling you what happened in *Genesis*. The people lost their land because they were so violent, so sinful and so wicked. Unless you read and understand this part, you will never obtain the answer as to why God gave this land to The Children of Israel. You will think about those poor Amorites and conclude that perhaps God was not really fair. But, He is a very fair and just God. When people follow *pagan gods* and continue to

*pollute* the very place they live, then they will not be living in that land for very long.

Isaiah 28:11 For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people.

Follow God's instruction to understand the whole story. *"<sup>11</sup>For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people."* God purposely made *The Bible* confusing. He wants it to be a puzzle. To whom does He teach knowledge? How does a child approach learning? A child is always inquisitive, searching and always wanting to learn more. A child is without preset ideas. My little granddaughter thought human beings only died when they reached a hundred years old. She would say, *"Well, Grandpa, you have a long time to live."* So she must figure that I'm not near that hundred mark. Now, my mother recently died at the age of 97. Before she died, my granddaughter would say, *"Now great-grandma, she's getting closer to that hundred."* Then she says, *"I'm never going to die."* That is what she thought. So she had to be told *the truth*. Always tell everyone *the truth* because if you don't, you will pay a penalty down the road.

## Everyone Will Die

So I said, *"Well, Rachel, someday everyone will die."* Everyone. Then she said, *"Well..."* (I could tell that she got a cloud on her face). This factual statement affected her. She was quite disturbed. I said, *"But God is going to resurrect everyone."* Her face started to change. I said, *"Rachel, when you die, you just go to sleep...and God will eventually change everyone from being bad or evil."* *"Oh really!*

*Mommy and Grandpa and Grandma and Auntie?"* I said, "Yes." "Ohhhh," she sighed in relief. Everything was better after that. Now she accepts death. She was seven years old at the time and accepted the notion of death. She still asks me different questions about it. She will throw questions at me all the time. What is she doing? First, she is very innocent. She knows she doesn't know the answer. She has no preset ideas. My 21-year old grandson, Sean, asked the same questions when he was her age.

Mark 10:13-15 <sup>13</sup>And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. <sup>14</sup>But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased and said to them. Suffer the little children to come to me and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. <sup>15</sup>Verily I say to you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

You have read how *The Old Testament* reveals the process of disclosing the puzzle. *The Bible* is understandable. Now, check *The New Testament* to find the requirements needed for you to perceive a clearer picture of *The Bible*. To whom will God teach knowledge? It is to those who are fed from the breast. What is Christ trying to tell you? You must become as little children. It is not easy to humble yourself.

## In The Navy

I started to read *The Bible* in the Navy at the age of 20. I couldn't understand it. I just saw stories with some differences from my prior religious belief. This background

contradicted what *The Bible* was saying to me. It wasn't until I was 30 that I began to understand and, therefore, I changed some of those preset ideas. I had an education with different degrees from universities and colleges. I had studied science, physics, astronomy, geology, cosmology and logic. So you can imagine how all these different teachings were contradicting and confusing. Christ said, "*Who did he go to preach to?*" He preached to *the poor*. He preached to *the unlearned*. They would listen because they had no preset ideas.

Whenever you get involved in a religion, you will begin to believe those specific religious teachings. The process of coming out of preconceived ideas is very hard. In your specific case, it may be education, religion or a self-pride from which you must extricate yourself. In all cases, you must first let go of *your ego*. Unless you become as a little child, you will not understand *The Bible*. You must come to the point where nothing you think is religiously *right* or *wrong*.

When you read in *Revelation* that a big earthquake took place before Adam and Eve, then that is what you believe. If it seems to contradict science, then that is what you still continue to believe. If *The Bible* tells you that the reason God kicked all the Canaanites out of the land was so He could give it to The Children of Abraham, then, you believe it. When you come to that place, then God will open your understanding to many more of His *truths*.

## Not Everyone Understands

At times, God doesn't seem fair. He could have made

everyone perfect and know everything in the beginning. Why does all this confusion exist? Why does *The Bible* call *life* a mystery?

Throughout the history of *The Bible*, you find that God only disclosed certain revelations to His Prophets. God waited until His Son was born to begin disclosing more of His *plans*. Why did God do that?

I Corinthians 15:21-26 <sup>21</sup>For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. <sup>22</sup>For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. <sup>23</sup>But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. <sup>24</sup>Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. <sup>25</sup>For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet. <sup>26</sup>The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

I Corinthians 15 is known as The Resurrection Chapter. God can cause certain people to stumble while reading His *word*. This is the time when God resurrects mankind from the dead. This is compared to a sleep from which everyone is awakened. “<sup>21</sup>*For since by man* [speaking of Christ] *came also the resurrection of the dead.* <sup>22</sup>*For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.*” *Everyone will be resurrected.* No one is excluded.

“<sup>23</sup>*But every man in his own order.*” God is telling you that His *basic purpose* is to reproduce Himself by building a family with “*every man in his own order.*”

## Family Planning

God believes in *family planning*. God does not have children promiscuously. God doesn't go ahead and just have children whether He wants them or not. In fact, the story about *The Plan of God* reveals that He has already written your name in a book. This occurred long before you were born. That is true family planning! In fact, God knows every hair on your head. So it is, "<sup>23</sup>*Every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming.* <sup>24</sup>*Then comes the end,* [Revelation also reveals this] *when he shall have delivered up the Kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.* <sup>25</sup>*For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet.*"

## When The End Comes

The end will not take place until all the enemies of God are put down. God keeps all those enemies ignorant. They stumble because of this lack of knowledge. The very last enemy, *death*, shall finally be destroyed. God has put all things under Christ's feet when He said, "*all things are put under Him.*" In other words, Christ was accepted by The Father and everything was put under His jurisdiction until that final *end-time*.

Why doesn't God want everyone to know *the truth* from the beginning? Simply, everyone has his/her own *time sequence*. God works with each person to *save* each one at *the right time* (II Peter 3:9). Why would God want to be so discriminating? Even if one group is ignorant, eventually, He will let them know *The Whole Plan*.



Since *The Bible* is a puzzle, God has given you every single piece. However you will find the pieces come together only through *prayer* and *diligent study*. Christ said that He only revealed the truth to those who were *ready* to receive it according to God's *timetable* (Matthew 13:10-16).

Jesus said that if the others understood, then He would be required to heal them before it was time for them to be *saved*. God will work with each and every human being at the right time in order for them to be *saved*. God has thought of everything.

II Timothy 3:16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.

Many people argue over whether one book or another book should be a part of *The Bible*. They argue about the authorship of the different books. There is only one author – God. *The Bible* says, “<sup>16</sup>All scripture is given by *inspiration of God*.” Through prayer, reading and studying *The Bible*, you will come to find this book is written by scribes or reporters who, after much investigation and detective work, would write everything down because they were *inspired*.

## Who Could Invent This?

No man could dream this up. How could anyone tell you about an earthquake before Adam and Eve, unless He was actually there on location? No one could have known all this but God. One *being*, God, authors it all. This is the entire instruction book called *The Bible*!

II Peter 3:8-9 <sup>8</sup>But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day. <sup>9</sup>The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

When you don't understand, you think *The Bible* is confusing. Christian scholars always seem to memorize this verse, "*One day is with the Lord as a thousand years,*" along with the statement, "*9The Lord is not slack [slow] concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward.*" God is not prejudiced against any group of people. Some people want others to suffer in The Lake of Fire. Yet, in God's *plan*, He clearly states, "*Not willing that any should perish.*" He also says, "*Who will have all men to be saved*" (I Timothy 2:4). How can anyone get around these clear texts? These texts mean that it is God's intent to save everyone. You may pray The Lord's Prayer, "*Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done.*" God can and will fulfill His *plan*. Do you want to fight God? It is God's *firm will* for all to be saved but only in their proper order.

## None Will Perish

Perhaps previous teachings hold you back from studying this part of the puzzle. It states that *God is not willing that any should perish*. Do you believe it? It may be hard to understand this in light of *biblical characters* like Judas or historical monsters like Hitler, Stalin, Osama Bin Laden and Saddam Hussein.

So you have two choices: 1) decide *The Bible* is not what it says or 2) choose to believe it. The choice is yours. If you come as a little child, His *word* will teach you. When God says, “<sup>9</sup>*Not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance,*” what happens to those people who go into *the fire*? Eventually, they will repent “*in his/her own order.*”

Why is God taking such a long time before He *returns*? Why is He so patient? God does not want anyone to be lost. God wants everyone to be *saved*. These revelations run throughout *The Whole Bible*.

Matthew 7:5-8 <sup>5</sup>You hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of your own eye; and then shall you see clearly to cast out the mote out of your brother's eye. <sup>6</sup>Give not that which is holy to the dogs, neither cast you your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet and turn again and rend you. <sup>7</sup>Ask and it shall be given you; seek and you shall find; knock and it shall be opened to you: <sup>8</sup>For every one that asks receives; and he that seeks finds; and to him that knocks it shall be opened.

As a little, innocent child with no preset ideas, you will understand His *word*. It's only confusing to understand when you have pre-conceived ideas.

<sup>5</sup>You hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of your own eye; and then shall you see clearly to cast out the mote out of your brother's eyes [talking about truth]. <sup>7</sup>Ask and it shall be given you; seek and you shall find; knock and it shall be opened to you: <sup>8</sup>For every one

that asks receives; and he that seeks finds; and to him that knocks it shall be opened.

In this text, Jesus talks about His *word*. When you understand the pieces of this big puzzle, you need to have a very innocent child-like approach and constantly ask Him to open *new truths* to you.

Hebrews 1:1-2 <sup>1</sup>God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, <sup>2</sup>Has in these last days spoken to us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

This is vital instruction. Furthermore, you learn that, “<sup>1</sup>God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets.” The Prophets stopped prophesying about 450 years *before* The Time of Christ. That ended the reign of The Prophets. The Jews will confirm this for you.

God no longer spoke to everyone through His Prophets. Why was this? The answer begins with the statement that God, “<sup>2</sup>Has in these last days [The Last Days started with Christ] *spoken to us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.*” If Christ is the heir of all things, who tells you about it? Christ does, of course! What is The Work of God? The Work of God is to believe in Him whom God has sent (John 6:29). Become like a child by constantly praying to God and asking that it be done *through Christ*.

II Peter 3:15-16 <sup>15</sup>And account that the longsuffering

of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given to him has written to you; <sup>16</sup>As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, to their own destruction.

## Simple Answers

The answers are really quite simple. It is just a matter of putting the pieces together into the proper order. To do so, you must surrender to innocence. Open your mind to God! Peter states, “<sup>15</sup>*And account that the longsuffering of our Lord [He is patient so everyone can be saved] is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given to him has written to you; <sup>16</sup>As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood.*” From where does this verse come? Isaiah 28 states, “*Precept upon precept, line upon line.*” But who found it hard to understand?

It was hard for Christians to understand. Why? Because it contradicts what their ministers and teachers had taught them. Worldly Christian teachings are directly opposed to what *The Bible* reveals.

## Learning From God

It is *an evolutionary process* to learn from God. If you start as a child, “*line upon line*” and “*precept upon precept*,” then you begin to put little pieces of the puzzle together. When you start to see more of the puzzle, you

will begin to recognize the picture as a whole. Christians must understand this process. When you study, you might have a battle with yourself. You must become that child within yourself. You must continually ask God, in prayer, to help you see the pieces of His puzzle. Let Him know that you understand He has prepared a mystery and open your heart to let Him reveal this mystery so you can *solve the puzzle*. Ask Him in prayer and then read His answers in *The Bible* to your troubling questions. If not, you will stumble and you may fall.

Some Christian scholars wonder if they can really be sure Paul actually wrote this Epistle. Was it Mark or was it the secretary of Paul? When you study *The Bible*, you start to know who wrote *The Bible* by the style of the writing. God is *the author* of *The Bible* from *Genesis* to *Revelation*. It is all God's style. Arguing about who wrote this Epistle or that Epistle is not important, because God is *the author* over all. At times, a person may explain that they just don't believe *The Bible*. After being asked if they have ever read *The Bible*, a common answer is "No." *The Bible* calls these individuals "*unlearned*." "<sup>16</sup>*To their own destruction*." Paul's letters are called *Scripture*. *The New Testament* and *The Old Testament* are *Holy Scriptures*. *The entire Bible* from *Genesis* to *Revelation* is *God-breathed Scriptures*. It warrants that you read it, study it and pray you can understand it. Put as many pieces of the puzzle together so that you can get *the full true story*! God calls the puzzle of His *word* – The Mystery of God (Revelation 10:7)!

## Chapter 3

### WHO IS GOD?

Throughout the world, Christians believe in God. Many want to obey Him. So perhaps, you should know more about this God of *The Bible*. How does God appear? Does He have skin, bones and tissue? Is God old or is He young? Does God age in any way? What is God's personality? What can you learn about His character? What type of *being* is God? Finally, you need to know if He is a "He."

What makes God, the unique Almighty One? As you read *The Holy Scriptures*, you will find the genuine story about *The One and Only True God*. One of the best places to begin is with the story about a man who had an astonishing experience. This man had the opportunity to hear directly from God. Was it *good news* or *bad news*?

### Job Sees God

*The Book of Job* begins by telling about a man who lived in ancient times. The man's name was Job – and he served God with unusual diligence (Job 1:1-5). However, great calamity fell upon him. After a long period of trying to understand all the evil that came upon him, Job was addressed by God.

Job 38:3-4 <sup>3</sup>Gird up now your loins like a man; for I will demand of you and answer you me. <sup>4</sup>Where were

you when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare,  
if you have understanding.

Job had some very hard lessons to learn. This encounter with The Holy One brought him to the greatest depth of *repentance* known to man. Job had to lose his family, his career and then be afflicted with sickness and excruciating pain. If that wasn't enough, Job's so-called friends tried to persuade him that all his problems were the result of hidden sins he committed. They told him he needed to repent. After a long period of suffering, Job was finally confronted directly by God who spoke with him out of the whirlwind (Job 38:1). Hence, Job became a captive listener about all the things God had created. God declared that when He made the oceans "*the waters would only go so far and no more*" (Job 38:11). God related how He rolled out the heavens as if it were a curtain – like The Big Bang (Job 38:31-35 and Isaiah 40:22).

In all this, it was a presentation to Job about how God had created the world. Job finally came to realize everything God was explaining to him. He was seeing more of the true perspective about *The Creator of this universe*. It was God's hand that had made everything – including the invisible laws that hold it all together.

Job 42:1-6 <sup>1</sup>Then Job answered the LORD and said <sup>2</sup>I know that you can do every thing and that no thought can be withholden from you. <sup>3</sup>Who is he that hides counsel without knowledge? Therefore have I uttered that I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not. <sup>4</sup>Hear, I beseech you and I will speak: I will demand of you and declare you to me. <sup>5</sup>I



have heard of you by the hearing of the ear; but now mine eye sees you. <sup>6</sup>Wherefore I abhor myself and repent in dust and ashes.

Job answered by saying, <sup>2</sup>*"I know that you can do every thing and that no thought can be withholden from you. <sup>3</sup>Who is he that hides counsel without knowledge?"* Job's problem was that he was *perfect* in his ways. He was depending upon his *own righteousness*.

### A Logical Perspective

In order to arrive at a logical conclusion about anything, a person must have all the facts. This must be done before any reasonable discussion or solution can take place. No one can give wise counsel or have meaningful discussions when they have only partial knowledge. Who is God? Wasn't that what Job argued about?

Job 42:3-4 <sup>3</sup>Therefore, have I uttered that I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not. <sup>4</sup>Hear, I beseech you and I will speak. I will demand of you and declare you to me.

Job then gave a summary of what he had learned from God. He said, <sup>5</sup>*"I have heard of you by the hearing of the ear."* God talks to you through His *word, The Bible*. When you read God's *word*, it is God's *way* of teaching you. But what end must you finally come to? Job continues the above thought by stating, <sup>5</sup>*"But now mine eye see you."* This is the conclusion of the matter. Job finally knew who and what God was and what He looked like. This was the hard lesson Job had to learn and why he

reported, “<sup>3</sup>*I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not.*”

One of the steps in discovering the wonderful aspects of God is by learning all you can about The One and Only True God. Job summarized his magnum experience. He admitted to knowing: 1) what God looks like, 2) understanding His *words*, 3) virtually seeing and hearing God, 4) knowing how He acts, 5) how He thinks and finally 6) knowing what God has done. “<sup>6</sup>*Wherefore I abhor myself and repent in dust and ashes.*” Notice particularly that Job said, “*I abhor myself.*” How many Christians have ever come to this state of mind? How many have come to the same depth of repentance? Job realized that his own *righteousness* was nothing – just as Paul understood that his own righteousness was like dung (Philippians 3:6-8).

## An Elderly God?

Most view God as an elderly man with long white hair, a wrinkled face and a white beard. They often envision this God as one who sits on a chair with His hand on a globe. This picture makes God look very old. He almost seems frightening to behold. God can do such miraculous works, which are so powerful that He can cause mankind to be in the image of Himself. What are your thoughts about God's appearance? Compare your own impressions with that of David's concept of God.

Psalm 27:1-4 <sup>1</sup>The LORD is my light and my salvation; whom shall I fear? the LORD is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid? <sup>2</sup>When the wicked, even mine enemies and my foes, came upon me to eat up my

flesh, they stumbled and fell. <sup>3</sup>Though a host should encamp against me, my heart shall not fear: though war should rise against me, in this will I be confident. <sup>4</sup>One thing have I desired of the LORD, that will I seek after; that I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the LORD and to inquire in his temple.

David explains why you should know God. It is because, “*<sup>1</sup>The LORD is my light and my salvation.*” David acknowledges this thought from the very beginning. As you study, you will come to understand why David was a man after God’s own heart. You will see how freely David opens his own heart to God. David continued, “*<sup>1</sup>whom shall I fear? Of whom shall I be afraid?*” He wasn’t afraid of God. “*The LORD is the strength of my life.*” In contrast, man has vulnerabilities by just existing in the human flesh with all its failings.

So, as with David, when you learn more about God, those fears will diminish. David said, “*Of whom shall I be afraid? <sup>2</sup>When the wicked, even mine enemies and my foes, came upon me to eat up my flesh, they stumbled and fell* [God was there for him]. *<sup>3</sup>Though a host,* [talking about an army] *should encamp against me.*” Have you ever heard a knock on the door in the middle of the night? You are awakened from a sound sleep and can’t be sure what caused the noise? Are you a bit fearful? Not David. Everyone should read about why David was the vital instrument used to take Goliath down. David said, “*My heart shall not fear; though war should rise against me, in this will I be confident* [David was confident]. *<sup>4</sup>One thing have I desired of the LORD, that will I seek after.*” This is the ultimate

objective that David pursued. It was his goal in life. It is stated as, “*That I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life.*” And to do what? The answer is, “*To behold the beauty of the LORD. And to enquire in his temple.*” David is telling you that God is beautiful!

## God Is Beautiful

When checking a Hebrew word used in this passage, you will find that *the connotation* is about God *being beautiful*. This translates into God being *delightfully pleasant*. When you look at God, He is delightfully pleasant. He is not like the pictures you have seen with long white hair, a long beard, wrinkled face and those probing eyes. Instead, David said, “*God looked handsome.*” But in reality, God is beyond description.

Words are just too limiting – no matter what language might be employed. You cannot reduce God’s wonder and splendor into mere words. When you strive to know God, He will, in time, reveal to you His *overall plans*. Your goal should be to obtain knowledge and then you will understand *The Real Purpose of Life*. As you learn about God, you will know who God is.

I Corinthians 13:11-13 <sup>11</sup>When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. <sup>12</sup>For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known. <sup>13</sup>And now abides faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

The Christian world defines I Corinthians 13 as *The Love Chapter*. It tells you about *real love*. However, it also reveals something far more intricate. The Apostle Paul tells about *the different gifts* you should seek: *Faith, Hope* and *Love* (charity). The translation in The King James Version uses the word *charity* instead of *love* because there are different types of love. In Greek, there is an intellectual love – which is *agàpè*. This is not just an emotional love, but rather it is an intellectual love which is *a giving type of love*. It is a charitable act which is a continuous outgoing type of love. It should always be your concern for the other individual.

## Discerning God

In reference to knowing who God is and what He looks like, you should discern what this definition means in relationship to yourself. “<sup>11</sup>*When I was a child* [speaking about these gifts], *I spoke as a child. I understood as a child.*” This sounds somewhat like Job, doesn’t it? It was as if Job was saying, “*Why should I counsel? I didn’t have knowledge.*” He just didn’t have the correct factors in place. Job didn’t have enough *truth* to speak sensibly. But on the other hand, this is what Paul said.

<sup>11</sup>When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. <sup>12</sup>For now we see through a glass, darkly.

In other words, you will only see in *shadows*. You will only know *part of the truth*. No one can perceive completely or have full understanding. Being human is a handicap on

*the eventual ability to see the truth about spiritual knowledge more perfectly.*

**You will only see parts, such as with The Holy Days and The Sabbath which were only *shadows* of things to come. What God reveals about Himself through His Holy Word will not be a total picture because to fully know Him is *unreachable*. “<sup>12</sup>*For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then* [when you are changed, you will see Him] *face to face.*” When you are changed, you will be like God and His Son. When you look at God (and not an angel), you will see completely. To know *the whole process of Salvation*, which comes only through Jesus Christ, you will know The Father. The more you come to learn of The Father, the more you grow in knowledge and understanding. When you know what God is doing and why He is doing it, you will see that it was the only possible way He could *achieve* His goals. *This gift of love, the ultimate gift from God, is when you see Him face-to-face.***

**John 4:9-10** <sup>9</sup>Then said the woman of Samaria to him, How is it that you, being a Jew, ask drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. <sup>10</sup>Jesus answered and said to her, If you knew the gift of God and who it is that said to you, Give me to drink; you would have asked of him and he would have given you living water.

## **Woman At The Well**

**A most beautiful account is told when the woman from Samaria came to the well and Christ asked her for water. This episode became the basis for a powerful lesson.**

**John 4:19-24** <sup>19</sup>The woman said to him, Sir, I perceive that you are a prophet. <sup>20</sup>Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and you say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. <sup>21</sup>Jesus said to her, Woman, believe me, the hour comes, when you shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. <sup>22</sup>You worship you know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. <sup>23</sup>But the hour comes and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him. <sup>24</sup>God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

The Disciples were shocked to see Jesus speaking to a Samaritan woman. He said, <sup>10</sup>*I'm going to give you water of which you will never thirst*" (paraphrased). He tells her that He is Christ and that He will be able to give her *living waters*. The Jews were given The Oracles (the truth) of God. They had been directed to worship in *the temple* where God resided. Then Jesus described an alternative. He said, <sup>23</sup>*But the hour comes and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth.*"

## Worship Without A Temple

After the destruction of *the temple*, no physical place remained for The Christians to meet. So now, Jesus Christ resides in every converted Christian person, *"For the Father seeks such to worship him* [those who worship in Spirit] <sup>24</sup>*God, is a Spirit.*" *Spirit* is a substance of which God is composed. On the other hand, mankind has skin and bones. Humans can be burned and end up as dust or ash.

You cannot be resurrected as skin and bones. To become a part of The Family of God, you must be *resurrected as a spirit*.

The word for “*spirit*” in the original Greek language of *The New Testament* is “*pneuma*.” The word for “*spirit*” in *The Old Testament* is “*ruah*.” Both words mean “*wind*” or “*a huge blast of wind*” – “*as powerful as a tornado*.” Wind cannot be seen. You can only see what it can do and what it whips up within itself. You can see all the debris that it carries but never the wind itself. You feel its impact (energy) and you can see the damage it does. You know about the force of the wind. So this force compares with the construction of God’s *energy*. It is *energy* that is constantly on the move. It is a self-perpetuating dynamic. *God is self-perpetuating energy* with no mass or matter. You can learn how energy works and how it functions within *His body*. God is made of this power-field that is propelled like the wind.

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.

*The invisible things of God* are perceived by the elements that He has created. God tells you that *He is like the wind*. This electrical energy can be produced by the wind. Man-made windmills can create this form of energy. As a result, God’s energy creates this electricity, through which you can more perfectly perceive what *His body* is like. He can be like lightning along with the power of fierce blowing winds. God is a combination of all these electromag-



netic forces. Yet, these forces are just a very small part of the composition of God's body.

John 14:8-10 <sup>8</sup>Philip said to him, Lord, show us the Father and it will suffice us. <sup>9</sup>Jesus said to him, Have I been so long time with you and yet have you not known me, Philip? He that has seen me has seen the Father; and how say you then, show us the Father? <sup>10</sup>Believe you not that I am in the Father and the Father in me? the words that I speak to you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwells in me, He does the works.

Look at those vital words. “*8Show us the Father and it will suffice us.*” They wanted to see God. They would have been satisfied if they could see what God looked like. In response, Jesus said the following.

<sup>9</sup>Have I been so long time with you and yet have you not known me, Philip? He that has seen me has seen the Father. And how say you then, show us the Father?

Jesus Christ was in the flesh and telling Philip that God looks like Christ, Himself. In other words, He *looks exactly as a human being would appear*. Christ continued, “*9He that has seen me has seen the Father.*” He was not made of the substance of which Christ was made. Christ was in the flesh while still on this earth.

## Compared To The Wind

God is made of wind that consists of great energy. Christ's height was probably somewhere between 5' 7" and 6' 5." Perhaps within that parameter is the height of God, The

Father. He has eyes, ears, mouth, legs, thighs and everything that you have. Jesus said, “*9He that has seen me has seen the Father.*” It is very plain in *The New Testament* that God looks like a man but is made of *spirit* (or wind). Understand that wind is real even though it cannot be seen. Did you ever see a tornado or a tsunami? Have you ever been in a windstorm or a hurricane? I can tell you from chasing hurricanes during my term of service, that the power of God is alive in the wind and, indeed, in all weather.

Think of *The Scriptures* where God told Job that God is as stated, “*I’m in the frost. Even in the frost of winter, I’m in that.*” God made the frost, also. God is *perpetual energy*. If God were not constantly in the process of keeping the universe going, it would collapse. Consequently, everything would be gone. So God’s *electromagnetic energy* (spirit) keeps everything going. Jesus said, “*10Believe you not that I am in the Father and the Father in me? The words that I speak to you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwells in me, he does the works.*”

Jesus Christ, Himself, plainly tells you that He and The Father look the same. God looks like a human being. Although, He is made of *Spirit*, so there is much more.

I John 1:1-5 <sup>1</sup>That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; <sup>2</sup>(For the life was manifested and we have seen it and bear witness and show to you that eternal life, which was with the Father and was manifested to us;) <sup>3</sup>That which we

have seen and heard declare we to you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup>And these things write we to you, that your joy may be full. <sup>5</sup>This then is the message which we have heard of him and declare to you, that God is light and in him is no darkness at all.

As the student of *The Bible* places “*line upon line and precept upon precept*” (Isaiah 28:10, 13) then all the unknown Mysteries of God will be pieced together, so, as far as is humanly possible, you can still see *the complete picture* of the puzzle. It sounds almost sacrilegious, doesn't it? Yet God has laid it all out for you, so that, *in truth*, you will see what God is and what He looks like.

## From The Beginning

Where and when is the beginning? What took place at that time? There is a record of importance.

1 John 1:1-4 <sup>1</sup>That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon and our hands have handled, of the Word of life [speaking of Christ]; <sup>2</sup> (For the life was manifested and we have seen it and bear witness and show to you that eternal life, which was with the Father and was manifested to us;) <sup>3</sup>That which we have seen and heard declare we to you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup>And these things write we to you that your joy may be full.

The Apostle John was reporting that he saw Jesus in the correct context along with all the other Apostles who lived with Jesus. With the knowledge of this information, John is reporting that by seeing Christ (who was like The Father), you will experience joy, “*5This then is the message, which you have heard of him and declared to you.*”

## God Is Light

*Light is the second substance of God, “That God is Light”* (I John 1:5). The two scientific elements of which God is composed are: 1) *wind* and 2) *light*. All these electromagnetic forces, light, gamma rays, ultra violet rays and nuclear forces which science has discovered, are in God and emanate from Him. Long before scientists discovered this, God told you that all those *forces* are *in* God. Only at this time has science come to the place where it finally realizes that the origin of all these energy fields is from *light*. The most prevalent material of God's composition is *light!* *Light* has power.

In science, researchers have found that light comes in little packages called *photons*. The energy in these photons of light is filled with little waves. The higher the frequency in the wave, the faster the wave travels and therefore, the greater amount of energy. The stronger the photons, the more energy is produced. God is composed of *light energy*. Einstein was right.  $E=MC^2$ . Energy (which is what God is) equals mass times the speed of light squared. Now you know what God is made of!

He is made of *light* and He is made of *spirit*. Isn't it ironic that when you start to look at His physical makeup, you

will see everything about Him radiates a *powerful light*? Even beyond these little photons, scientists are finding little squiggly things or *strings*.

The latest news in science is about The String Theory. These are elements that are composed of energy. You can look at a light bulb in a room and it will illuminate. You probably don't think of *light as a force*. But what is electricity? Electricity is energy. So God is composed of a great amount of energy. What type of energy is this? To behold God is a *delightfully pleasant* experience. God is handsome with no wrinkles, no long white hair or beard. God exudes a pleasant light or radiance.

## Visions Of Daniel

Daniel 7:1 In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote of the dream and told the sum of the matters.

Daniel 7:9 I beheld till the thrones were cast down and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame and his wheels as burning fire.

To solidify another part of the puzzle found in *The Old Testament*, you should recognize that Daniel received the same kind of information John had received in *The New Testament*. Nebuchadnezzar, The King of Babylon, was given a dream about a massive image (Daniel 2:31-36). Daniel explains to the king, "*This image and the interpreta-*

*tion, he says is you. You are the head of this image*" (Daniel 2:37). The Gentile *image* will exist until Christ destroys it when He *returns*.

This image represents *the four kingdoms* that will exist until The Return of Christ. To get a proper perspective about the background of this prophecy, read Daniel 7:1, "<sup>1</sup>*In the first year of Belshazzar, king of Babylon, Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote of the dream and told the sum of the matters.*"

Adding to this, the angel reveals in Daniel 7:9 about the dream concerning the animals that would rule, "<sup>9</sup>*I beheld till the thrones were cast down.*" All this takes place after the earthly empires have been completed and *the kingdoms of the world* are replaced by God's kingdom. "<sup>9</sup>*The thrones were cast down and the Ancient of days did sit.*" This is the time of The Great Judgment Day.

## Ancient Of Days

With these texts, you begin to have a description of God and how old He is. God is *ancient!* *The Bible* does not say that God is old but rather declares that He is *ancient*. The Hebrew word "*ancient*" refers to "*eons*" or "*ages*." With God, there is no time. The only way you can note time is when you have something to measure time with. God created the sun, moon and stars as *instruments of time measurement*. If God were old, it would mean that He was once young. And that would imply that He has aged over time. Instead, you are told that God is *ancient*.

If God had been young once in the past and then became

old, that would subject God to *the restriction of time*. Instead, He is just *ancient*. Notice how *The Bible* refers to time periods as “*aonion*” or “*age lasting*.” In fact, many religions identify *a time span* that occurs in *an age-period* as a dispensation. God has different ages in which to accomplish different things. That is God’s *dispensation*. At one age, He created the heaven and the earth. In another age, He made it habitable for Adam and Eve. God is *ancient* because He *always has been*, is *today* and *always will be forever* and *ever*. There is no limiting of God in any manner.

## Garments Of Light

What type of clothing do you think God wears? God does not run around like the heroes in today’s movies bare-chested with disgusting, sweaty, oily skin. God appears to be very modest. He is so modest that He is clothed down to His feet.

His clothing is *white as snow*. It is *white* for a specific reason. You are seeing God who looks like a human being. As Christ said, “*Just as he was*.” He is made of *light* and composed of *spirit*. God has been around forever and, now, you find that He wears garments. These are like garments of light. The text says, “*And his garment was white as snow and the hair of his head was like pure wool*.” Does this mean that God has curly or wavy hair?

When a person looks at a herd of sheep and notices their hair, it is wavy isn’t it? God’s hair could possibly be curly or wavy. *The Scriptures* confirm it. God just naturally has hair that appears like wool. You now have two more

descriptions about how God looks. Is there anything missing? Notice, there is no mention of a beard. What comes out from God's presence? Are there fiery flames?

God is made of *spirit, light* and *energy*. If you were in front of Him with His woolly hair, there would be all kinds of flames emanating from Him. Daniel 7 says, “*His throne was like the fiery flame and his wheels as burning fire.*” Notice, how His throne, also, has wheels as burning fire.

Ezekiel 1:4-7 <sup>4</sup>And I looked and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud and a fire infolding itself and a brightness was about it and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire. <sup>5</sup>Also out of the midst thereof came the likeness of four living creatures. And this was their appearance; they had the likeness of a man. <sup>6</sup>And every one had four faces and every one had four wings. <sup>7</sup>And their feet were straight feet; and the sole of their feet was like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the colour of burnished brass.

## Biblical UFO's

Continuing with *the Ezekiel text*, there is a certain type of transporting device for God. Some might even describe the device as an unidentified flying object (UFO). Carefully examine the following account.

Ezekiel 1:27-28 <sup>27</sup>And I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward and from the appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as



it were the appearance of fire and it had brightness round about. <sup>28</sup>As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud in the day of rain, so was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw it, I fell upon my face and I heard a voice of one that spoke.

In Ezekiel 1, you read about *The Bible's* UFOs. A lot of people get into trouble over UFOs. They write books, start clubs, open tourist areas and start religions with various UFO beliefs. People spend their time looking for aliens. Thousands of years ago, God wrote about *a type of UFO*. Ezekiel was in captivity in Babylon. He disclosed a personal vision about a prophecy that was, yet, to occur. Ezekiel said, “*4And I looked and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north.*” What is God like? Could it be like a blast – such as a tornado? Notice the words, “*A great cloud and a fire infolding itself.*”

In this cloud, there was something so energetic that it had hot flames. It was fire almost like an atomic blast of energy, “*And a brightness was about it and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire.*” So, God looks human-like. He is composed of energy (wind and light) and glowing with an amber color. Many different colors exude from the brilliance that is radiated by God. This is confirmed in Greek and Hebrew. Some definitions do not specify the exact colors, but God is composed of over 20 different jewel tones. To look upon God, it would appear as if you are looking upon magnificent glowing jewels. This is an entirely different picture than most have of God. They see amber and “*5out of the*

*midst thereof came the likeness of four living creatures.”* This was their appearance. They had the likeness of a man. Then, the passage describes four cherubim. The cherubim have four wings and are part of a wheel within a wheel.

According to some interpretations of a UFO, it may have a wheel and then a wheel within that wheel. This may appear like a supernatural gyroscope. Ezekiel 1:27 states, “*27 I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward.*” From God’s loins upward, the color you see is amber. “*His loins upward*” means from roughly about His thighs upward. This is the *amber color* exuding from God. In the color spectrum (the rainbow), white is not considered to be a color since all the colors of the rainbow contain white.

So, the greater the intensity of something, a greater degree of *energy, heat or light* exists. Consequently, it will be *brighter or more white* will be in it. When the color spectrum opens up as *a rainbow*, the next levels following *white* are *the blues* and *the violets*. As the color spectrum unfolds and the energy becomes less, it goes into the *reds, oranges* and *yellows* then into *the bronzes*.

## The Face Of God

You will find that the face of God exudes the greatest amount of energy. From His head and, especially, from His face, it is *this whiteness* rushing upward from His thighs into the blue hue. It compares to a diamond that contains a sparkle of blue shimmering within. Imagine bumping

into *a being* that looks this radiant. It may be shocking for some to realize that God has disclosed so much about Himself. “*The appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of fire and it had brightness round about*” (Ezekiel 1:27). In other words, such a degree of energy radiates from His *body*, that the whole image is entirely “a wondrous brightness.” It is no wonder that David said, “*All I want to do is sit in the temple of God and look at his beauty.*”

There is another surprise about God’s appearance. Remember that from the visible and invisible things of God, you can see His *creation*. Those colors are so magnificent, so overpowering and so delightful that all you would want to do is to stare at Him in amazement. God is that awesome, that wonderful and that handsome. Consider also, “<sup>28</sup>*the appearance of the bow.*” The brightness exuding from Him is like the appearance of the rainbow in the cloud following a day of rain. What type of brightness surrounds God? It is *the rainbow* from God’s light energy.

God’s *glory* radiates *a rainbow!* Is it any wonder that in Noah’s day, God could not have given a better promise than to say He would never again flood the earth? He was giving His Covenant of The Rainbow in the heavens. *This promise* comes straight from God and directly from His *throne*. When you behold God and see the brightness which radiates from him, you see *blue, violet, orange, red* and *yellow* – all the brilliant hues with the magnificent colors of the rainbow coming from God.

If you remember the movie *The Wizard of Oz*, there was a

wizard who lived in the enchanted Land of Oz. When they first showed the wizard's throne, it displayed the rainbow. Do you remember the song, "*Somewhere Over The Rainbow?*" The wizard (the man-made *god*) in the movie was supposed to be beaming with the brightness and glorious emerald colors of the rainbow. "<sup>28</sup>*So was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD*" (Ezekiel). In *The Bible*, how many times do you read, "*The Glory of The LORD?*" In Hebrew, they call it "*shekinah*."

## The Glory Of God

In the days before *the temple* was destroyed, The Levitical Priesthood said they heard a voice echoing, "*It's going; it's going.*" This was about *the shekinah* or The Glory of God (all God's brilliance and power) that was going away. Literally, *The Glory* (the brilliance and power) was leaving *the temple*. When the people entered *the temple* before it was destroyed, God's very presence had been there as His Spirit, His Glory or *shekinah*. The "*Glory of The LORD*" means "*copious splendor*" or "*all of God's power.*"

When *The Bible* speaks of The Glory of The LORD, it is talking about a Supreme Being. When something is copious, it is *saturated* or *saturated splendor*. It is saturated with a multitude of jewels. That is The Glory of The LORD. David knew this and Job finally came to see it. It is now your turn to know The Glory of The LORD. By going before God in prayer, you will realize the magnificence of God. It is mind-boggling.

Exodus 3:11-14 <sup>11</sup>And Moses said to God, Who am I,

that I should go to Pharaoh and that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt? <sup>12</sup>And He said, Certainly I will be with you; and this shall be a token to you, that I have sent you: When you have brought forth the people out of Egypt, you shall serve God upon this mountain. <sup>13</sup>And Moses said to God, Behold, when I come to the children of Israel and shall say to them, The God of your fathers has sent me to you and they shall say to me, What is his name? What shall I say to them? <sup>14</sup>And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and He said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.

God is called by a particular name. But remember, God has *many names*. Some are titles telling what He is or what He is doing at a particular time. But God has a specific name which is difficult to pronounce. In fact, The Israelites were never permitted to pronounce it. This was because that name was extremely Holy. Capitalizing on this fact, read the account about the time when Moses was instructed by God to take the children of Israel out of Egypt.

Exodus 3:11-13 <sup>11</sup>And Moses said to God, Who am I, that I should go to Pharaoh and that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt? <sup>12</sup>And He said, Certainly I will be with you and this shall be a token to you, that I have sent you: When you have brought forth the people out of Egypt, you shall serve God upon this mountain. <sup>13</sup>And Moses said to God, Behold, when I come to the children of Israel and shall say to them, The God of your fathers has sent me to you.

So they knew The God of The Fathers. What they did not know was His name. The name had been revealed to Moses at the burning bush, “<sup>13</sup>*The God of your fathers has sent me to you; and they shall surely say to me. What is his name? What shall I say to them?* <sup>14</sup>*And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM*” (Exodus 3:13-14).

### Great Name Of YHVH

In Hebrew, only the consonants are used to indicate The Heavenly Father's name (*YHWH* by some accounts, *JHVH* by others and still others *YHVH*). These four letters are called The Tetragrammaton. The ancient Hebrew had *no vowels*. The scribes or copyists used diacritical marks just above or below the letters to indicate the vowels. Experts in Jewish *law* elected to hide this *fourfold name* to ensure it would not be blasphemed. When the four letters of The Tetragrammaton appeared in the text, scribes would point to it and substitute vowels for the word “*adonai*” in Hebrew (literally, “*lord*”) which was in turn read “*adonai*” rather than *the sacred name “Yahweh.”* In Hebrew, “*I AM THAT I AM,*” states exactly what God actually is. God said, “*You shall say to the children of Israel, ‘I AM’ has sent me to you.*” This name means “*I am the existing one.*” In Hebrew it means *the “existing one”* or *the “only existing one.”*

This ties in with The Ancient of Days meaning that God always existed. He exists today and He always will exist. However, the name means much more. It means “*The One who always exists.*” In other words, He is “*self-life.*” He consists of *perpetual energy*. God needs nothing outside of Himself. He is everything that is. This has a deeper

meaning than just saying, “*You’re a God*” or even the more emphatic, “*You are The God.*” You could use “*Elohim,*” which is plural or *more than one*, when speaking universally. This text is speaking about all of His *Godliness*. It is opposed to, “*I alone as God am the existing one,*” or when he says “*El Shaddai, The Almighty One.*” Those are titles, but YHWH (or JHVH) is His name. His name can never apply to anything or any other *being* because God is The Only Existing One.

Exodus 20:1-4 <sup>1</sup>And God spoke all these words, saying,  
<sup>2</sup>I am the LORD your God, which have brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.  
<sup>3</sup>You shall have no other gods before me. <sup>4</sup>You shall not make to you any graven image or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above or that is in the earth beneath or that is in the water under the earth.

Why does God tell you in The Second Commandment “*not to make any images even of his likeness?*”

### Images Of God?

Think about the pictures depicting Christ, along with the idols, icons, statues or other images that you see representing God or His Son. It is unbelievable. How could anyone ever think of making an image of God? It is unthinkable. It is impossible.

God instructs His people not to make images because it would only be a lie. The Second Commandment is powerful – “*You shall make no images of me.*” It should not and cannot be done. When artists try to depict a like-

ness, others begin to worship those false images. A person might say, “*I know that is not God but it makes me think about God.*” No, it doesn’t. It doesn’t make anyone think about God, because God doesn’t look anything like those renditions. How powerful that commandment is when you know its *true* meaning. Now you understand why that commandment has been placed there for you and all Christians to obey. It is easier to understand The First Commandment when a person says there is *One God* and only *One God*. He is The Only Existing One. He is The One and Only One! God is One. *The Book of Job* and *Proverbs* tell you that when God made a decree, all He had to do was to stretch the heavens out as a curtain. That motion in the heavens could have been The Big Bang. It should, now, be more significant to you. If God didn’t exist, what would happen to the universe? It would be gone. God upholds the whole universe, including everything and everyone in it.

Genesis 5:1-2 <sup>1</sup>This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; <sup>2</sup>Male and female created he them; and blessed them and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created.

As you read earlier, God looks like a human being. Genesis 1 and Genesis 5 tell you how He made you *in His image*.

## Male And Female

When examining *The Book of Genesis*, you can discern why man and woman become one flesh. Genesis 5 states, “<sup>2</sup>*Male and female created he them in His image.*” What



does that mean? Even though God is *a male being*, the DNA of both the female and the male are in Him. The word DNA or genes is used in an attempt to explain this. Many times women think they are left out of the equation. However, they are not overlooked and are as much a part of God as men. *The light substance* that comprises God is used to compose both male and female. Concerning God's creative work, "*And he called their name Adam.*" Why did Eve take Adam's name and not have her own name? This is because God is *The Existing One* and He is both male and female, all in one, with all humans belonging to '*I Am.*'

Adam was a symbol or a figure of Christ. Men are to be one flesh with their wives. That is the reason why men and women marry: in order to become *one flesh*. God is *One*. Do you realize that the DNA of the female, as well as the male, is in God? Furthermore, the word "*Elohim,*" or "*God's leading you,*" is an additional piece of the puzzle for you to assemble. It is a beautiful picture with a wonderful message for all mankind.

I John 1:5 This then is the message which you have heard of him and declare to you, that God is light and in him is no darkness at all.

Now compare the extremes: 1) what God is and 2) what God isn't. "*This then is the message which you have heard of him and declare to you, that God is light. And in Him is no darkness at all.*" You may have seen little gadgets that spin when they are put in the sunlight. This is called a radiometer. How can sunlight make that gadget spin? The sun is energy and when it hits the spindle (little

white squares) light is reflected. This provides a certain degree of *push*. But there are also little black squares on the spindle and those black squares *absorb the light*. The white squares move away from the light but not the black squares. Similarly, in God, *there is no darkness*. That is why there are black holes. Black holes build up energy that can actually swallow up the light. God has no darkness. He is nothing but *light* and only *light*.

## Two Beings

You are presented with *two major beings* in *The Bible*. One *being* is The Son of The Other. They both look alike. They are both of the same '*I Am*' family. Adam was of that family because he and his wife were *one*. The Son and The Father are *One* exactly as Adam and Eve were *One*.

Revelation 1:8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, said the Lord, which is and which was and which is to come, the Almighty.

Revelation 1:12-14 <sup>12</sup>And I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks; <sup>13</sup>And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like to the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot and girt about the paps with a golden girdle. <sup>14</sup>His head and his hairs were white like wool, as white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire

All this becomes the basis for the message which follows, "*I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the ending, said the Lord, which is and which was and which is*

*to come, the Almighty*” (Revelation 1:8). In other words, He is what *the beginning* and *the ending* are supposed to be. So whether it is: 1) in the beginning or 2) at the end, you are going to see what He is like. “<sup>12</sup>*And I turned to see the voice* [The Apostle John turned to see this voice that spoke to him] *and being turned I saw seven golden candlesticks. And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like to the Son of man.*” Who is this in the middle of the golden candlesticks? Is it Jesus Christ? You will now see what Christ looks like after *His resurrection*. He is “<sup>13</sup>*clothed with a garment down to the foot.*” He is fully clothed in a modest manner and wears a belt. “*And girt about the paps with a golden girdle.*” Notice it’s a golden girdle! He must believe in quality. You have already proven that His hair was like wool. But here you see that “<sup>14</sup>*his head and his hairs were white like wool.*” So His hair looks like wool and it’s of a white color. Why is it white?

## White Hair

The color *white* carries the whole color spectrum. “*As white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire.*” Energy is coming from God’s eyes. If you looked into His eyes, you would see burning fire like lasers. It would be at an intense temperature that is unknown to man. His hair is white – but it is not long hair. His face is white (with no beard). There is a time for a man to have long hair – when he is under a vow. God does not live under a vow, so He does not need long hair. God doesn’t break His own *Laws*. Women are directed to have long hair because they are under the authority of their husbands. Men should not have long hair because they should follow God’s admonition to look like Him.

**I Corinthians 11:7-15** <sup>7</sup>For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. <sup>8</sup>For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man. <sup>9</sup>Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man. <sup>10</sup>For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head because of the angels. <sup>11</sup>Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord. <sup>12</sup>For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God. <sup>13</sup>Judge in yourselves: is it comely that a woman pray to God uncovered? <sup>14</sup>Does not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a shame to him? <sup>15</sup>But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a covering.

**The Apostle Paul reiterated the same in I Corinthians 11:7-15. God is a male even though the female strain is within Him. There is no long hair, no beard and He is not old – but *ancient*. Isn't this a completely different picture of God, your Father?**

**Revelation 1:15-16** <sup>15</sup>And his feet like to fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters. <sup>16</sup>And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shines in his strength.

**Imagine “*and his feet like to fine brass*” as if on fire. The face is the ultimate source of His *energy* (His brain). *White* is the intensity that is somewhat like the sun. The lower**

part is amber. Going down to His feet (burnished brass), there is less energy.

## The 20 Gemstones

There are 20 gems in New Jerusalem. So if you were looking at God, He would be in a multi-glowing, colorful state. Some might ask, “*What race is God?*” The answer to that is, “*He is a combination of all the races!*” “<sup>16</sup>*And He had in his right hand seven stars* [you will see later how these ‘seven stars’ are ‘angels’], *And out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword and his countenance* [His appearance] *was as the sun shines in His strength.*”

**This is The Son and The Father looking exactly the same.**

Revelations 5:2-7 <sup>2</sup>And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book and to loose the seals thereof? <sup>3</sup>And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>4</sup>And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>5</sup>And one of the elders said to me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof. <sup>6</sup>And I beheld and, lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth. <sup>7</sup>And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

No man was able to open *the book with the seven seals* (Revelation 5). It states John began to cry. And the angel told him, “*Don't worry, there is one here, <sup>2</sup>Who is worthy to open the book and to loose the seals thereof?*”

Revelations 4:2-4 <sup>2</sup>And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven and one sat on the throne. <sup>3</sup>And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like to an emerald. <sup>4</sup>And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

“<sup>2</sup>*And immediately, I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in Heaven and one sat on the throne. <sup>3</sup>And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like to an emerald*” (Revelation 4).

## Great Emerald Throne

There is a great emerald rainbow above His head and the whole color spectrum of brightness radiates from His *body*. To see who this is, read Revelation 5:4-7.

<sup>4</sup>And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>5</sup>And one of the elders said to me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof. <sup>6</sup>And I beheld and, lo, in the midst of the

throne and of the four beasts and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb [speaking of Christ] as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth. <sup>7</sup>And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

The Father's *throne* had a sardine stone with a jasper and emerald rainbow above His *head*. Jesus, as The Slain Lamb, went to The Father and received *the book* to open it. In Revelation 4 and 5, The Father was sitting on the throne. He looks the same as Jesus in Revelation 1. Jesus and The Father not only look like human beings in *their glory*, they *look like each other* as members of one family – *God's family*. This is who and what God looks like. His name is '*I Am*' and He looks like a human being.

## Radiant Fullness

God is composed of *Spirit* – which can also be perceived as *a super powerful light*. His *body* glistens like jewels that have the appearance of changing colors. The brightness surrounding Him gives off the colors of the rainbow. This is what your God and my God looks like. He *is The One and Only* God. These comparisons, also, include the electromagnetic powers that science is beginning to discover. These breathtaking revelations have been a part of the biblical record for thousands of years!

In summary, God is composed of perpetual energy just like the wind. Primarily, He is composed of photons or *light*. He is *ancient* but never old. He is not wrinkled and has a continuous glorious glow of *gem-like colors* radiat-

ing from Him as a rainbow. His garments can change at His command. His face is white, full of energy and His hair is a brilliant white radiance that contains the entire color spectrum. His hair is short and may be curly (wavy) as wool. He has no beard.

Proceeding down His *body*, the color is blue, violet and becoming like burnished brass at His *legs*. The brilliance from His *body* surrounds Him like the colors of a rainbow – and the emerald color is above His *head*. His name is, “*I AM, YHWH (JHVH), The Existing One.*” Job and David talked about who God was and what He looked like. You are getting to know about The One True God.



## Chapter 4

# GOD'S CHARACTER AND PERSONALITY

When you diligently study all that is in *The Bible*, you find your God is an awesome *being*. He is a God composed of *spirit, wind and light*. Now, you are ready to learn what His character is like and what type of personality He has. You will learn about God's basic nature and how He thinks. You will see how He reacts to various situations. You will learn the full meanings and definitions of His names or titles. You will not only understand God but you will finally comprehend His *great plan* for the billions of individuals He has created.

### What's In A Name?

When a child is born, parents spend a considerable amount of time choosing the right name for the infant. They carefully consider *the meanings* of the different names. God, also, is very selective when He chooses names for His children. Beginning with Adam, the very first man, God chose an appropriate name. In Hebrew, the name "*Adam*" means "*red earth*" because he was created from red earth. Eve came out of Adam's body. "*Eve*" means "*mother of all creation*" or "*life*." God named them for what they were. God gives titles or names that describe what a particular person is or represents.

Genesis 1:26 And God said, Let us make man in our

image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of the air and over the cattle and over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

Another example is when David married Abigail. Originally, she was married to Nabal, who was killed because he acted unwisely. The word "*Nabal*" means "*fool*." Abigail was an honorable woman but she married a fool. She learned from her mistake because, later, she became the wife of David.

So it is with God's various titles or names. There are two ways you can find the meaning of His names. The first method is by reading the context. When a specific name for God is mentioned, it is used in reference to what He is talking about. You must understand the context in which God's title (name) is used. Keep in mind, God has many powers and abilities. When carrying out His various *purposes*, He specifies their meaning through the various titles or names.

## To Really Know God

If you really want to know as much as you can about God, assemble all the pieces of His puzzle He has left for you. In order to understand His various titles or names in the context of a given subject, you must be a good detective and compile all the facts. The second method is to find the meaning of a word in Hebrew (*The Old Testament*) and in Greek (*The New Testament*) in order to obtain *the true meaning*. You must fully understand key words that have been translated into *The King James Version*. A greater

understanding comes through the true meanings of God's various titles or names. In *The Old Testament*, seven basic designations are used for God. However, *only* two names have been used in *The Old* and *New Testament* translations for *these seven titles*. Those two names are "God" and "LORD." Nevertheless, seven different, meaningful titles are used when God's name is mentioned. The meanings of these seven titles or names tell you what He is really like – and fully explain *His plan*.

## Elohim

Genesis 1:26 is a famous verse. Here, the true meaning for God is distinct, explanatory and carries a great insight, "26And God said." The word "God" in Hebrew comes from "Elohim." "El" in Hebrew means "mighty." When you see "El" it conveys God as being "mighty." But the word "Elohim" is a plural word which translates to "manifesting a multiplicity" or "plurality of God." "Elohim" can also mean "angels," "elders" or "judges." Christians get confused by this meaning and come up with two or three gods – hence *the common trinity*. However, the name "Elohim" carries a far bigger connotation than merely referring to separate individuals. The verse in question goes on to say, "26And God said, Let us make man in our image." To whom is He talking?

*The Bible* tells you that in the beginning *The Word* was with God and *The Word* was God. Does this mean that God and Christ were sitting down and having a serious conversation together? That may seem logical. However, in this verse, He was referring to many more beings than just two having a conversation between themselves. How

many other entities look like God and The Word? Perhaps The 24 Elders? (Note: The word “*image*” not only means “*shadow*” or “*not quite real*” but it could mean “*a phantom*”). When God said, “*to make man in our image,*” He created this shadow to look like a human. (Note: this is very different from Christ being *a stamped impress* of The Father as mentioned in Hebrews 1).

God, as *Elohim*, could include 24 Elders and also, perhaps, the angels. This conversation was about creating others who resembled God or who were made in God's image. When God stated, “*Let us,*” He was talking about *The Godhead*. He was making man as *a phantom* or *an image* and gave him the responsibility of being placed over everything God had *created* on the earth.

Genesis 2:18 And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help mate for him.

In *Genesis* you learn what Elohim is thinking about, “*And the LORD God.*” Translated from Hebrew, this is “*Adoni Elohim.*” (“Adoni” will be explained later and will add greater meaning than just “Master”). “<sup>18</sup>*And the LORD God [or The Master Elohim] said it is not good that man should be alone.*” This gives you a little insight into how God *thinks*. He said it is not good for those who are made in His image *to be alone*.

## A Female Helper

Realize that God is good and that He had a specific reason for not wanting Adam to be alone. *His intent was al-*

*ways to procreate Himself.* When He said, “*It is not good for man to be alone,*” God was allowing you to know His *thoughts.* He was telling you something very important, “*That the man should not be alone, I will make him a help mate for him.*”

God is reproducing Himself and gives that reproduction power to those who have been created in His image. Then, they will have the same kind of reproduction attributes that He has. This is a fantastic and precious gift. It is *the gift to create life.*

Genesis 2:21-24 <sup>21</sup>And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam and he slept; and he took one of his ribs and closed up the flesh instead thereof; <sup>22</sup>And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman and brought her to the man. <sup>23</sup>And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. <sup>24</sup>Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

This is God's *thinking.* God did this and it wasn't Adam's doing. You cannot reproduce any better than by duplicating what The One has created and brought into *being* (you). God tells this in the next verse. “<sup>24</sup>*Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they shall be one flesh.*” God is One. You are becoming *One* with God. God says it is not good for a *being* to dwell alone. He says a man should have a *helpmate.* The best way to accomplish this is to reproduce yourself with the same genes. You could call it “*spiritual DNA.*”

## Mother Of All Creation

Eve is the mother of all creation and Adam was the first type of Christ. Adam could have been The Savior. Eve, being his wife and mother of all future children, would have been compared to *the church*. Adam would have ended up being Christ or The Savior of The World. He was given a great opportunity. But Adam *failed* to qualify. After Adam failed, another seed had to come in the flesh (Jesus Christ). He came to fulfill the role of *a Savior*.

Then, there needed to be a helpmate for The Savior, which is *the church*. All of this is embodied in *the title "Elohim."* The word "*Elohim*" shows a plurality of God reproducing Himself in all of His *creation* (I Corinthians 15:28). Adam, along with his helpmate (Eve), could have been "*the saviors of the world.*" Adam would have been The Savior and Eve would have been The Mother of The Whole World. This is a very large concept to embrace but it is a critical message that comes through many *Scriptures in The Bible*.

## God, Abraham And Covenants

Genesis 17:3-7 <sup>3</sup>And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, <sup>4</sup>As for me, behold, my covenant is with you and you shall be a father of many nations. <sup>5</sup>Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made you. <sup>6</sup>And I will make you exceeding fruitful and I will make nations of you and kings shall come out of you. <sup>7</sup>And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after

you in their generations for an everlasting covenant,  
to be a God to you and to your seed after you.

*A covenant had to be reintroduced so everything could be done in a proper way. “<sup>3</sup>And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, <sup>4</sup>As for me, behold, my covenant is with you and you shall be a father of many nations.”* The Hebrew word “*Elohiym*” breaks down to “*El*,” which means “*mighty*” and “*hiym*,” which means “*plural*” or “*a love-covenanting God*.” All this means “*God in covenant*.” *Elohim* not only means *plural* (many) but also, means that He enters into *covenants or agreements*. The title “*Elohim*” encompasses “*mighty*,” “*many*” or “*love covenanting*.” It also means “*entering into an agreement*” with Abraham through whom *the promise seed* would come – which was The Promise of Christ. Notice, there is no Israel or *chosen people* at this time.

God speaks as *Elohim* and communicates to the whole world, “<sup>5</sup>*Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made you. <sup>6</sup>And I will make you exceeding fruitful and I will make nations of you and kings shall come out of you. <sup>7</sup>And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting [age-lasting] covenant [agreement], to be a God [Elohim] to you and to your seed after you.”* When God uses the name *Elohim*, it is used in reference to *the universe* or to *the entire creation*. God will be *All and In All*.

Ephesians 3:9-15 <sup>9</sup>And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world has been hid in God, who created all

things by Jesus Christ: <sup>10</sup>To the intent that now to the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, <sup>11</sup>According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: <sup>12</sup>In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him. <sup>13</sup>Wherefore I desire that you faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory. <sup>14</sup>For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.

When explaining his responsibility, Paul says, “<sup>9</sup>*And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world.*” This mystery started from the beginning of the world, with Adam and Eve under Elohim. Paul said, “*has been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ [The Word], <sup>10</sup>To the intent that now to the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God.*”

## The Eternal Purpose

When God reveals *who He is, what He is and how He thinks*, He is giving you *His wisdom*. “<sup>11</sup>*According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: <sup>12</sup>In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him. <sup>13</sup>Wherefore I desire that you faint not at my tribulation for you, which is your glory. <sup>14</sup>For this cause I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.*” The Greek word for “family” is “*patria*” or “*Our Father.*”



As you can see, when God said, “*Let us make man in our image,*” He was talking to a large number of *beings*. He is referring to His future *purpose* or *plan*. *Elohim* refers to God’s objective to create a *Universal Family* – Sons of God – to complete His *work* according to His *word*. God will, then, be *all and in all*.

Hebrews 10:1 For the law having a shadow of good things to come and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.

Everything in *The Law* is a *shadow* which gives the basic instructions to come to Christ and The Father. In *Romans*, Paul explains that “*the invisible things*” of God are perceived in *the physical elements* which a person observes in the world.

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.

God is *Elohim* in everyone. So the name “*Elohim*” means God “*is all and in all.*” It is *plural in purpose*. God is *in all* and He is all encompassing. When He uses the *title* “*Elohim,*” He is talking about everything *He created*.

## Everything In Heaven And Earth

That is why Paul said, “*Everything that is named in heaven and in earth is named after this name.*” Rightly so, since He

created everything and He upholds everything that exists. If He didn't uphold all the things that exist, then where would you be? No one would be here. Whenever God uses the title "*Elohim*," He is talking about His *completeness* as God. God is *All*. *The plural* God, or the *all-encompassing* God, is a Godhead for whom *the entire heaven and earth* are named.

In *The Old Testament*, *Elohim* is speaking in *the universal* sense. This is the reason He made *the covenant* with Abraham. It was *A Universal Covenant*. It was covering *all nations* through *The One Seed* (I Corinthians 15:22) which was going to come through Abraham. That was *the promise*. God knows it is not good for man to be alone so He is *reproducing* Himself.

When they accused Christ of calling Himself The Son of God, Jesus said, "*Aren't you called gods?*" (John 10:34). They all came from God. Paul said that *The Word* was *with God* and *The Word* was *God*. Everything is God. There remains just *one* God – regardless of *the 24 elders*. This is all in The Godhead (God is all). Each time God speaks universally, He uses the title or name "*Elohim*" as "*possessor*," "*maker*" and "*creator of all*." This is how God *thinks*. Therefore, all of God's titles and names tell you exactly what He is like or what He is doing at a designated time.

## YHWH (JHVH) – The Righteous God

Exodus 3:14 And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.

The name YHWH (JHVH) causes a considerable degree of trouble for some individuals. Frankly, many people create different religious beliefs based on what they think this word means. “YHWH” (“JHVH”) means “*the existing one*” or the “*I Am that I Am.*” Some people think that you should only use this particular name to address God, The Existing One. But, this is not true. God has many titles (names) because He has many powers. He used “*I Am that I Am*” for Israel. In Exodus 3:14, Moses was attempting to back out of the job God assigned him.

God said, “*I want you to go and set My people free. Go talk to Pharaoh.*” Moses said, “*I can't even talk.*” Then Moses asks, “*Who shall I say sent me?*” *The One* who will send Moses is *the same* God as *Elohim* – only this time God is focusing upon a nation with *a specific purpose* in mind. God is not speaking here in a universal sense or about all mankind. Rather, He is referring to a single nation that will perform a task according to His *will*. He is dealing with Israel, personally, as their God. That is why He used a different name. “<sup>14</sup>*And God [Elohim] said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM*” (YHWH or JHVH).

### Unknown Pronunciation

No one knows the pronunciation of this name because *no vowels* exist – *only consonants*. “*And he said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.*” Now what did He want them to do?

Exodus 3:18 And they shall hearken to your voice: and you shall come, you and the elders of Israel, to the king of Egypt and you shall say to him, The LORD God

of the Hebrews has met with us: and now let us go, we beseech you, three days' journey into the wilderness, that we may sacrifice to the Lord our God.

The reason God wanted the children of Israel to come out of Egypt was for them to begin sacrificing to Him. At this time, He was playing a totally different role. What type of role was it? To find out, you need to examine the root of the word "*JHVH*" or "*YHWH*." It means "*righteous*," "*just*" and "*judgmental*."

This is the most common image that Christians have about God when they read *The Old Testament*. You have a very black-and-white type of God, with *sinner*s on one side and *the righteous* on the other side.

### Sudden Idolatry

What took place when Moses went to Mount Sinai to receive *The Ten Commandments*? He returned to discover that The Children of Israel had turned to *idolatry*. They had created the golden calf and were having a big party. What did God intend to do? He was going to kill them. This is *JHVH* (*YHWH*). This is God revealing Himself as *perfect* or *without sin*. He is *totally righteous*.

God has complete free choice and He decides to be *righteous*, never making mistakes. He always makes *the right decision* and if anyone sins, *just punishment* must be given. This is the God that Israel knew firsthand. *JHVH* (*YHWH*) is *judgmental* and *just*.

Sinners are always punished. In *The Law*, which God gave

to Israel, it was a *concept of choice* – good or evil (Deuteronomy 30:19). Later, David and The Prophets would begin to understand *this mercy*. Israel never understood God's forgiveness, because they would never *repent*. All they could see was *this righteous, powerful, judgmental and just God*. To Israel, God was a *fearful being*. In fact, because of their fear, they didn't want Him to speak to them.

God said that He had chosen this way because He is the “*I AM WHAT I AM*” or “*I AM THAT I AM*.” You are, now, beginning to see the *different characteristics* of God. He is more than just *Elohim* who says, “*it is not good for man to be alone*.” He is a God who wants to *give* of Himself, as a *creator*.

JHVH (YHWH) is a different side of God. It is a God who demands *perfection* because God, Himself, is *perfect*. But, God is also giving you the opportunity to become as excellent as He is. On the other hand, if you stepped in the wrong direction, you would be required to pay the consequences. This is The God of *blessings* and *cursings* (Deuteronomy 30). This is The God of Israel. Israel was to be a *witness* of what God is to all the nations – just as *the church* should be a *witness* for Christ. *The church* should be *perfect* – just as God is *perfect* (Matthew 5:48). You will find that God as Your Father has a different connotation from *the “I Am that I Am.”* That is a vital factor to consider.

## Two Different Approaches

There are two different approaches about God that you should consider. The first approach is *spit* and *polish*,

right down the line. It leaves no margin for error. The other approach is the characteristic of being easy to entreat. He is The God who will listen to you, personally. This is another manifestation of the character and personality of God.

The reason that God was found to be in the role of the **"I AM THAT I AM"** for Israel was to set an example of His *goodness*. So, He gave them *The Law*. God did this because The Israelites did not know or understand *right* from *wrong* and continued to be *unrepentant* (I Timothy 1:9-10). *The Law* told them what sin was, so they would know *what to do* and *what not to do*. God said *The Law* was to be Israel's *righteousness* (Deuteronomy 6:25). He explained that if they would keep His Commandments, Statutes and Ordinances, then, they would be *a blessing* to all nations. This would, also, be a way of setting *an example* for all the other nations.

The Israelites were to make God's name known. What name? It is JHVH (YHWH). Go through all the various meanings of God's *seven* different titles (names). Now, you have more of an understanding of *The Law* and it will help you immensely as you read *Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers* and *Deuteronomy*. You will understand each of God's titles and names explain all the aspects of God's *plan* for you.

John 14:6 Jesus said to him, I am the way, the truth and the life: no man comes to the Father, but by me.

Thomas asked Jesus to show him *the way*. "Jesus said to him, 'I am the way.'" Understand that Christianity is *not*

*a religion – it is a way of life.* The *Works of The Law* do not apply to Christians, because it would make this new way of life a religion or ritual which only points to God through Christ. There is a big difference! Jesus said, “*I am the way.*” Remember, in John 6:29 He said, “*This is the work of God, that you believe on him whom he has sent.*” And Christ said, “*I am the way.*” Christ was saying that you must live as He lived and be like Him.

Don't hate anyone. Don't *covet* that which belongs to someone else. Just be kind to everyone. If someone needs a coat, give him a coat. If you don't have one or can't afford to buy him one, then ask a relative, a friend or a neighbor if they have a spare coat. That is Christianity at work. Jesus literally tells you that He is *the truth* (this is no lie). He is *the way* for Christians to follow. Following Christ, in *the truth*, is *the best and only way to live.*

There is no other way for Christians to learn *perfection*. No man comes to The Father but by Christ. You now know the significance of JHVH (YHWH). I AM WHAT I AM. He is *your supreme example.*

## El Shaddai

As discussed, “*El*” alone means “*mighty.*” Followers of Islam call God “*Allah*” or “*El*” or “*The Mighty One.*” But the full title is “*El Shaddai.*” “*Shaddai*” in Hebrew means “*the breast*” or “*nurturing.*” It signifies pouring out like a mother who takes the child to her breast and nourishes the child. “*Shaddai*” is “*a nurturing, loving mother.*” You will find that whenever the title *El Shaddai* is used, *there is a mighty God who is giving, nourishing and pouring out.*

So, “*El Shaddai*” means “*powerful,*” “*nourishing*” and “*giving.*” It is “*a mighty giver who can give everything that He has.*”

Genesis 14:18-23 <sup>18</sup>And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God. <sup>19</sup>And he blessed him and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth: <sup>20</sup>And blessed be the most high God, which has delivered your enemies into your hand. And he gave him tithes of all. <sup>21</sup>And, the king of Sodom said to Abram, Give me the persons and take the goods to yourself. <sup>22</sup>And Abram said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand to the LORD, the most high God, the possessor of heaven and earth. <sup>23</sup>That I will not take from a thread even to a shoelatchet and that I will not take any thing that is yours, less you should say, I have made Abram rich.

No human words in any language can fully describe God. Take the case when Abraham met Melchizedek, The High Priest. Why was Melchizedek, at that time, a High Priest? He was High Priest over all humanity – but especially for those who called upon The Name of The Lord. *The purpose of a Priest is to intercede for the sins of others.* Notice, in *Genesis*, “<sup>18</sup>*And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine* [a likeness to Passover service]. *And he was the priest.*” Melchizedek was *The Priest of El Elyon, the giver, the nurturer or giving of blessings.* “*El Elyon*” is The God who *prosper*s you. This is a powerful example of that fact.

“*El Shaddai*” is translated in English as “*The Most High*”



*God,” “The Almighty Giver” or “provider who blessed Abram.” And, Melchizedek “<sup>19</sup>blessed him and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, [El Shaddai] possessor of heaven and earth.” Here is *El Elyon, The Nurturer* having in His dominion all the heavens and the whole earth. From this powerful position, He was blessing Abraham.*

*This nurturing God made Abraham rich. This is the reason why Abraham and Melchizedek met. They met for a much greater reason than you might have thought. “<sup>20</sup>And blessed be the most high God [El Shaddai], which has delivered your enemies into your hand. And he gave him tithes of all.”*

### Why Tithe To Melchizedek?

Why did Abraham tithe to Melchizedek? Perhaps it was a Law. But, *no Law was given* for another 430 years! Remember, the name of “*El Elyon*” means “*The One who gives all the blessings and who pours forth all His goodness.*” He, also, *nurtures His creation.* Everything comes from El Shaddai. The Mighty El Shaddai is the possessor of heaven and earth. Now, it says that Abraham gave tithes. He tells you why he tithed to Melchizedek. It has nothing to do with *The Law.* “<sup>21</sup>*And the king of Sodom said to Abram, Give me the persons and take the goods to yourself.*” You have to understand this first point.

The King of Sodom asked permission to keep his people so he could still retain his kingdom. He said to take everything, which includes all the material wealth, the riches, the blessings, the food, the cattle and the produce. What was Abraham's reply? When you are tithing to Levi, you

are left with 90% – so this was done because of *The Law of Tithing*. The reason Abraham gave a tithe to Melchizedek was to show that he recognized *God was El Elyon, The Giver of All Blessings*. Abraham tithed to show that El Shaddai, his God, *prospered him* and would continue to prosper him.

If Abraham kept *The Law of Tithing*, he should have kept the remainder of the spoils. “<sup>22</sup>*And Abram said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand to the LORD , the most high God [El Shaddai], the possessor of heaven and earth [God has everything].* <sup>23</sup>*That I will not take from a thread even to a shoelatchet and that I will not take any thing that is yours, less you should say, I have made Abram rich.*”

God will do the same *for you*. God wants to give everything to His *creation*. And, *El Shaddai* was *The One* who made Abraham rich. That is why he *tithed*. This is the true meaning which is based on *The Scriptures*.

When Jacob had his dream, God was revealing the same lesson. Jacob was running away from his brother and was scared to death. He had nothing, so he negotiated with God by asking God to protect him and bring him back home, safely. Jacob knew that God was El Shaddai. So he said the same thing that Abraham said, “*I'll give you a tithe.*” In other words, Jacob understood that God was *The Blessor of All*. God is El Shaddai, The Protector and The God who prospered Jacob. God's *nature, personality and character* only wants to *give*. God desires to *give* all that He is and has. God is *agapè*! This is *charity*. He can do nothing but *give*. How much does God *give*? He wants to *share* with His *creation everything He has*.

Have you ever heard of spoiling your children or grandchildren? This is just a small part of “*God – In You.*” Who can say “*No*” to a grandchild when the gifts would not be harmful? Well, God can’t resist either. Christ says if you ask for bread, will your Father give you a stone? How much more would your Heavenly Father, who is good, give you than your earthly father, who is but a combination of good and evil? El Shaddai shows His character and personality. He can’t keep from giving. There is only one difference between God and mankind. God is good and righteous *all the time* while mankind is not. God says that if you are not good, then He will *discipline*. God is *just* and humans *are not just*. God is fair but humans do not know *true justice*. God is not prejudiced but humans are. God does not discriminate yet humans are prone to do just that. God is much greater than anyone could ever imagine.

## Elyon

Genesis 17:5 Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made you.

Another title for God is “*Elyon.*” God blessed Abraham because he was The Father of All Nations. God’s titles interchange at different times. When you read Genesis 14:18, you will find that He is not only *El Shaddai* but He is *Elyon* as well. This shows you that God is a *gift-giver* in addition to His other characteristics. “*Elyon*” literally means “*gifts*” and “*Elyon*” possesses all the heavens and all the earth. Wherever the word “*Elyon*” is used, it means “*gifts from the highest.*” *Elyon* owns everything

and is willing to give to His Creation. Everything God gives is *a gift*. You cannot earn it nor do you deserve it. It all comes from God. “*Elyon*” is “*the gift giver*.”

## El Olam

Genesis 21:10-14 <sup>10</sup>Wherefore she said to Abraham, Cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac. <sup>11</sup>And the thing was very grievous in Abraham's sight because of his son. <sup>12</sup>And God said to Abraham, Let it not be grievous in your sight because of the lad and because of your bondwoman; in all that Sarah has said to you, hearken to her voice; for in Isaac shall your seed be called. <sup>13</sup>And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is your seed. <sup>14</sup>And Abraham rose up early in the morning and took bread and a bottle of water and gave it to Hagar, putting it on her shoulder and the child and sent her away: and she departed and wandered in the wilderness of Beersheba.

Another title for God is “*El Olam*” which is a very significant one because it involves The Jubilee Year. This title for God explains that He is “*a covenant keeper*.” Abraham is talking about Hagar and Ishmael.

<sup>10</sup>Wherefore she [Sarah] said to Abraham, cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac.

“*El Olam*” is “*inheritance*,” “*inheritor*” or “*age lasting*”

*God.*” It also means “*a covenant keeper.*”

<sup>11</sup>And the thing was very grievous in Abraham's sight because of his son. <sup>12</sup>And God said to Abraham, Let it not be grievous in your sight because of the lad and because of your bondwoman; in all that Sarah has said to you, hearken to her voice; for in Isaac shall your seed be called.

## Hagar's Fate

*The Law of Inheritance* had to go to the first-born male seed of the wife. But, in this case, it was the bondwoman who bore the first male child for Abraham. So the child, Ishmael, did not have *a right to the inheritance*. This is why God sent Hagar and Ishmael away. “<sup>13</sup>*And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is your seed.*” Remember, in Genesis 17, He (God) was *Elohim*. He covered everyone *universally*, although Ishmael's seed didn't deserve *the inheritance* because he wasn't born of the true wife. God still followed through with His *promise* that He would, also, make a nation out of Ishmael and kings would come from his lineage.

So, God took care of Ishmael, “<sup>14</sup>*And Abraham rose up early in the morning and took bread and a bottle of water and gave it to Hagar, putting it on her shoulder and the child and sent her away: and she departed and wandered in the wilderness of Beersheba.*”

Hagar finally got to the place where she and her son were going to die of thirst and hunger. “<sup>17</sup>*And God heard the voice of the lad; and the angel of God called to Hagar out of*

*heaven and said to her, What ails you, Hagar? fear not; for God has heard the voice of the lad.” Then, God provided Hagar with a pool of water to drink.*

Genesis 21:33 is the account where Abimelech recognized that God blessed Abraham, just as He blessed Ishmael who was the son of a bondwoman. “<sup>33</sup>*And Abraham planted a grove in Beersheba and called there on the name of the LORD, the everlasting God.”*

This is *El Olam* or the *age-lasting God of the covenant keeper of inheritance*. God's *inheritance* lasts forever! This subject matter is beginning to illustrate how *El Olam* was *The One God* who gives what He has and never takes back any of *the inheritance* He has promised. *He keeps His promises*. You can always count on Him. God does not lie. This is another part of God's personality. God's personality reveals that He always lives up to His Word. In fact, His Word is forever. He is *The Word*. Your Father is *a continuously-giving God*. God's *giving* comes from an *inheritance* that is given directly by God.

## Adonai

Ezekiel 16:1-10 <sup>1</sup>Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, <sup>2</sup>Son of man, cause Jerusalem to know her abominations <sup>3</sup>And say, Thus says the Lord God to Jerusalem; Your birth and your nativity is of the land of Canaan; your father was an Amorite and you mother an Hittite. <sup>4</sup>And as for your nativity, in the day you were born your navel was not cut, neither were you washed in water to supple you; you were not salted at all, nor swaddled at all. <sup>5</sup>None eye pitied

you, to do any of these to you, to have compassion upon you; but you were cast out in the open field, to the loathing of your person, in the day that you were born. <sup>6</sup>And when I passed by you and saw you polluted in your own blood, I said to you when you were in your blood, Live; yea, I said to you when you were in your blood, Live. <sup>7</sup>I have caused you to multiply as the bud of the field and you have increased and waxen great and you are come to excellent ornaments: your breasts are fashioned and your hair is grown, whereas you were naked and bare. <sup>8</sup>Now when I passed by you and looked upon you, behold, your time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over you and covered your nakedness: yea, I swore to you and entered into a covenant with you, says the Lord God and you becamest mine. <sup>9</sup>Then washed I you with water, yea, I thoroughly washed away your blood from you and I anointed you with oil. <sup>10</sup>I clothed you also with broidered work and shod you with badgers' skin and I girded you about with fine linen and I covered you with silk.

## Probing Deeper

Let's probe into a more comprehensive and significant relationship with "*Adonai*" which is another of God's titles. "*Adonai*" is translated as "*LORD*" or "*Master*." Every time you read the words "*LORD God*" it means "*The Master God*," although the word "*Master*" carries a greater significance. This is a *vital* perspective. There are many times when the word "*Master*" or "*Adonai*" is used in various texts. It appears, also, when referring to *human beings* as *masters*. It carries a different connotation than just God. The mean-

ing is “*a being in charge of,*” “*responsible for*” or “*over someone.*” Now, an astounding reality of what *Adonai* really means. This is especially true when explaining the responsibilities that each husband must have.

## A Running Commentary

**Ezekiel 16:1-10** <sup>1</sup>Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, <sup>2</sup>Son of man, cause Jerusalem to know her abominations [He is talking about The City of Jerusalem], <sup>3</sup>And say, Thus says the Lord God to Jerusalem; **Your birth and your nativity is of the land of Canaan** [Canaan was the place where The Jebusites dwelled, a nothing place]; **Your father was an Amorite and your mother an Hittite.** <sup>4</sup>And as for your nativity, **in the day you were born your navel was not cut** [just left to bleed and nobody paid attention to Jerusalem at all]. **Neither were you washed in water to supple you; you were not salted at all, nor swaddled at all** [they used to tie up a child in swaddling clothes to keep their bones together so the child would get rigid or come together]. <sup>5</sup>None eye pitied you, to do any of these to you, to have compassion upon you [no one cared]; **But you were cast out in the open field, to the loathing of your person, in the day that you were born** [when Jerusalem started]. <sup>6</sup>And when I passed by you and saw you polluted in your own blood [dying as a city and becoming a ghost town], **I said to you when you were in your blood, Live; yea, I said to you when you were in your blood, Live** [beginning to restore her]. <sup>7</sup>**I have caused you to multiply as the bud of the field** [beginning to flourish] **and you have increased and waxen great** [in Solomon's time, it was known all



over the world as God's place]. **And you art come to excellent ornaments** [describing a bride or talking about a wife]. **Your breasts are fashioned and your hair is grown, whereas you were naked and bare.** <sup>8</sup>**Now when I passed by you and looked upon you, behold, your time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over you and covered your nakedness: yea, I swear to you and entered into a covenant with you, says the Lord God [your Adonai, God] and you becamest mine.** <sup>9</sup>**Then washed I you with water, yea, I thoroughly washed away your blood from you and I anointed you with oil.** <sup>10</sup>**I clothed you also with broidered work and shod you with badgers' skin and I girded you about with fine linen and I covered you with silk.**

**For a more in depth perspective, read Ephesians 5:23-28. What is the responsibility of the husband? The husband provides for the wife's needs.**

## **Master And Slave Relationship**

**This is a good time to explain the master/slave relationship. God's idea of slavery is to make the slave better by teaching him to be self-sufficient. On the other hand, man's idea of slavery is to take advantage of the slave. Do you see the vital difference? *A Christian is a "duloss" or "slave" of Christ and as Christians, you are destined to become The Bride of Christ.***

**Christ will prepare you so that you are without blemish or wrinkles. He wants you to become *Holy and perfect*. The husband's job is to be the head of the wife. *As Adonai or God, He is your Head (through Christ). He is Lord, Master***

or Husband of *the church* (The Bride). When you read The Laws of Slavery in *The Book of The Law*, a Hebrew was to be a slave for only six years. When *the seventh year* came, he was *set free*. God's type of slavery is to have the master take charge and train the person who went into slavery for six years. After the six years, the slave should have learned from his mistakes and be able to take care of himself and his family. In *the seventh year* he should be able to make it on his own.

A husband's job is to make the wife and family prosperous. He should make them happy and thankful. Slavery between master and slave is a positive relationship that should improve the slave. How much greater is a man's responsibility to a wife and family than that of a slave!

*The whole Book of Philemon* deals with Onesimus and slavery. Paul says, "I am sending Onesimus to you who was once unprofitable for you, but now is not only profitable to you, but to me and everyone. If he owes you anything, lay it to my charge" (Colossians 4:9, paraphrased). *Adonai* is the title that denotes God's character trait of taking leadership over you.

He becomes responsible for you and you, as the church, submit like a wife. He leads you to *perfection*. The name "*Adonai*" carries the distinction of "*a master who serves those under him.*" Never forget the difference between God's form of government and man's methods of government. Those under man's methods of government always find that the rulers are those who rule over others and want to get all the benefits. Those in charge in God's *way of government* are caring and giving. That is the full

meaning of *Adonai*. Your Master, God, becomes *One with you* “*In Christ*” and you are *married* to Christ.

## JHVH – Sabaoth

Malachi 3:13-17 <sup>13</sup>Your words have been stout against me, says the LORD. Yet you say, What have we spoken so much against you? <sup>14</sup>You have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts? <sup>15</sup>And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered. <sup>16</sup>Then they that feared the LORD spoke often one to another: and the LORD hearkened and heard it and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD and that thought upon his name. <sup>17</sup>And they shall be mine, said the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serves him.

*JHVH – “Sabaoth”* – is the seventh name for God in *The Old Testament*. Christians think this has to do with The Sabbath. The name “*JHVH*” is “*I Am that I Am*” but “*Sabaoth*” is “*LORD of Hosts.*” *Malachi* gives an example of the seventh name, *JHVH, Sabaoth*, by relating the trials that human beings go through in this life. This name tells you about God's nature, His character and how He looks at you. “<sup>13</sup>*Your words have been stout against me, says the LORD [JHVH, Sabaoth, speaking]. Yet you say, what have we spoken so much against you?*” God declares that mankind speaks against Him but you may say that you never said anything against Him. Then consider Malachi 3:14-

15. “<sup>14</sup>*You have said, It is vain to serve God [no reason to serve God] and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance and that we have walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts [This Lord of Hosts is JHVH Sabaoth].*” People say that you seem to receive no help when serving God. “<sup>15</sup>*And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered.*” This is referring to those who said that they followed God but it did not do them any good. Instead, the wicked have been blessed and the criminals have gotten away with murder.

### A Hopeless Situation

Have you ever been in a situation where you thought you couldn't take it any more? Did you feel that the pressures were just too much for you? You've tried to be a good Christian. You want to keep serving God. You pray to Him. You ask Him for help because problems have plagued your life whether it is a sick child, the loss of a job or a death in the family.

This is a time when all hope seems to be gone and you feel like there is no reason to obey or follow God. Malachi 3:16 states, “<sup>16</sup>*Then they that feared the Lord spoke often one to another: and the Lord, hearkened and heard it and a book of remembrance was written.*” God's nature is such that He *never forgets* what you have gone through or are going through. Your God *never forgets anything* you did to remain faithful to Him. Your Great God has a *Book of Remembrance*, “<sup>16</sup>*before him for them that feared the LORD and that thought upon his name [the name JHVH, Sabaoth, Lord of hosts].* <sup>17</sup>*And they shall be mine saith the Lord of*

*hosts* [described in the context] *in that day when I make up my jewels.*” You will look like God and since God looks like jewels, you, too, will look like precious gems. “<sup>17</sup>*And I will spare them, as a man spares his own son that serves him.*” When all hope is gone, God says that it is in His *nature* to always be there to deliver you. He won't have something more important to do. You can always count on God. No matter what you are required to go through, God will be there for you.

### A Quick Summary

Now, to summarize God's titles descriptions in *The Old Testament*: 1) Elohim – Universal God, 2) JHVH or YHWH – The Righteous God, The Judgmental God, 3) El Shaddai – The Pourer or Nurturer, 4) Elyon – Almighty, Most High, 5) El Olam – The God of Inheritance, 6) Adonai – The Lord or Master for your good, your Husband and finally 7) JHVH, Sabaoth – The Lord of Hosts. God is always there. All of God's titles and names apply universally with a very personal family relationship. It ranges from an all-encompassing God describing His *totality* to a *very personal* God who deals *One-on-one* with His *creation*.

I John 2:27 But the anointing which you have received of him abides in you and you need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teaches you of all things and is truth and is no lie and even as it has taught you, you shall abide in him.

The Apostle Paul said that you now have a Father so you can cry out “*Abba, Father, Dad, Daddy or Papa.*” He goes

from a God who is Almighty and impersonal to a God who is *nurturing* and *personal*. Yet, with all His *power*, He is a God who not only thinks about you but is responsible for upholding everything in the world.

## The Anointing

It is very important for you to realize that God is One who deals with you, personally, in a *Father/child relationship*. He has gone from a huge powerful God (Universal God) to a Father who listens to you just as a *human father* listens to his child. In I John 2, The Apostle John said, “<sup>27</sup>*But the anointing, which you have received of him* [the anointing of His Spirit].” John says that when Christ was sealed as The Firstborn Son, the rest of mankind was, also, sealed. You are sealed with His Holy Spirit. Just as His Son was sealed with The Holy Spirit, you, too, are sealed by His Spirit, “*the anointing [spirit] which you have received of him abides in you.*” You have God’s seed “*In You.*”

You are, now, a Son of God and He no longer deals with you as a servant but as *an heir*. This is what *Galatians* tells you. His final name as Father reveals how He deals with you in a very personal way, “<sup>27</sup>*have received of him abides in you and you need not that any man teach you.*” This is because God is personally teaching and training you, “*but as the same anointing teaches you of all things [everything] and is truth and is no lie.*” The meanings that define *the seven titles* can become part of you. These include *The Covenant Keeper, The Nurturer, The Gift-giver* and *The Deliverer*. This is God’s nature and character. By choice, He chooses not to be anything else. “*And even as it has taught you, you shall abide in him.*”

**So, you abide in your Father, your Father is “*In You*” and you are One with Him. Behold, He is a wonderful, overwhelming God who gives you this *gift of life*. His Love for you makes you love Him, putting all your *faith* and *trust* in Him. Your goal is to become perfect as He is perfect!**

## Chapter 5

### GOD'S LIBRARY

Is your name written in one of The Books in God's Library? Will you be in The Kingdom of God? To learn the answer, you must go to God's Library. In God's Books, you will find the entire Plan of Salvation and who will be allowed into His *kingdom*. *The Book of Life* concerns God's plan for His creation in His *kingdom*.

Through Christ, God reveals the new heaven and the new earth. After the earthly universe has passed away and nothing physical remains, *the redeemed* will observe The New Jerusalem come down from heaven. It will be placed in its permanent location on *the new earth*.

### New Jerusalem

Revelation 21:2 And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her Husband.

New Jerusalem is presented here in the image of a Bride. She will be part of the most incredible marriage ceremony in the history of the universe. God's *word* likens this New Jerusalem to a woman (Christians, in His *church*) who will be joined in marriage to Christ, The Bridegroom. Now the question is, "*Who is going to be permitted to reside in this city?*"



Revelation 21:27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defiles, neither whatsoever works abomination or makes a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

This text shows that no one will be able to enter the new city if he is a liar, abominable or could defile it. The only ones permitted to enter this fabulous city are “*they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.*” With that declaration, everyone should sit up and take notice.

## The Books Of God

In short, the only ones permitted to enter this New Jerusalem are those who have been written in *The Book of Life* – which is *The Lamb's Book of Life*. Another Bible translation calls it *The Book of Life of The Lamb*. Remember, this book is a *biography* that will ultimately become an *autobiography*. A biography is a book that is written about someone else's life, whereas an autobiography is a book written about the author's life. This book begins as *God's Word (Old Testament)* and becomes *Christ (New Testament)*, who is *The Word of God*. Whose words are written in this book? When Christ was on this earth, He was required to live by *God's word*. He followed it so *perfectly* that He became *The Word of God* (Mark 14:49).

Revelation 1:1 <sup>1</sup>The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to him, to show to his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified *it* by his angel to his servant John.

Since God is not physical, *these books* are not physical.

God is *spiritual*; therefore, these *books* are *spiritual records*. It should be interesting to learn how God writes His *books* and where He stores them. Notice, it is “*The Revelation of Jesus Christ* [Jesus Christ doing the revealing] *which God gave to him.*” Christ did not write these words Himself. Rather, God, The Father informed Christ about what should be revealed. The content refers to God’s *words* or The Word of God (John 5:30-38 and Deuteronomy 18:18). With this in mind, it is vital to address the following critical topic.

## Mystery Babylon

Revelation 17:5-10 <sup>5</sup>And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. <sup>6</sup>And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. <sup>7</sup>And the angel said to me, Wherefore did you marvel? I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and ten horns. <sup>8</sup>The beast that you saw was and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was and is not and yet is. <sup>9</sup>And here is the mind which has wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sitteth. <sup>10</sup>And there are seven kings: five are fallen and one is and the other is not yet come; and when he comes, he must continue a short space.

The only individuals who will proceed into New Jerusalem are those who have been written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*. This book is also called *The Book of The Life of The Lamb*. You learn about all the individuals who are excluded from this book (Revelation 17). It will take a certain period of time for the world-shaking events to transpire before the beast's power comes to an end. This beast will be a political system that incorporates *the false prophet* (false religion). This system will eventually be destroyed. The beast has seven heads and is mounted by a woman. One of the heads has ten crowns. In Revelation 17 and 18, you will see how this is a reference to the worldly kingdoms and a false religion. This government is satanic and incorporates many lies and falsehoods.

Specifically, the critical text in Revelation 17 reports, *“<sup>5</sup>And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. <sup>6</sup>And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. <sup>7</sup>And the angel said to me, Wherefore did you marvel? I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and ten horns [the last ruling government just before Christ returns]. <sup>8</sup>The beast that you saw was and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit and go into perdition.”*

## Tower Of Babel

This system is called *Babylon*. It began at The Tower of Babel under the direction of Nimrod. Later, Daniel re-

ceived prophetic inspiration about the resurrection of four heads (but totals five). One head is Babylon in Babel which is followed by four other beasts, comprising a total of five heads. One was Rome (historically) while another was, yet, to come. Revelation 17, “<sup>9</sup>*And here is the mind which has wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sits. <sup>10</sup>And there are seven kings: five are fallen [Babylon and the four beasts] and one is [one that was existing] and the other is not yet come; and when he comes, he must continue a short space.*”

When considering The 7<sup>th</sup> (or last) Head, be sure to remember the time period. (Note, this is about God's library and is not *a prophecy discussion* at this time). This is only a brief overview regarding, “<sup>8</sup>*The beast that you saw was and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was and is not and yet is.*” It is vital to recognize that the main focus is upon the individuals who are *not* written in *The Book of Life of The Lamb* from the foundation of the world. They will not be allowed into the future New Jerusalem.

## The Revealer Speaks

It is now time for The Revealer to explain. Jesus Christ, The Revealer (or Revelator), explains some important factors in *The Book of Hebrews*. He describes who is *included* and who is *excluded*.

Hebrews 1:1-5 <sup>1</sup>God, who at sundry times and in

divers manners spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, <sup>2</sup>Has in these last days spoken to us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; <sup>3</sup>Who being the brightness of his glory and the express image of his person and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; <sup>4</sup>Being made so much better than the angels, as he has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. <sup>5</sup>For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father and he shall be to me a Son?

In times past, God spoke to The Israelites through The Prophets. The last Prophet was Malachi, who lived over 400 years before *the birth* of Christ. Now, in these *last days*, as recorded in *Hebrews*, God will speak through His Son. This Son is The Revealer “*whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.*” If God was more than One *being* (such as two or three entities), then how could God *inherit* from God, Himself? He couldn't. No one could. This notion tells you that His Son receives *an inheritance*. If God's Son receives *an inheritance*, then He had to receive *the inheritance* from another *being* – not from two or three. And yet, you are informed that God created the entire universe. How can that be? This, generally *unknown library* will tell you *The Plan of God* and how it will be accomplished.

### Brightness Of His Glory

A major point of importance concerns the statement,

**“*3Who being the brightness of his glory.*”** The word “*glory*” means “*divinity*” or God’s “*presence.*” This passage talks about His *appearance* and His *looks* and *elaborates on what He is.* Remember, in I Corinthians 15 during *the resurrection process,* all will obtain a *glory* or a *presence* of God. Christ already has a brightness that compares with The Glory of God, “*...and the express image of his person...*” (the word in Greek means “*charakter*” or “*character*”). Christ is *the express character* of God’s image. This is a *being* who, in His *glory,* looks like God. He has the character of God. He is The Son of God and He is an heir, “*And upholding all things by the word of his power.*” His *word* holds up the entire universe.

With Christ at the right hand of The Father, He is now responsible for all things. If He relinquished that power, the universe would suddenly disappear. There would no longer be any *electromagnetic forces.* Gravity would disappear. Nuclear forces (atoms) would fall apart and dissipate. The earth would, literally, drop. So, *the power of His word* (The Word of God) is currently sustaining this entire universe. “*When he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high* [Jesus Christ is sitting at the right hand of God, The Father upholding the whole universe]; *4Being made* [Christ was made – just didn’t happen] *so much better than the angels, as he had by inheritance*” (Hebrews 1:3-4). Christ will be given *the inheritance.* That is what *an inheritance* is all about.

## Testimony Of Jesus

*The Book of Revelation* tells about *the testimony* of Jesus. A testimony is a contract based on a *promise.* He “*4ob-*

*tained a more excellent name than they. <sup>5</sup>For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father [God speaking] and he shall be to me a Son?"* What is God's will and what does He intend to do?

I Timothy 2:1-4 <sup>1</sup>I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions and giving of thanks, be made for all men; <sup>2</sup>For kings and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. <sup>3</sup>For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; <sup>4</sup>Who will have all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. <sup>5</sup>For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.

Paul is providing instructions to Timothy about how to conduct the ministry. Furthermore, Paul is saying that there are not two, three or four but only "*one God and one mediator [Christ is The Mediator] between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.*" Notice, He is specifically called *a man*. So, how many *gods* do you count? There is only One. Christ could not have been God. Christ is The Mediator. Christ is The Son. Only God is God. Christ is The Son of God.

Hebrews 1:5-11 <sup>5</sup>For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father and he shall be to me a Son? <sup>6</sup>And again, when he brings in the first begotten into the world, he said, And let all the angels of God worship him. <sup>7</sup>And of the angels he

said, Who makes his angels spirits and his ministers a flame of fire. <sup>8</sup>But to the Son he said, Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of your kingdom. <sup>9</sup>You have loved righteousness and hated iniquity; therefore God, even your God, has anointed you with the oil of gladness above your fellows: <sup>10</sup>And, You, Lord, in the beginning has laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of your hands: <sup>11</sup>They shall perish; but you remain; and they all shall wax old as does a garment.

### A Running Commentary

God made Jesus Christ, His Son. *“<sup>5</sup>For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father and he shall be to me a Son? [Read Psalm 27 about the time before Jesus Christ was born when He was in God’s mind as The Word]. <sup>6</sup>And again, when he [God] brings in the first begotten [Christ] into the world [Christ is the first begotten] he said, And let all the angels of God worship him. <sup>7</sup>And of the angels he said, Who makes his angels spirits and his ministers a flame of fire. <sup>8</sup>But to the Son he said, Your throne, O God [The Son inherits The Godship with a throne] is for ever and ever: a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of your kingdom.”*

*These Scriptures* provide a powerful declaration. The world’s kingdoms are run like *Gentile kingdoms* from the top down. Those below serve and cater to the top. But God’s *kingdom* is The Scepter of Righteousness which serves those under it. So, likewise, *all churches* should



be administered in the same way. If a church is to follow God's way, then it must require those on the top to *serve those on the bottom*. Hebrews 1:9 states, “<sup>9</sup>*You have loved righteousness and hated iniquity; therefore God, even your God [This is The Son's God, One God] has anointed you with the oil of gladness above your fellows.*”

These *fellows* are other human beings. *The Book of Life, The Lamb's Book of Life*, is all about Christ and the rest of humanity. Jesus Christ was once human, just as you are human. You remain human but Christ was selected for a position above His *fellow man*. Then, “<sup>10</sup>*And, You, Lord, in the beginning have laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of your hands: <sup>11</sup>They shall perish; but you remain; and they all shall wax old as does a garment.*”

## Hebrews Versus Revelation

Since The Birth of Christ, God reveals His *truth* through His Son (Hebrews). All revelation, from Christ's birth forward, comes through Jesus Christ. Prophets were *no longer needed* like they were in *The Old Testament*. *The Book of Revelation* came, only, through Christ. Since it is *an inheritance*, Christ received it from someone else. He couldn't receive it from Himself. He couldn't inherit from Himself. He received His *inheritance* from God, The Father. You already know that there is only One God. Now, who and what is this Word of God?

Revelation 6:1 And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come and see.

The moment just before Jesus Christ was to be sacrificed, He began to explain to The Apostles what would happen once He was crucified. Study Revelation 14, as each piece of this puzzle is vital. If you miss one piece, then you will not fully understand *God's entire plan*. Revelation 5 describes God, The Father's *throne*. "*And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals.*" Realize that The Lamb who opens the seals is The Revelator.

Revelation 5:3-5 <sup>3</sup>And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>4</sup>And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>5</sup>And one of the elders said to me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof.

Realize that no man, regardless of where he might be placed, can open *The Book of Seven Seals*. (For further clarification, you must study Revelation 15-16 and Matthew 24). The latter text covers when Christ was asked when the end would come and about His *return*. Matthew 24 explains the series of events in sequence. The Six Seals covered that period of time. In Matthew 24, Christ revealed to The Disciples what must happen before He *returns*. Since no man can open *The Book*, you can only ask, "*Who is able to open The Book?*"

### Who Opens *The Book*?

Only a righteous and worthy man is able to open *The Book*. At a certain point in time no one could be found.

The reaction was, “<sup>4</sup>*And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon.* <sup>5</sup>*And one of the elders said to me, Weep not: behold, [describing the man] the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David [Christ's physical birth], has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof.*” Paul said that The Prophets, also, had revealed this in the past. The elder said only Jesus is worthy to open *the seals*. What did Christ do to be worthy to unseal this vital *book*? Christ had to prove Himself by overcoming a great deal. He was *the first One* to have established Himself as *worthy* to enter The Kingdom of God. He was in God's *mind* and became God's *word* (*logos*) (John 1:1). He was given God's *Spirit* at birth but Christ had to prove Himself worthy in this carnal world (in His human flesh).

Hebrews 5:7-9 <sup>7</sup>Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears to him that was able to save him from death and was heard in that he feared; <sup>8</sup>Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation to all them that obey him.

This is the period in history when Jesus Christ was a human being. This is when He appealed to God with heartfelt prayer. Christ had to become worthy in order to be placed in The Kingdom of God. This written record is called *The Book of Life of The Lamb*.

## The Beginning Of Perfection

Christ was not automatically *perfect* when He was born.

He was just as human as the rest of mankind. He had to struggle with human nature as everyone else does. Christ had to *live perfectly* and, as a consequence, He became *the author of The Book*. Christ became *The Author of Salvation*. If God wrote this book – *The Book of Life of The Lamb* – how did it become *an autobiography*? The answer is that *“It was lived by Christ.”* Do you see the difference? It was *a biography* when it started, but then it ended up as *an autobiography*. God wrote His *plan* in His *mind* (His *word*) and, then, Christ lived *those very words*. You also will need to experience the overcoming of *good over evil*. Christians are written in *The Book of Life*. One day, you will *become* The Word of God as *a witness* of Christ. As Christians, you are to become like Christ who is of God. With this process you will have *“Christ – In You”* (Colosians 1:27).

Hebrews 10:1-5 <sup>1</sup>For the law having a shadow of good things to come and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. <sup>2</sup>For then would they not have ceased to be offered? Because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. <sup>3</sup>But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. <sup>4</sup>For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. <sup>5</sup>Wherefore when he came into the world, he said, Sacrifice and offering you would not, but a body have you prepared me.

Who speaks to everyone in these Last Days? Who reveals everything? It is Jesus Christ. Who became *the author*

of *The Book*? It is Jesus Christ. All this is “*here a little, there a little, precept upon precept.*” The puzzle is coming together.

## Revealing The Mystery

God reveals His *mystery* through His Son Jesus. Read, study, pray and check *The Scriptures*. “<sup>1</sup>*For the law having a shadow of good things to come.*” It would be difficult if you read the last part and did not examine the entire verse. Going on, “*and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices.*” Most consider the shadows to be the sacrifices. But what is *the whole shadow*? What is *The Whole Law*?

The first five books of *The Bible* reveal Abraham being *the shadow of God*. Then, Isaac was *the shadow* of Jesus Christ. These *shadows* comprise The Word of God. *The Old and New Testaments* are *shadows* of God's word which have become *real*. Isaac said, “*Father but where is the sacrifice?*” Abraham's answer was, “*God would provide us a sacrifice.*” “<sup>3</sup>*But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. <sup>4</sup>For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. Wherefore when he comes into the world [Jesus came into the world], he said, Sacrifice and offering you would not, but a body have you prepared me.*”

Abraham is *The Father of The Faithful* because when his son, Isaac, said, “*Where are we going to get the sacrifice?*” Abraham said, “*God will give us the sacrifice.*” Abraham knew about this as it was written in God's library in *The Book of Life of The Lamb* (Hebrews 10:5).

## God's Library

Understand that Abraham, Moses and David knew that God had *a library with the complete story of eternal life*. This included the details of who would be allowed into His *kingdom*. *These books*, however, are not codices. They were not written in the same manner as physical books. And, they are not scrolls that are written on papyrus. Where do you think God stored all these books? The Word of God is written in *His mind* because in *His mind* is The Word of God (John 1:1).

Hebrews 10:6-9 <sup>6</sup>In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin you have had no pleasure. <sup>7</sup>Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do your will, O God. <sup>8</sup>Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin you would not, neither had pleasure therein; which are offered by the law; <sup>9</sup>Then said he, Lo, I come to do your will, O God. He takes away the first, that he may establish the second [The Covenants].

This is a reference to the text of a certain book. The book specifies that, "*In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin you have had no pleasure. <sup>7</sup>Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) [of this body Christ] to do your will, O God.*" When reading the full text above, you will understand the basis for this statement, <sup>9</sup>"*He takes away the first, that he may establish the second.*"

God changed the sacrifice (a shadow) from sacrificing animals by providing *the body of Christ* (The Word became *real*) as the sacrifice for all mankind.

John 1:1-4 <sup>1</sup>In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup>The same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup>All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. <sup>4</sup>In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

*The Word* appeared long before He was Christ. “<sup>1</sup>*In the beginning was The Word*” (*The Book of John*). Believe exactly what it says. Don't try to make anything up. The word is “*logos*.” “*Logos*” means “*word*” or “*divine word*.” The text continues, “*and the Word was with God and The Word was God*.”

## The One God

How many Gods are there? The answer is, “*One God*” (I Timothy 2:5). Whose *word* was this? It is God's *word*, because it is stated, “<sup>2</sup>*The same was in the beginning with God*.” What was in the beginning? It was His *word*. Jesus Christ had to become *the author of that word* by becoming worthy. Christ had to do everything that was written in *The Book*, “<sup>3</sup>*All things were made by him* [by God's Word]; *and without him was not any thing made that was made*. <sup>4</sup>*In him was life; and the life was the light of men*.” This is a clear reference to Jesus Christ (who became God's word or The Word of God).

I Corinthians 10:1-4 <sup>1</sup>Moreover, brethren, I would not that you should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud and all passed through the sea; <sup>2</sup>And were all baptized to Moses in the cloud and in the sea; <sup>3</sup>And did all eat the same spiritual meat; <sup>4</sup>And

did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.

Who was with Israel during this entire course of events? The text of I Corinthians 10:1 shows that His *word* is in one of God's books (but not in *The Holy Bible*). It is *The Book of Life of The Lamb*. “<sup>1</sup>Moreover, brethren, I would not that you should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud.” In *Exodus*, you find that *the cloud* was *the shekinah*, “and all passed through the sea; <sup>2</sup>And were all baptized to Moses.” The baptism of Moses was the baptism of circumcision or *The Works of The Law*. In addition, there was, also, the baptism of John, which was *the baptism of repentance*. So, there are two completely different baptisms.

## Baptism In The Sea

Some Christians, today, still think they are in the baptism under Moses doing *The Works of The Law*. “<sup>2</sup>And were all baptized to Moses in the cloud and in the sea; <sup>3</sup>And did all eat the same spiritual meat.” They ate the physical food, *manna*. However, this is about *spiritual food* and Christ said that you had to *eat His body* and *drink His blood*. This is His *Word*. “<sup>3</sup>And did all eat the same spiritual meat; <sup>4</sup>And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them.” And who was *the spiritual rock*? “And that Rock was Christ.” *This Rock followed* them. It was not leading them like the angel. So you only have One God. You have The Word of God, who was God's Word (or God). *This spiritual Rock* following Moses was The Word of God who became *Christ*. Christ



was not born until thousands of years later. The Word of God became Christ's *Word* (Deuteronomy 18:18). The only place you can find *these Words* is in God's *library*.

Psalm 40:1-8 <sup>1</sup>I waited patiently for the LORD; and he inclined to me and heard my cry. <sup>2</sup>He brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay and set my feet upon a rock and established my goings. <sup>3</sup>And he has put a new song in my mouth, even praise to our God: many shall see it and fear and shall trust in the LORD. <sup>4</sup>Blessed is that man that makes the LORD his trust and respecteth not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies. <sup>5</sup>Many, O LORD my God, are your wonderful works which you have done and your thoughts which are to us-ward: they cannot be reckoned up in order to you: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered. <sup>6</sup>Sacrifice and offering you did not desire; mine ears have you opened: burnt offering and sin offering have you not required. <sup>7</sup>Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me, <sup>8</sup>I delight to do your will, O my God: yes, your law is within my heart.

David understood *the prophecy* about Christ. David knew that he had to be worthy and become *perfect*. In *Psalms*, David's enemies *surrounded* him and he had to look to God and call upon Him for protection.

## Waiting Patiently On God

David is praying about Jesus Christ and explaining what Christ will be going through. Psalm 40:1 says, "*I waited*

*patiently for the LORD.*” You must wait patiently for *the return of Christ*, also. “*And he inclined to me and heard my cry* [his prayers]. <sup>2</sup>*He brought me up also out of an horrible pit* [The Lake of Fire] *out of the miry clay and set my feet, upon a rock and established my goings.*” I Corinthians 10 confirms that *the rock* is Christ or God’s word. After you read how David should live, you now enter sensitive territory. Read very carefully from here on because each word becomes *golden* and your Salvation depends upon it. The Psalmist declares, “<sup>3</sup>*And he has put a new song in my mouth.*” A new song was read in *Revelation*. The saints of God sing this new song, “*Even praise to our God: many shall see it and fear and shall trust in the LORD.*”

Then, the subject points to *the resurrection*, “<sup>4</sup>*Blessed is that man that makes the LORD his trust and respecteth not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies.*” The liars will go into The Lake of Fire. Think this over and over until you fully understand it. “<sup>5</sup>*Many, O LORD my God, are your wonderful works.*”

This is talking about God, “*which you have done and your thoughts* [God’s thoughts] *which are to us-ward: they cannot be reckoned up in order to you: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered.*” This applies to all humanity. These are *the riches* “*In Christ*” (God’s words or thoughts). In Verse 6, you read about God’s thoughts. His *many wonderful works* are all about you. The Apostle Paul interpreted them in his Epistle. “*Sacrifice and offering you did not desire; mine ears have you opened: burnt offering and sin offering have you not required. <sup>7</sup>Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me*” (Hebrews 10:5-9).

## Blotted Out Of The Book

Christ said, “*<sup>8</sup>I delight to do your will, O my God: yea, your law is within my heart.*” So these are God’s words that are written in *The Book*. In Hebrews 10, you read the same thing. In His *Book* are God’s words (His *mind* as *thoughts*). “*In the beginning was the word. And the word was with God.*” This is God’s word and The Word was God. Jesus Christ became the author of this book by becoming *worthy* and *doing everything written in that book*.

Exodus 32:31-34 <sup>31</sup>And Moses returned to the LORD and said, Oh, this people have sinned a great sin and have made them gods of gold. <sup>32</sup>Yet now, if you will forgive their sin—; and if not, blot me, I pray you, out of your book which you have written. <sup>33</sup>And the LORD said to Moses, Whosoever has sinned against me, him will I blot out of my book. <sup>34</sup>Therefore now go, lead the people to the place of which I have spoken to you: behold, mine Angel shall go before you: nevertheless in the day when I visit I will visit their sin upon them.

Compare Exodus 32 and Psalm 40 after Israel had created the golden calf. “*<sup>31</sup>Moses returned to the LORD and said, Oh, this people have sinned a great sin and have made them gods of gold. <sup>32</sup>Yet now, if you will forgive their sin—; and if not, blot me, I pray you, out of your book which you have written.*” Then, God conveys the following message, “*<sup>33</sup>And the LORD said to Moses, Whosoever has sinned against me, him will I blot out of my book. <sup>34</sup>Therefore now go, lead the people to the place of which I have spoken to you: behold, mine Angel shall go before you: nevertheless in the day when I visit I will visit their sin upon them.*”

## The Shekinah Glory

This was an angel. It wasn't another god (Acts 7:30). Remember that *the rock* followed Israel. But, the angel *led* Israel. It wasn't Christ as *another being*. That was the reason The Jews began using the name "*shekinah*." It was because Israel knew and understood that God was not in *the temple*.

As *a being*, God was not in The Holy of Holies. It was what they called "*the shekinah*." This Hebrew word has the root, "*shakan*" which means "*a glorious place to dwell*" along with "*God's presence*" or "*the dwelling place of God's presence*." The Glory of God was *the presence* of God. God, *the being*, was not there. *Christ*, as God's word or God's presence, was positioned there. *The shekinah*, God's glory or His Word by The Holy Spirit, was The One who became *Christ*. This special power was in *the temple*. The story comes together perfectly. *Christ was never in existence before He was born as a human being*.

The Word of God is just what it says it is – God's word. God wrote in His book from His *thoughts* and from His *mind*. This is *a spiritual book* called *The Lamb's Book of Life*. Christ was written in *that book* and, believe it or not, if you follow Christ, you, also, are *written* in that book.

Psalm 139:1-16 <sup>1</sup>O LORD, you have searched me and known me. <sup>2</sup>You know my downsitting and mine uprising, you understand my thought afar off. <sup>3</sup>You compassed my path and my lying down and are acquainted with all my ways. <sup>4</sup>For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O LORD, you know it altogether.

<sup>5</sup>You have beset me behind and before and laid thine hand upon me. <sup>6</sup>Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain to it. <sup>7</sup>Whither shall I go from your spirit? Or whither shall I flee from your presence? <sup>8</sup>If I ascend up into heaven, you are there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, you are there. <sup>9</sup>If I take the wings of the morning and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; <sup>10</sup>Even there shall your hand lead me and your right hand shall hold me. <sup>11</sup>If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. <sup>12</sup>Yea, the darkness hides not from you; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to you. <sup>13</sup>For you have possessed my reins: you have covered me in my mother's womb. <sup>14</sup>I will praise you: for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are your works; and that my soul knoweth right well. <sup>15</sup>My substance was not hid from you, when I was made in secret and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. <sup>16</sup>Your eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect; and in your book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them.

This is speaking about David and explaining what God is thinking about in His *mind* or *thoughts*. He knows when you get up and when you lie down and He knows all your *thoughts*. Christ told you that God knows when two sparrows fall and, then, explains that you are worth more than two sparrows. In the absolute sense, no one can get away from God's *Spirit*, "*Whither shall I go from your spirit?*" God's *Spirit* keeps Him informed. "*Whither shall I flee from your presence? If I ascend up into heaven. If I take the wings to the uttermost parts of the sea* [God is there];

*<sup>10</sup>your hands lead me, <sup>11</sup>the darkness shall cover me, [there is no place where you can hide from God or His Spirit] <sup>13</sup>you have covered me in my mother's womb. <sup>14</sup>I will praise you; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are your works; and that my soul know right well. <sup>15</sup>My substance [what I'm really made of] was not hid from you, when I was made in secret and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. <sup>16</sup>Your eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect [not made as a human yet] and in your book all my members were written."*

## The Body's Design

God's *book* shows the design of the human body, "*which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them.*" How long ago did God know you? He knew you from *the beginning*. He knew every part of you and every other person He has created. He knew exactly how you were going to be made and how you would look. God knew about His Son, Jesus Christ, because He was, also, written in *that same book*. "*The Word of God,*" which was in the beginning, means "*God's word as it was written.*" It was God's *thoughts* written into *words*. How was Christ, *the author* (or the first One), going to be worthy in The Kingdom of God?

Luke 1:31-35 <sup>31</sup>And, behold, you shall conceive in your womb and bring forth a son and shall call him Jesus. <sup>32</sup>He shall be great and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the LORD God shall give to him the throne of his father David: <sup>33</sup>And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. <sup>34</sup>Then said Mary to the angel,

How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? <sup>35</sup>And the angel answered and said to her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon you and the power of the Highest shall overshadow you: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God.

At Christ's birth, *this Noble Being* had something residing within Him that the rest of mankind *did not possess*. <sup>34</sup>*Then said Mary to the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man [she was a virgin]? <sup>35</sup>And the angel answered and said to her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon you.*" This is a very simple point of evidence that proves The Holy Spirit isn't another person (or *a being*). A question you should ask yourself is, "*How can The Holy Spirit be given to someone and then become another person?*" That would be possession and only demons possess. So, The Holy Spirit is just God's *Spirit*.

## The Holy Wind

The word "*holy*" in Greek means "*blameless*" or "*righteous*." The word "*spirit*" in Greek is "*pneuma*." What is *pneuma*? Have you heard of pneumatics? "*Pneuma*" means "*wind*." This is *a righteous wind*, which came upon Mary. You know that *wind is energy*. *This righteous energy* came upon Mary, <sup>35</sup>*and the power of the Highest shall overshadow you: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God.*" Why is He called The Son of God? Did He exist as God before His birth? Absolutely not! This is because God's Holy Spirit was upon Mary and *the very presence* (divinity) or *power* of God (as with Adam) caused Jesus Christ's birth. God's Holy Spirit made Him God's living *word*. That is, also,



why Christ was *the rock* who followed The Israelites. It is because He was written in *The Book* in God's *mind*. Christ was *the rock* in God's *mind* until He was born. Everything fits. What is *the purpose* of The Holy Spirit? "*Christ was going to give a comforter*" (John 14). "*And that comforter does guide you into all truth*" (John 16:13). When God gave Christ His Holy Spirit at birth, it guided Him as He became aware that He was The Son of God. Jesus had been performing everything that The Word of God wrote in *The Book of God* in the library of His *own mind*! "*Lo, I come in the volume it is written of me*" (Psalm 40:7).

For Christ to be The Word of God, He had to fulfill all *The Scriptures* (Mark 14:49). The Holy Spirit writes that *the word* would become Christ. In *The Book of Revelation*, Christ became The Word of God. He was God's *word* from His human birth. He was everything that was in God's *mind* along with The Power of The Holy Spirit. Christ was in God's *express image* (Hebrews 1). God reproduced Himself in His Son, Jesus and will reproduce Himself "*In You*" (I Corinthians 15:28).

### Let This Mind Be "*In You*"

All the marvelous *works* that God created "*In Christ*" (eventually, in all mankind) were always in God's *thoughts*. When God gives His *Spirit* to you, you become His *word*. Hence, you have *The Very Mind of God*, "*Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus*" (Philippians 2:5).

Why did God do this? It is because it gives God pleasure to reproduce Himself and He is the maximum *giver of all*.



**Ephesians 1:1-12** <sup>1</sup>Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: <sup>2</sup>Grace be to you and peace, from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ. <sup>3</sup>Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: <sup>4</sup>According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup>Having predestinated us to the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup>To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup>In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; <sup>8</sup>Wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; <sup>9</sup>Having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: <sup>10</sup>That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him: <sup>11</sup>In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will: <sup>12</sup>That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.

**Paul tells about Jesus Christ and what happens to Christians, “*<sup>1</sup>Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God.*” This was not because Christ was God before His birth. This is by God’s *will*. What God *wills* in His *thoughts* is written in His Book. “*By the will of God, to the saints***

*which are at Ephesus and to the faithful in Christ Jesus.*  
<sup>2</sup>*Grace be to you and peace, from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ [The Master].* <sup>3</sup>*Blessed be the God and Father [One God] of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ."*

These are heavenly blessings and *not works of The Law*. They are not pagan rituals but heavenly blessings! <sup>4</sup>*According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love."* The emphasis is upon the vital word "love." In the word "*agapè*," the love of *mankind*, is in The Mind of Christ. This thought continues with, <sup>5</sup>*Having predestinated us to the adoption of children."* The Greek word for "*predestinated*" means not only "*predestined*" as He made you, but, also, that He "*foreknew*" this. God planned it that way and wrote it in His *Book*.

## Adoption Or Sonship

The sense of this teaching does not include "*adoption*" as it is understood in the English language. This is because if you are going to become *one* of God's children. You are literally *one of His children!* When you are born, you are human. When you are *Spirit*, you are one of His children. It is true that you, being human, are not yet God's *son*; but, when you become *a Spirit Being* (a Son of God), then you will have God "*In You*." As a result, you (as human beings) are *adopted* to become Spirit Beings like God and finally become Sons of God. Originally you came from a human father – but now, you come from God's spirit, "*by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of*

*his will, <sup>6</sup>To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup>In whom we have redemption [speaking of Christ] through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace: <sup>8</sup>Wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; <sup>9</sup>Having made known to us the mystery of his will [God's will is to save the world], according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself."*

*This element is not found within other beings. It was not "In Christ" as The Word before He became Christ. The words "In Himself" correlates with I Corinthians 15:29 where He purposed it "In Himself." "In the beginning was God" (John 1:1). "<sup>10</sup>That in the dispensation of the fullness of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ." The Book of Life of The Lamb is in The Book of Life because Christ is "In You." Christ proved Himself worthy even though He was tempted, just as all Christians are. Christ became the author of The Book of Life. It was His autobiography. Christ subdued every enemy (I Corinthians 15). At that time, He turned everything over to The Father because everything was "In Christ." This would mean that God would have totally reproduced Himself. "<sup>10</sup>Both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him: <sup>11</sup>In whom also we have obtained an inheritance." The implications are astounding.*

## The Same Inheritance

In this process, you get *the same inheritance* that Jesus received because you will be "In Christ." That is a *key point*. In short, you are "One" with Christ and with The Father. *The inheritance* that The Father gave to His Son,

you, as a Christian, will also share in that same *glory*. “*An inheritance, being predestinated* [predetermined and written in that *Book of Life*] *according to the purpose of him who works all things after* [what?] *the counsel of his own will: that we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.*” That is why *The Word of God* was God as He *counseled with Himself*. Who has considered this important aspect?

Malachi 3:13-16 <sup>13</sup>Your words have been stout against me, said the LORD. Yet you say, What have we spoken so much against you? <sup>14</sup>You have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance and that we have walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts? <sup>15</sup>And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered. <sup>16</sup>Then they that feared the LORD spoke often one to another: and the LORD hearkened and heard it and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD and that thought upon his name.

*The Book of Malachi* relates the sufferings of *the saints*. There are two types of people. One type is saying, “*Why should I serve God? The wicked are blessed. It doesn't seem to do any good to serve God.*” “<sup>13</sup>*Your words have been stout against me, said the LORD.*” The other type knows the distinct advantage in serving The Living God.

## Book Of Remembrance

God speaks about the people who say it doesn't do any good to serve Him. This was covered in Chapter 4. Pick

up that story with the words, <sup>16</sup>“*Then they that feared the LORD.*” This refers to, “*many shall fear and turn to trust in The LORD*” (Psalm 40:3).

The more complete text reads, <sup>16</sup>“*Then they that feared the LORD spoke often to one another [Christian to Christian]: And the LORD hearkened and heard it and a Book of Remembrance was written before him [before God, that is] for them that feared the LORD and that thought upon his name.*” The *Book of Life of The Lamb* is complete. Not only does it contain the full story about Jesus but it, also, chronicles God as *The Word* who became Christ at birth. It was then that He became worthy as *The Author of Salvation*. As you can see, through Christ, Christians have the same *inheritance*.

As a Christian, everything you do, everything you think and everything you say is written in *The Book*. God is writing everything in *The Book*. It will not be used against you but to remember what you *went through* to become like Him. Everyone who is written in *The Book of Life* will be in The Kingdom of God. Christ was the first to qualify and The Christians whose names are in *The Book* will *inherit* all things. Christians will, like Christ, become The Sons of God and be The Bride of Christ in The Kingdom of God.

## Chapter 6

### GOD'S MIND REVEALED

*The Bible* tells one continuous story from Genesis 1 to Revelation 22. Dozens of scribes over thousands of years have been faithfully recording this historic account. The principal reason Christians do not understand *The Bible*, as one continuous story, is because they read *The Bible* in segments.

Many Christians read only *The Old Testament*, while others merely study *The New Testament*. Still others read just *The Proverbs*, *Psalms* and various *isolated* chapters. When *The Bible* is properly displayed as one continuous story, then God reveals His mind to you. *The Holy Bible* is God's mind and is revealed as God's word – or The Word of God.

II Timothy 3:16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.

The Greek translation for the word “*inspired*” means “*God breathed.*” *The entire Bible* is His “*breath*” or “*word*” which He gives to Christians in a written form. Before anything existed, God pre-ordained everything and this was written down in His *spiritual library*. *This library* was not composed of physical books but *spiritual books*. *The Lamb's Book of Life* is a book about marriage. It is a marriage directory or a marriage registry. It tells you the

identity of *The Groom* and *The Bride*. It also lists all of *The Guests* in the register (*The Lamb's Book of Life*).

## The Righteous Book

God, also, has a *Book of Remembrance*, in which He writes everything down. He remembers everything that happened in the past as well as what happens in the present and what will happen in the future. *These books represent The Mind of God, His thoughts, His purpose and His plan.* You can investigate God's *mind* as it is revealed in your *Bible*. When God reveals His *mind* and *thoughts*, He is giving you the totality of His *plan* and His *purpose*. From the time of Genesis 1 until The Prophets, God spoke directly through *an angel* to Adam and Eve and the prophets. As this continuous flowing story unfolds, you will begin to see how to put an almost complete puzzle together.

When you do, it will enable you to understand how to study The Word of God. Then, you will understand The Mystery of God. The Apostle John received the revelation of Christ on The Isle of Patmos. It was about events to occur in The Last Days. Chapter 4 discloses a unique picture of God, His *throne* and *the twenty-four elders* bowing down to Him.

Revelation 4:11 You are worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for you have created all things and for your pleasure they are and were created.

Psalm 40:7 Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me,

*The thoughts of God are for your good. The Word was with God and The Word was God. This word became Christ and was the complete predestination in God's mind.*

## Who Created Everything

Throughout *The Bible*, God tells you that Christ *created* all things. Romans 1 explains that The Father created everything. The twenty-four elders report that Christ is worthy of all honor and all power because God created all things. So it was God, The Father, who created everything. The Mind of God, His thoughts, became *The Word*, who, in turn, became Christ. It was Christ, who from the womb, was filled with God's Spirit. He *became The Word of God*. All that God had predestined in His mind became Christ. A very significant verse is found in Revelation 4, which says, "<sup>11</sup>*And for your pleasure, they are and were created.*" When God made everything, He made it for His pleasure. This Greek word for "*pleasure*" could mean "*one's will*" or "*desire,*" but it, also, means "*choice.*"

It was His *free will* or His *choice*, which gave Him *pleasure*, to create everything.

I Corinthians 15:28 And when all things shall be subdued to him, then shall the Son also himself be subject to him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

After Jesus Christ conquers all enemies and finally conquers death, He *returns* all authority back to God, The Father. But why? Could it be for God to become *all and in all*? Indeed, God is *all* and God is *in all things*.



## God Is All

The entire universe is God. Everything you look at is God, because without God, there is absolutely nothing. Not only is everything God, but at the end, God will be in everyone. You will be *one* with Him. When Christ became *The Word* in the flesh, there was no need for The Prophets. Malachi was the last Prophet recorded in *The Bible*. God speaks to each individual through His Son in the last days (Hebrews 1:2). God used The Prophets to speak to the people in an attempt to bring them in line with His *purpose*. The Prophets in *The Old Testament* relayed The Word. In *The New Testament*, Christ speaks to Christians directly. Both *The Old* and *The New Testament* comprise the entire Word of God. Through scribes, some of God's library was physically recorded for all mankind to experience.

Prophets may be used to foretell things in the future, but they will never be used by God to bring you to Christ. Who can help bring a person to Christ? It is The Church – His *Body*. You are to become *One* with God, as Christ is *one* with The Father. In Christ, you become *One* with The Father by becoming *The Word of God*. In *Revelation*, read the description of Christ's *throne*. He is *The One* worthy to *unleash the seals of the little book* and His name is *The Word of God* (Revelation 19:13).

*As a witness* – or *an ambassador* of Jesus – you are *an example* of The Word of God. This Word became a physical book when God no longer dealt with just one person such as with Abraham. God was addressing The Nation of Israel – specifically, *The 12 Tribes of Israel*. It was Moses'

responsibility to record all that God told him. *The Word was transferred to The Holy Scriptures as an unblemished account of God's mind.*

## Seven Elements

*The Bible discloses seven important elements. You will begin to understand how God thinks.*

### Creation

The first element is *creation* itself. God created everything by His own free choice. It was for His pleasure.

### Reproduction

There is Godly *reproduction* and, then, there is Satanic *reproduction*. In one of Christ's parables, the whole world was given *The Seed* which was God's *word*. In planting The Seed or God's *word*, there were thorns and weeds also.

“<sup>27</sup>Sir, did not you sow good seed in your field? From whence then has it tares?” “<sup>38</sup>The tares are the children of the wicked one” (Matthew 13). So, Satan has produced children by means of his own deception, which is counterfeit to God's *purpose* of reproducing Himself. A *similar scripture* notes God's *purpose*, “<sup>28</sup>And when all things shall be subdued to him, then shall the Son also himself be subject to him that put all things under him that God may be all in all” (I Corinthians 15). This shows that God is *procreating* Himself. To understand God's *mind*, you must first know who God is. The chapters *Who Is God?* and *God's*

*Character And Personality*, along with *The Scriptures*, will prepare you for the next piece of the puzzle.

## Who Is Good?

You know that God is Holy, unblemished, perfect, fair, just and without flaw. God is *righteous* and does only what is *right* and *good*. He never makes a mistake. Christ said, “*Why call you me good? There is none good but one, that is, God*” (Matthew 19:17). He doesn't let the wicked get away with anything. Often, you may think that the wicked are not punished for their offenses. But what they sow, they shall also reap. Ultimately, God is love or *agàpè*. Never forget that “*agàpè*” is “*intellectual, moral love.*” *Agàpè* love consists of such a *great amount of caring* that you give your own life in the fulfillment of it. In Greek, there is also “*eros,*” which means “*passion*” or “*emotion,*” and “*philia,*” which means “*friendly,*” “*sociable*” or “*compatible.*” When man sinned, *agàpè* was lost, leaving only *eros* and *philia*. There are so many divorces today because people marry for an *eros* and *philia* type of love.

If couples married for *agàpè* (which takes time), long-term marriages would result. The intellectual and moral love people would have for each other would allow them to become one flesh. They would be willing to give their lives for each other. Divorces increased because *agàpè* is not a part of these physical unions. The one ingredient of God, which stands out in reproducing Himself, is *the gift of free choice*. You may ask, “*Why didn't He make everyone perfect in the beginning? Why must one go through all these trials?*” You had to be given free choice or else you would have been a robot.

If mankind were made perfect in the beginning, there would have been no free choice. God's *plan* to reproduce Himself had to be designed perfectly, so that you would ultimately become a Son of God just like Christ. If you had not been given free choice, then God would not be reproducing Himself. God has total free choice and so do you. You have a choice to become like God! God needed to have you learn to have *total faith* and *trust* in Him. By this Godly reverence, *an eternal kingdom* can exist which will have everlasting joy and peace.

## Inheritance

Since God is reproducing Himself "*In You*," inheritance is *a gift*. You would never be able to earn it. *Inheritance* is *a gift*, but it is much, much more.

Ephesians 3:14-15 <sup>14</sup>For this cause I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.

To whom does he bow? It is to "*the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.*" So *this inheritance* is clearly *a gift*. However, as far back as Adam and Eve, little by little, too many turned to worshipping the things God created instead of worshipping *The Creator*. Why would anyone want to worship the sun, stars or any image and call them "*gods?*" God created everything in this universe, so why in the world would those objects be *worshipped as gods?* The whole story hinges on creation, Godly reproduction and inheritance. *An inheritance* is *an unearned gift* that is passed on from a loving father to his children.

Matthew 19:3-6 <sup>3</sup>The Pharisees also came to him, tempting him and saying to him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? <sup>4</sup>And he answered and said to them, Have you not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female. <sup>5</sup>And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they two shall be one flesh? <sup>6</sup>Wherefore they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder.

## Marriage

Which type of marriage is acceptable to God?

<sup>3</sup>The Pharisees also came to him, tempting him and saying to him, is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? <sup>4</sup>And he answered and said to them, Have you not read, that he who made them at the beginning made them male and female.

God instituted the first marriage with Adam, as a type of Christ. Adam had his chance to become The Savior of The World. When Adam was created, God declared that He created both male and female. God is dominantly male and looks like a male. But, He has the female DNA within Him. So, when God produced a male and a female, He was reproducing Himself. By making them *male* and *female*, God created them as *one*. Jesus attempts to explain how you can take something that was *one* (Marriage) and tear it apart (Divorce). You cannot do this. If you do, then the union dies. Jesus said, “<sup>5</sup>*For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and shall cleave to his wife:*

*and they two shall be one flesh* [how they were made in the beginning]? *‘Wherefore they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder.’* So what was lost in The Garden of Eden? It was God's type of marriage. God's marriage was lost in The Garden of Eden because, originally, Adam and Eve were one flesh and there was *agàpè love*. Why was it an *agàpè* type of love?

Ephesians 5:28-29 <sup>28</sup>So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself. <sup>29</sup>For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord the church.

Adam and Eve had *an agàpè* union. They could have had *an agàpè* love or God's *love* but *agàpè* love was lost. How should wives and husbands conduct themselves in a Godly marriage? The answer is, “<sup>28</sup>*So ought men to love their wives* [how?] *as their own bodies* [Adam and Eve were of the same body]. *He that loves his wife loves himself.*”

Adam and Eve, having the same body, were *one*. “<sup>29</sup>*For no man ever yet hated his own flesh.*” Do you wonder why it is hard for men to say “*no*” to a wife? A husband may want something else and may hint at it, but usually he will go along with her idea. Notice, “<sup>29</sup>*For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord the church.*” God's marriage is so completely different from the world's type of marriage. Adam could not *fail to love his wife*. Why? It is because she came out of him. *Marriage* is the fourth element. You are to become *One* with God.

## Restoration

The fifth element is *restoration*. Agàpè was lost. Notice the first thing that God did when He created the heaven and the earth. In Genesis 1, “<sup>3</sup>God said, *Let there be light.*” Before light, there was darkness on the earth. God said, “*the light was good.*” Nothing is said about the darkness. In I John 1, it states, “<sup>5</sup>*God is light and in Him is no darkness at all.*” So God was creating an earth, a universe and a mixture of both light and dark. To be like God, there can be no darkness in you – only total light. God was revealing Himself, His *mind* and how He *thinks* during The Six Days of Creation. He created a world that is a mixture of *good* and *evil*, *light* and *dark* – and it has been this way from the very beginning. After those six days, God declared that light was good. He put the greater light to rule the day and the lesser light to rule the night. He created the moon so that it would never be totally dark. Then the people, forgetting God, The Creator, began *worshipping* the *sun* and the *moon*. In *Revelation*, “*the sun*” is the picture of The Father and “*the moon*” is the picture of The Bride, or the wife who reflects the light of The Father (the sun). People started worshipping *the creation* itself. They knew more than many Christians do today.

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.

Notice the words, “<sup>20</sup>*For the invisible things of him...are clearly seen.*” These are invisible laws of electromagnetism (refer to Chapter 1, *Is God Real?*). The sun, the

moon, the light, the darkness, male, female and all the animals reveal God. There is not enough time to recount how God's *mind* is revealed through His *creation*. The Six Days of Creation reveal *the power* and *the magnificent Plan of God*. God is reproducing Himself. In the spring season, there is *the resurrection* aspect. In the summer, there is growth, and then in the fall, one gains maturity. Finally, in the winter season, there is snow. When one dies, sin has been paid for. The whiteness is *the righteousness* which will come up in *the resurrection*. *The righteous ones* are clothed in white. The seasons portray *the resurrection* and *the life cycle*. The whole life cycle of humanity reveals God. The entire agricultural harvest season reveals God. And people ask the question, "*Why doesn't God show Himself?*" Open your eyes to see God revealed through His *creation*!

## Redemption

The sixth element is *redemption*. This is the underlying theme of *the entire Bible* and is the basis for the release of the human spirit into freedom. Release is what accompanies *redemption* and is an integral part of the process. This is the only pure form of freedom that is found exclusively in The Truth of God.

## The Kingdom Of God

The seventh element is *The Kingdom of God*. This is the ultimate accomplishment in the redemption process. It is *the goal* of God's *entire plan*. These seven elements will bring you much closer to fully understanding how God *thinks*.



## Why Did God Make The Angels?

Hebrews 1:14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

Paul said that Christ was higher than *the angels* and that He was made better than they. Therefore, what was the reason for *the angels*? “*Are they* [the angels] *not all ministering spirits, sent forth to* [do what?] *minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?*” The only reason God created the angelic kingdom (which includes Satan) was for you and His *plan*. It is God reproducing Himself “*In You!*” “*And the Father himself, which has sent me, has borne witness of me. You have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape*” (John 5:37). Why can't God reveal Himself to you or show Himself to the world? Be mindful of Chapter 11 entitled *The Lake of Fire*. You will find that all mankind would burn up. God had to create *beings* (angels) as messengers who could convey what He wanted done.

In *The Book of Revelation*, you find that before the new heaven and new earth, the universe is burned up. So God had to create *angels* to protect humans from being consumed. *The angels* can manifest themselves as human beings. So God did not reveal Himself from the beginning because humans would have been consumed. Do you remember what happened at Mount Sinai to the ancient Israelites? That wasn't God. Moses said that he spoke to God face-to-face. Did he? Well, someone is a liar. If Moses spoke to God *face-to-face*, then Jesus Christ lied. Jesus Christ said that no man has heard or seen The Father.

**Well, who is it that Moses spoke to, if it wasn't God?**

**Acts 7:29-30** <sup>29</sup>Then fled Moses at this saying and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons. <sup>30</sup>And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

Israel and Judah knew all this, but today no one seems to know it. Even theologians fight over this identity. Who was *the rock*? Who was *The Word*? Who appeared in the burning bush? Who gave Moses *The Ten Commandments*? Stephen, the first deacon, who eventually became an evangelist, was stoned and killed in the end. In *The Book of Acts*, Stephen said, “<sup>29</sup>*Then fled Moses at this saying and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons*” (Acts 7). When Moses arrived in The Land of Madian, who did he confront? Remember, his wife said that it was The Mount of God. He went in front of a bush.

### **Voice From The Bush**

“<sup>30</sup>*And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai [what?] an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.*” The voice out of the bush said, “<sup>33</sup>*Put off your shoes from your feet for the place where you stand is holy ground [Moses believed he was talking to God].*” It wasn't God, The Father – it was *an angel*. Christ told *the truth*. No man has ever heard God's voice.

**Acts 7:53** Who have received the law by the disposition of angels and have not kept it.

It refers to the giving of *The Ten Commandments* along with *The Whole Law*. According to *Exodus*, *The Ten Commandments* were put directly into *the ark* (the mercy seat). *The Book of The Law* was placed in the side of *the ark*. Who actually gave it to Moses? “<sup>53</sup>*Who have received the law by [who?] the disposition of angels and have not kept it.*” God had to create *angels* in the beginning because this was the only way they could become *the messengers* who speak in place of God. Moses wanted to know what to tell Pharaoh. He told him to say, “*I AM sent you.*” The angel was speaking in the third person, in God’s place. God thought of everything and it all makes sense. God required His *angels* (messengers) to inform mankind of His *plan*. God was revealing Himself. God revealed Himself through *the physical creation* (Romans 1:20).

### Ambassador Of *The Word*

It was *a special angel* who spoke as *an ambassador* in the place of *The Word of God* (Acts 7). He is *the angel* of *The Lord*, representing God. God built the angelic kingdom so that the angels could be *the messengers*.

Ephesians 1:4-11 <sup>4</sup>According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup>Having predestinated us to the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup>To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup>In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; <sup>8</sup>Wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;

<sup>9</sup>Having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: <sup>10</sup>That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him: <sup>11</sup>In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will.

You will need some background information to understand this magnificent story. “*4According* [talking about God] *as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world* [God thought of all this before there was a universe], *that we should be holy and without blame before him in love.*” What is this? It is *an agàpè* type of love.

God is literally duplicating Himself. But first, He allows free choice. All that God is and does is according to His pleasure and of His own free choice. “*5Having predestinated us to the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to* [what?] *The good pleasure of his will,* *6To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved.* *7In whom we have* [what?] *redemption.*” This is the sixth element which was discussed earlier.

Later, you will understand why you have to be *redeemed*. It is specified as you continue with the text, “*through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;* *8Wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;* *9Having made known to us the mystery of his will.*” He kept it secret from most, but He has been dis-

closing it *little by little*, over a period of time. He only reveals to each of you what *you are able to understand* (never too much) in order to be *saved*. Every person, in his/her own sequence “*according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: <sup>1</sup>In whom also we have obtained [what?] an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after His counsel.*”

### God's Counsel

Who does He counsel with? He counsels with Himself “*of his own will.*” If, in the beginning, all this was thought out and He wrote it in *The Spiritual Books* of His *mind*, then who else would there be to counsel with? There was no one. This whole plan reveals God's *mind* only.

Genesis 2:1-4 <sup>1</sup>Thus the heavens and the earth were finished and all the host of them. <sup>2</sup>And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. <sup>3</sup>And God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. <sup>4</sup>These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens.

This shows the purpose of The Sabbath. The Sabbath is the picture of God's rest when He finished all His *physical creation* – but not His *spiritual creation*. Christ said that in the beginning, marriage was not the way it is today (Matthew 19). When Adam and Eve sinned, they could no longer be in *Paradise*. “<sup>3</sup>*And God blessed the seventh day*

*and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.”* You don't need a Tree of Life if you have already been created *spiritually* (in the beginning) in the likeness of God.

Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden. They were complete in God's *rest*. Everything they needed or wanted was provided (Genesis 3). But all was lost. God's type of marriage was lost (Matthew 19). They couldn't be reproduced as God's Sons, so they lost *the inheritance*. However, creation, reproduction, inheritance and marriage still continued.

## God's Mind Revealed

As reinforced throughout this book, God's story reveals His *mind*. His *mind* and *thoughts* are The Word of God. Think about the lack of concern Adam and Eve had: 1) they didn't worry about food and 2) they were vegetarians. They didn't eat meat but neither did the animals. There were no carnivorous animals. They had, then, what people will have in The Millennium. The lion is going to lie down with the lamb. During the first seven days, all the herbs and all the fruit of trees were available to Adam and Eve. All the beasts and animals had their straw to eat. There were no poisonous snakes. Satan can be blamed for making them poisonous.

There were 3) no weather problems and 4) no clothes to worry about. They didn't even know about sex. So, they didn't love each other because of *eros*. *Passion* and *eros* are not wrong, but when *no agàpè* exists (and only *eros*, passion or emotion exists), then you don't have much of a

chance for a good marriage. It is said that you must find someone who is compatible, but that is only *philia* and not *agàpè*.

## Agàpè Restored

All this is not good enough. Until *agàpè love* is restored, you cannot experience being *one flesh*. So, everything from *Genesis* concerning the reproduction of God can lead a person to *agàpè love*. *Agàpè love* is what this whole book is about. When you study *The Bible*, keep asking yourself what must be restored? It is *agàpè love*. The great love story is from a God who does things only for you because He loves you. It is a pleasure for Him to do so!

When you were young, you most likely played tennis, soccer, baseball or football. Maybe you went dancing and did all the fun things young people enjoy. One of the nicest things my wife and I like to do is watch our grandchildren have a good time. There are occasions when the family goes to the movie theater. My daughter wants to see one movie and my grandson wants to see a another movie. My granddaughter wants to see yet another picture. So who do you think goes with my 11-year-old granddaughter? It is such a pleasure to sit there and watch her laugh. It is the greatest fun I could possibly have.

## The Birdhouse

Once I bought our granddaughter a little birdhouse kit. She was told to assemble the birdhouse and then paint it. My granddaughter lives next door and my wife had bought a very small individual doll cake for her. She

asked Rachel, our granddaughter, to come over and pick it up. Our ulterior motive was to get a goodnight kiss, but Rachel was too busy building the birdhouse and painting it. We were so happy she was enthralled with the birdhouse, so we just went to bed. That is how God is. *There's nothing more delightful to God than seeing His children happy.* Everything was perfectly laid out in The Garden of Eden. They had *Eternal Life* from The Tree of Life. They had all the food they needed. No harm could come to them. They had perfect weather. There were no weeds or thorns in their garden. The Garden of Eden was Paradise. In Hebrew "*Eden*" means "*pleasantness.*" This was The Garden of The Land of Pleasantness. The whole land was delightful. *The garden was a Paradise on earth, but, then, it was lost to them.*

## Lost Eden

How did they lose it? God told them about *two trees* that were in The Garden. There had to be two trees or else Adam and Eve would not have had the free choice that God gave to them and now gives to you. The opportunity to have free choice was *the key.*

Genesis 3:1-11 <sup>1</sup>Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, Yea, has God said, you shall not eat of every tree of the garden? <sup>2</sup>And the woman said to the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: <sup>3</sup>But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, You shall not eat of it, neither shall you touch it, lest you die. <sup>4</sup>And the serpent said to the woman, You shall not



surely die: <sup>5</sup>For God does know that in the day you eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. <sup>6</sup>And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was pleasant to the eyes and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also to her husband with her; and he did eat. <sup>7</sup>And the eyes of them both were opened and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons. <sup>8</sup>And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden. <sup>9</sup>And the LORD God called to Adam and said to him, Where are you? <sup>10</sup>And he said, I heard your voice in the garden and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. <sup>11</sup>And he said, Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded you that you should not eat?

### A Running Commentary

Now consider all the text regarding the serpent up to the point where it is said, *“less you die.”* The Hebrew word for *“die”* means *“dying.”* It is an active verb. In other words, they would not drop dead immediately when they ate the fruit. This was what Satan was trying to convey. The real meaning pointed to the process of dying. *“<sup>4</sup>And the serpent said to the woman, you shall not surely die: <sup>5</sup>For God does know that in the day you eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.* [The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil had

good in it, but it also had evil]. *‘And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was pleasant to the eyes and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also to her husband with her; and he did eat.’*

Now concentrate upon the first thing they realized. It was that *the woman became a sex object*. They knew they were *naked*. *“<sup>7</sup>And the eyes of them both were opened and they knew that they were naked [up to this time, sex was an extremely private personal thing between husband and wife] and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons.”* They were so aware, *sexually*, at this point that reproduction became a matter of sex and not a matter of *agàpè love*. Rather, it was a matter of *eros love* or *passionate love*. In fact, there was so much passion that they were ashamed, *“<sup>8</sup>And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.”*

God called out. Who called out? Was it really God? No, it was God's *angel/messenger*. It was *the angel* of The LORD speaking in God's place. *“<sup>10</sup>And he said, I heard your voice in the garden and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. [Notice that the first thing God said was] <sup>11</sup>Who told you that you were naked?”*

## Satan Introduced

The word “*Satan*” in the Hebrew is “*Hay-lale*” (Isaiah 14). “*Hay-lale*” means “*bolster*” and “*egotistically driven*.” Another root for “*Hay-lale*” is “*gives in marriage*.” So Satan

has his system of marriage. It was not based on *agàpè love* but sex. In *The Law of God* (Deuteronomy 24:1), you will find the word for “*married*” is “*baal*.” “*Baal*” is “*the god of fertility or sexuality*.” So Baal really is a lesser god of Satan who gives in marriage. Satan’s method of marriage is *purely sexual*. It is to produce more children whether legal or illegal. He wants many children because *the illegitimate children would not be able to inherit*. Do not forget, *inheritance* is one element in God’s *plan*. The children of the flesh, who came through Hagar, are greater in number than the children of *The Righteous* (Galatians 4). So Satan’s plan was to have more children by *the unrighteous individuals* who follow his system of marriage rather than God’s system of marriage for *the righteous*.

This is so important for you to study and fully understand. Hence, *the true way* of reproducing in His likeness under His system of marriage *was lost*.

Genesis 3:13-15 <sup>13</sup>And the LORD God said to the woman, What is this that you have done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me and I did eat.  
<sup>14</sup>And the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, you are cursed above all cattle and above every beast of the field; upon your belly shall you go and dust shall you eat all the days of your life:  
<sup>15</sup>And I will put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed; it shall bruise your head and you shall bruise his heel.

God wanted to know what they had done. Paul explains that it was the woman who was deceived and not the man.

## Eve Was Deceived

Since *the woman* was deceived, she became *subject* to the *husband* who became her *master*. Because she was *the deceived one*, she now had to have someone rule over her as lord. Eve caused all the trouble that women have had since that time. “<sup>14</sup>*And the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, you are cursed above all cattle and above every beast of the field; upon your belly shall you go and dust shall you eat all the days of your life.*”

The penalty for Satan is, “<sup>15</sup>*And I will put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed.*” Remember that Eve and her descendants were going to be *the church*, eventually. Adam was to have been The Savior. But now, all children born through Eve would have Satan as their enemy. This is the woman's penalty, generation after generation. It continues with, “*it shall bruise your head.*” This is a prophecy of Christ when He will defeat Satan, “*and you shall bruise his heel.*” As each child is born, Satan will always be at their heels trying to deceive them and constantly lead them in a direction opposite from God's *way*. It does not stop until the seed (Christ) shall come.

## Coming Of The Seed

The story from this time on has to do with the coming of The Seed or *the prophecy* about Christ. This is why Christ had to become The Savior. Since it is through *inheritance*, it had to be a *pure seed* or a Godly seed. Note this vital difference. The Seed (Christ) had to come from a legal Godly marriage in order to *inherit* all things. It could not

come from Satan's seed or his type of marriage.

**John 8:19-20** <sup>19</sup>Then said they to him, Where is your Father? Jesus answered, You neither know me, nor my Father: if you had known me, you should have known my Father also. <sup>20</sup>These words spoke Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet come.

John introduced the account about The Sadducees and Pharisees accusing Christ of being a child of the devil. *“<sup>19</sup>Where is your Father? Jesus answered, You neither know me, nor my Father: if you had known me, you should have known my Father also. <sup>20</sup>These words spoke Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet come.”* This text tells you that The Pharisees and The Sadducees didn't know *the true God*. Look at their response to what Jesus said.

**John 8:33-34** <sup>33</sup>They answered him, We be Abraham's seed and were never in bondage to any man: how say you, You shall be made free? <sup>34</sup>Jesus answered them, Verily, verily I say to you, Whosoever commits sin is the servant of sin.

They alleged that they were pure, from *the righteous seed* and had a right to *the inheritance*. They declared that they were never in bondage.

## Satan's Children

Through Abraham, you are not a slave. But if you come through Satan's children, then you are in bondage and

you are a slave. Jesus explains the difference, “<sup>34</sup>*Whosoever commits sin is the servant of sin.*” If you are of *the pure seed*, then you will receive *the inheritance*.

John 8:44 You are of your father the devil and the lusts of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar and the father of it.

What were those lusts? He had made Adam and Eve aware of sexuality and reproduction through sex in marriage but without being one flesh. Notice the claim that, “*He was a murderer [talking about Cain] from the beginning and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him [he is the darkness]. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own; for he is a liar and the father of it.*”

Adam and Eve followed Satan (as *their father*) and his system of marriage. Always remember there are two types of marriage: 1) God's or 2) Satan's.

Genesis 3:16 To the woman he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband and he shall rule over you.

God, through *an angel*, told the serpent that he was to be the enemy of Eve's children. The old serpent is going to be clipping at the heels of every single individual. “<sup>16</sup>*To the woman, he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception.*” Women have had labor pains ever since.

## Pain Of Childbirth

Childbirth should have been a pleasant, joyful experience right from the beginning. But rather, you find, “*in sorrow you shall bring forth children* [various levels of pain] *and your desire shall be to your husband.*”

*A woman from that time became property.* They were no longer one flesh. She literally became *the property of the man.* Throughout the ages, women have wondered why Solomon was allowed to have hundreds of wives, 700 concubines and still be God's selected king. It does not seem right. Well, Solomon didn't do anything wrong because he owned all those women. His (Solomon's) error was in honoring the pagan religions all his wives and concubines believed in. In essence, you could enter into a satanic system of marriage that was based on sexuality, power and possession. Until Christ paid the penalty, you were trapped by Satan's marriage. When Adam and Eve lost everything, they and their children had to wait approximately 4,000 years for Christ *to redeem them.* All the generations after them had to wait for Christ. So far you have covered 1) Creation, 2) Reproduction, 3) Inheritance and 4) Godly Marriage versus Satan's Marriage.

Matthew 18:11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

## Restoration

The fifth element is *restoration* or restoring that which is lost. Christ's entire life, until He died, was about *restoration.* It is restoring that which was lost. Jesus specifically

explained why He had to come and what His purpose was. **“<sup>11</sup>For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost”** (Matthew 18:11). **The Son had to come to restore everything. How long would this take?**

**I John 3:8 He that commits sin is of the devil; for the devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.**

## **The Devil's System**

**This explains the length of time involved. There are two types of life. “<sup>8</sup>He that commits sin is of the devil.” This is following the devil's system which goes beyond marriage. This system goes beyond sin. He is trying to keep you from *any type of righteousness*. Whatever God had intended and created, Satan attempts to change (remove and deceive). Today, as far as marriage is concerned, many just *live together* instead of being legally married. Some have asked if they can live together so they can finish college or earn enough money before they get married. Fifty years ago, no one, except in Hollywood, would have asked that question. Almost everyone knew the answer would be “*No.*” In fact, it would have been unthinkable for them to ask such a question.**

**Marriage today no longer seems necessary. Satan saw that. Some parents who love their children don't seem to mind if they skip *the marriage part*. Perhaps they don't love their children *enough*. It is almost as if they want to get rid of the children they bore. In Satan's society, parents don't care about their children. Marriage is no**



longer necessary. Satan is trying to keep *society* from doing anything *the way God intended*. To understand God's principles, study the word "*adultery*" in Greek and you will discover it means "*fornication*." It is far better to marry than to sin and burn.

Genesis 4:6-7 <sup>6</sup>And the LORD said to Cain, Why are you wroth? and why is your countenance fallen? <sup>7</sup>If you do well, shall you not be accepted? and if you do not well, sin lies at the door. And to you shall be his desire and you shall rule over him.

## Cain and Abel

After Adam and Eve left The Garden of Eden because of sin, you find the story about Cain and Abel. Cain was a vegetable farmer while Abel was a shepherd. Abel offered a lamb for his sacrifice. Cain offered fruits and vegetables. Cain was upset because God (speaking through *the angel*) accepted Abel's offering over Cain's offering.

*The angel* of God gave important guidelines to Cain and Abel. "<sup>7</sup>*If you do well, shall you not be accepted? And if you do not well, sin lies at the door.*" Cain had to learn to master himself. He had to overcome jealousy and his carnal impulse. Because Cain could not control himself, he killed his brother. He had to leave and go to The Land of Nod.

## Land Of Nod

"*Nod*" in Hebrew means "*wandering*." Cain was left to wander around to try to find God but he never succeeded.

**During that period, most people lived for almost a thousand years (Methuselah lived to 969 years old). Before Cain left, God put a sign on him to protect him. This was because his other brothers and sisters (born to Adam and Eve) would want to kill Cain for having killed Abel. During the thousand years, Cain's line started to grow with more wives and children. Lamech had two wives, Adah and Zillah. Lamech sinned a great deal more than Cain. Lamech said if Cain was forgiven seven times, he should be forgiven seventy times seven (Genesis 4:24). Why did God put that mark on Cain and his lineage? It was because they were murderers and very violent. Now fast-forward about 1,500 years to the time just before the flood in Genesis 6. Did you ever wonder why God allowed man to live nearly 1,000 years of age?**

**II Peter 3:5-9 <sup>5</sup>For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: <sup>6</sup>Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: <sup>7</sup>But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved to fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. <sup>8</sup>But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day. <sup>9</sup>The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.**

**The major gift God gave to Adam and Eve was *free choice*. Peter said there would be scoffers in the last days. “<sup>5</sup>For**

*this [speaking of the time of the flood] they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: 'Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.'*

## Judgment By Fire

You now have judgment by both water and fire. Why did God give a thousand years for this process? It is because He is, *"Not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance."* Through the line of Kings, God *allowed the people to live a thousand years with free choice* to decide what they thought was *right or wrong*. What did they choose?

Genesis 6:5 And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

Every thought in their mind was to perpetrate evil continually. The world was racked with violence. So, from The Garden of Eden, Satan's *way* of marriage was chosen over God's way of marriage. Mankind made the wrong choice.

## Noah And The Flood

Cain's *seed* followed Satan's *way*. Over 1,500 years, how many *righteous seeds* were found? Only one and that was Noah. Noah's father, Lamech, lived 777 years. Seven is the number of perfection. His son, Noah, was the only righteous one. He was perfect.

The word “*perfect*” does not mean that Noah never sinned. He drank too much but still Noah was *blameless*. Christ explains, “*Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect*” (Matthew 5:48). The word “*perfect*” means “*blameless*” but not without sin. Every human being, from the time of Adam and Eve, has sinned and comes short of The Glory of God. The only way to be *perfect* and *blameless* is to make *the right choice to faithfully follow the will of God to perfection*.

If Adam and Eve would have said “*No*” to Satan, then things would have been so different. They should have looked only to The Tree of Life. Instead, mankind started off with murderers, Cain and his children. Then the world ended up with only one perfect man, Noah. At that juncture, God flooded the world (II Peter 3). He had given *each person almost one thousand years* to live and to make *the right choice*. Their behavior never changed even though they suffered and had many sorrows. It somehow never made any difference to them.

So God destroyed them all – except Noah, his wife and his children. Mankind wouldn't follow God even though they lived up to a thousand years and saw all the sorrows of the world. They had many opportunities to realize that sin brought only sorrow. So, God decided to reduce man's life span to 120 years. By the time of David, God reduced man's lifespan to 70 years. It may have been a favor to reduce the life span. Job said that the day of his death was better than the day of his birth. He knew what he was talking about. Out of His *mercy*, God said that He gave a thousand years, then 120 years and later only 70 years, for mankind to *learn* of good and evil. Still, those pre-

flood people did not choose the right way to live. They never made the right choice.

## Repentance Required

Instead of following Satan, God wants you to repent and change your life. When God completed the physical universe, He saw it was all *good*. Adam and Eve could have saved mankind much heartache! They could have reproduced themselves in God's *likeness* and *character* (agapè). From the time of the flood to the time of restoration, *The Bible* is about how Christ came to *save* that which was *lost* (Matthew 18). It is as simple as that. *The pure seed* would not exist until Abraham came along. He was perfect in all his ways (based upon *inheritance*).

## Righteous Abraham

In the time of restoration, Abraham was the first one who was willing to obey God. More and more, you can see how God duplicates Himself. In theology, it is called *the duality of The Bible*. Abraham had the same choice that was given to Adam and Eve. But, Abraham was not required to keep *The Law of Moses*. More people in theology write articles to prove *The Ten Commandments* were *in force* before the time of Moses. This is not true! Sin was always commonplace, but humans were not guilty until God gave His Law (Romans 4:15).

*The Law* wasn't added until four hundred and thirty years after Abraham (Galatians 3:17). There was no law during the time of Abraham. It was added 430 years later! He chose to follow God's *will*. He wanted to do *good* and

not sin. Abraham kept *The Commandments, Statutes and Judgments in his heart*. He was accounted *righteous* because of *his faith*. Besides, he was willing to sacrifice his own son to show *his willing heart*.

Then *the angel* came to Abraham and said, “*For now I know that you fear God, seeing you have not withheld your son, your only son from me*” (Genesis 22:12). Getting to the point, in order for Noah and Abraham to reach the extreme limit of knowing God, they would have to bring themselves to complete *repentance*. However, you can't repent on your own. A person only has free choice. Your choice is to decide to follow The Will of God or *the will of Satan*. When you decide to do everything your way, then you are following Satan's way.

## Sacrifice Of Isaac

When Abraham was willing to offer Isaac, God knew Abraham would do what God wanted. It was counted to Abraham as *righteousness*. This is the whole story from *The Book of Genesis to The Book of Revelation*. The Tree of Life and The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil were offered to Adam and Eve as well as to Abraham. Abraham was told, “*Know of a surety that your seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not theirs and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years.*” (Genesis 15:13). After those 430 years, Moses was a Prophet, like Christ, who would lead them.

John 5:39 Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.

Jesus said to “<sup>39</sup>*Search the scriptures.*” Only *The Old Testament Scriptures* were available at that time since *The New Testament* wasn't written yet. *The New Testament* is *The Son* speaking to mankind. *The Old Testament* is *The Word* speaking to you. The pure seed came from Eve through Noah and Abraham (Genesis 3:15). Abraham made that choice. Therefore, he was *righteous* and *The Covenant of Promise* was given to him as *an inheritance* through his *seed*, Christ. Christ gives *the promises in The Scriptures* as they testify of Him.

John 5:45-46 <sup>45</sup>Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuses you, even Moses, in whom you trust. <sup>46</sup>For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me: for he wrote of me.

*The Law of Moses* was *The Old Covenant*. Those who trusted in *The Old Covenant* said to Christ, “*We are the seed of Abraham.*” Christ said to forget whose seed you came from because *the Scriptures* testify of “*Me.*” You trusted Moses and now he is the one who is going to accuse you. The whole purpose of *The Law of Moses* was to give the same choice that Adam and Eve had been given. “<sup>46</sup>*For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me: for he wrote of me.*”

## An Expression Of Christ

*The Law* is an expression of Christ, but it was, also, *a bondage of works with a curse*. Some Christians believe that being under *The Law* also means being “*under a penalty.*” Not one *Scripture* tells you that *The Law* is *a penalty*. The penalty is to be under the curse. That is the penalty.

Paul said, “*For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse*” (Galatians 3:10). *The works* are under the curse. Being under *The Law* means you accepted His *administration* as a *schoolmaster* to lead you to *Eternal Life*. Christ said *The Law* doesn't give you *Eternal Life*, but it leads you to Christ. Later, in *Galatians*, you see it was *added* because of *sin*, until The Seed should come (Christ). It was a Law for the people who needed it because they were unrepentant.

I Timothy 1:6-9 <sup>6</sup>From which some having swerved have turned aside to vain jangling; <sup>7</sup>Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. <sup>8</sup>But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully; <sup>9</sup>Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers.

These people are arguing about which day is The Pass-over and when is the time of Pentecost. Many today are still arguing about it! “<sup>8</sup>*But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully.*” This is *the intended purpose* God had. Why did God add *The Law*? It was because of transgression.

## Law Created For Whom?

How is *The Law* used lawfully? “<sup>9</sup>*Knowing this, that the law is not made for [whom?] a righteous man.*” Noah and Abraham were *righteous*, so *The Law* didn't apply to them. But, to whom was *The Law* given? It was “*for the law-*



*less and disobedient.” The Law was made for “the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers.”*

Do you want to be under *The Law*? If you are striving to be like Christ, the answer is “no.” When Abraham was given The Abrahamic Promise of Christ, it was through him that all nations would be blessed. It was required to go through The Seed of Abraham and The Law of Inheritance. One of the greatest key elements of God is *inheritance*. Abraham transferred *the inheritance* to Isaac since Isaac allowed himself to be sacrificed, just like Christ.

### Eliezer's Mission

Read the account of Isaac's marriage in Genesis 24. Eliezer, the servant, is sent by the father who says he didn't want Isaac to take a wife from the seed of the nations of that region; instead, he was to take a wife from his own family (his *inheritance*). Eliezer goes on his mission and the first thing he asks God is how will he know the identity of the right woman. He is told, “*The woman who comes to this well and gives you the water.*” And along came Rebekah. She gave him the water. He thanked God. They went to the first-born, Laban, who assumed the role of his father who had died. Laban had the authority to permit Eliezer to take his sister, Rebekah, to be the bride of Isaac. But he asked Rebekah, “*Are you willing to go?*”

So, this was not a forced marriage, although he could have told her to go and she would have been required to because they were under Satan's system of marriage. She was *a possession*. She was to be sold and her husband

would become her master. Instead, Rebekah said she would go. They never saw each other and yet she went to marry Isaac. This became the type of marriage that God set forth to restore. Study John 2 through John 4. The first miracle Christ performed was at the marriage of Cana (John 2). It was *before* His time to perform miracles and He asked His mother, “*4Woman, what have I to do with you? Mine hour is not yet come. 5His mother said to the servants, Whatsoever he says to you, do it.*”

### Miracle At Cana

So the governor of the feast brought the firkins which were large water jars for purification. They were to purify people for the marriage and Christ said, “*Fill the waterpots with water.*” And the water turned into wine. It was the very best wine, there was enough for everyone and there was plenty left over.

Who is God saving? He is saving everyone. When asked who He was, Jesus replied, “*A friend of The Bridegroom*” (John 3). After this, Jesus Christ went to Samaria. He said, “*It must be that I go to Samaria*” (which was a Gentile land). He went to the Samaritan woman and asked for a drink of water as Eliezer had done. Christ asked, “*Where is your husband?*” She answered, “*I have no husband.*” She was right. She had five husbands. Christ was forgiving her.

Then Christ says, “*Look, I can give you water and you can have everlasting life.*” This ties in the marriage of Isaac (Genesis 24). Christ had to go to Samaria (Gentiles) since His own people rejected Him because of *The Law*. From

the time of Moses to when God dealt with Israel, He made *A Marriage Contract* (Hosea 2). That contract was signed by blood, but why? Without blood, there is no remission of sins. Moses said, “*See, I have set before you this day life and good and death and evil*” (Deuteronomy 30:15). Adam and Eve had the same choice as The Children of Israel, to choose *life* or *death*. The Israelites, Adam and Eve, all, had a choice of choosing blessings or cursings (life or death). The people had the same choice.

### The Samaritan Woman

Christ was telling the woman from Samaria that the day is coming when she will no longer worship The Father in Jerusalem or in Samaria. She will worship The Father in *Spirit*. There will be A New Marriage Covenant which is A New Marriage Agreement. He said that The Father seeks those who will worship Him in *Spirit* and *Truth* and not in *The Works of The Law*. Now, do you understand the real story of the Samaritan woman? Israel (The Jews) did not repent and, instead, rejected Christ. Go all the way from Moses through *The Books of Samuel, Kings and Chronicles*. There you will find they kept rejecting Him until they were taken into captivity. Do you see how the story flows?

Matthew 18:11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

Jesus picked a nation to be *a witness* for the world. God chose Israel because they came through *the inheritance* (pure seed) and were to be His Witness, The Bride and The Church. When they rejected Christ, He told them they

would be last (originally they were to be first) in *the kingdom*. So, Christ went to The Samaritans (The Gentiles).

Christ was coming to *restore that which was lost*, “<sup>11</sup>*For the Son of man [Christ] is come to save that which was lost.*” This covers almost 4,000 years. Now it has been almost 2,000 years since Christ gave His *life* for you.

Colossians 1:27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.

## Passover Symbols

The Passover symbols were changed from *the lamb* to *the bread and wine*. The *wine* symbolized His *blood*. This *New Covenant* changed *The Law* from The Letter (*works*) to *the Spirit*. The *bread* symbolized His *body*. Now when you are “*In Christ*” (the mystery of God), Christ is “*In You*” and He is your *Husband* (Colossians 1:27). This is *The New Covenant*. It is a contract, which is a *spiritual agreement*.

Hebrews 7:14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah; of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priesthood.

There was a change in The Priesthood from Levi to Melchizedek. There was a change of *The Law*. That Law was changed from The Letter of *The Law* to God writing His Law *in your heart*. It is The Royal Law. He writes *The Law* in your heart through His Bride (Church) being married to The Groom (Christ).

You are “*One*” with Christ. The Bride will have Christ’s character and True Marriage will finally be restored. Agàpè (God’s love) is the fulfillment (completion) of *The Law* (Romans 13:10). All this brings you back to the 6<sup>th</sup> element – *redemption* and *release*. As a reminder, the elements are: 1) Creation, 2) Godly Reproduction, 3) Inheritance, 4) Godly Marriage and 5) Restoration. Christ was *The Seed* to bring *that restoration*.

Christ had to give His life to restore the marriage. The spilling of blood brought *the forgiveness of sin*. The 6<sup>th</sup> element is *Salvation* (given in two parts).

### Salvation – Redemption And Release

One part of *Salvation* (the 6<sup>th</sup> element) is *Redemption* and the other is *Release*. You are *saved* through one of two ways. You are *saved* by Christ *redeeming* you through the proper marriage to become *one* with Him. The second option is for you to be *released* from those sins. Once *redemption* is fulfilled and once *release* is given, then *The Kingdom of God* (the 7<sup>th</sup> element) will come.

Job 19:25-26 <sup>25</sup>For I know that my redeemer lives and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth:  
<sup>26</sup>And though after my skin worms destroy this body,  
yet in my flesh shall I see God.

Job knew this story over 3,500 years ago. After all his troubles, Job was being “picked on” by his friends. Job said, “<sup>25</sup>*For I know that my redeemer lives and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth* [talking about Christ]:  
<sup>26</sup>*And though after my skin worms destroy this body* [this

tabernacle], *yet in my flesh* [at the resurrection] *shall I see God.*” Job knew he was going to be *redeemed*. Why must Job be redeemed? It is because *Job was sold to Satan, so Christ had to redeem him.*

I John 3:8 He that commits sin is of the devil; for the devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

The reason for The Son of God is, “*that he might destroy the works of the devil.*” What did the devil do? He brought envy, lust, murder, sorrow and death to the world. He destroyed marriage. He kept you from being *One with God*. Christ came to destroy Satan’s works and bring *restoration*. Christ will *save you at Passover* when you take *the wine* (His blood) and *the bread* (His body). The blood is necessary because *life is in the blood*. Christ had to shed His blood. He had to sacrifice His *body* so each of you can become “*One Body*” *with Him* to restore that *original agapè marriage*.

By repenting, you are saying, “*God, I want your will, not mine.*” Christ is your Husband by contract (Ephesians 5)! Christ’s responsibility is to make you Holy, without spot or wrinkle and completely unblemished. That is Christ’s job. So when you drink the wine and eat the bread at The Passover, you are signing The Marriage Agreement. Christ’s *promise* to you is that He will put “*God – In You.*” For you to become *One with God*, His Law must be in your heart and mind.

He must redeem you which is symbolized by *The Jubilee*

**Year, which is *the restoration* of The Sabbath (Leviticus 25). *The Jubilee Year is The Marriage Feast entering into God's rest. The Book of The Life of The Lamb* is the story of The Marriage of The Lamb to His wife (the church). Christ first became *agàpè* as *The Word* and now you, too, can become *agàpè* as The Word. You become *One with God* and God will have reproduced Himself. During The Millennium, at the time of The Feast of Tabernacles, all Israel will be *saved* (Ezekiel 37).**

## **Everyone Resurrected**

**Everyone who ever lived will be resurrected to their human age and live another 100 years (Isaiah 65:20). Whether an old man or a young child, everyone will live out the 100 years. However, they won't have 1,000 years to live. They have to keep *The Law* because they were sinners and never *repented*. As they *repent*, they become Sons of God. Israel was supposed to be *the first among nations*, but they became last. When The Bride was called, they were called from all nations – not just from one nation. Who is The Bride? The Church is The Bride. They were not circumcised according to promises made to Abraham but were *circumcised in their heart* (Romans 2). That is God's Law written in your heart.**

**So, unless Israel and The Gentiles have circumcision of the heart, they cannot be The Bride. You can only be The Bride (through the time of Pentecost) when God's *Spirit* is given. All who are resurrected in The First Resurrection become The Bride of Christ. However, Israel will not be resurrected at that time. Notice, there were 144,000 who came out of The Tribulation. Each of the pearly gates in**

New Jerusalem represents one of The Tribes of Israel. So all The Prophets, Abraham, Isaac, Moses and those who were willing to follow God will be in *that First Resurrection*. In the story about Lazarus and the rich man, the rich man did not qualify for The First Resurrection. The rich man looked up and saw Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Lazarus in The First Resurrection. Only *The Bride* is in The First Resurrection. When Israel is *saved* entirely as a nation, they are The Guests at Christ's Wedding to The Church (His Bride). This includes other nations who are *saved*. All of them are *redeemed* until The Marriage Feast.

## Marriage Feast

At The Marriage Feast, *redemption is no longer an issue*. After that, Christ will *redeem no one*. "To *redeem*" is to "buy back ahead of time." This compares with *The Book of Ruth* and the story of Naomi, who owned the parcel of land (with Boaz who was of *the inheritance* through The Seed). Boaz bought the land and, with it, he bought Ruth, who was a Gentile (like the woman from Samaria).

Once The Marriage Feast is over, it is over. Redemption is over at The Time of The Jubilee. Then, you can only be *released*. *Redemption is buying you back because of false marriage*. It is for The Wedding Feast (The Groom and The Bride). When you come to The Wedding Feast, if you don't have on the right clothes, you cannot enter. But once that Marriage Feast is completed, *the release* comes (all debts are forgiven). You are either dressed in your human flesh or as a spirit like God (a rainbow). How are they forgiven? They are forgiven the minute they repent or confess that



**Jesus is Lord (Romans 10). The ones dressed in human flesh are thrown into The Lake of Fire and it is there they readily repent. There is no more debt.**

## **The Kingdom Of God**

**And so the whole story of *The Bible* ends, “Oh death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory?” (I Corinthians 15:55). The works of Satan are over and done with. The 7<sup>th</sup> element is *The Kingdom of God*. You now have *the 7 elements* explained. Now you know the whole story of *The Bible*. When you read it, you must understand every major part. When you read the genealogy (which can be so tiring), it will have a greater meaning. It explains everything you need to know about *the inheritance* (The Pure Seed).**

**The 7 elements in God's mind draws a map for you to follow in *The Bible*.**

- 1) Creation**
- 2) Godly Reproduction**
- 3) Inheritance**
- 4) Godly Marriage**
- 5) Restoration**
- 6) Salvation**
  - a) Redemption**

**b) Release**

**7) Kingdom of God**

*Use these 7 elements of God's mind when studying The Word of God. Your understanding of God's riches will spur you on to great spiritual growth!*

## Chapter 7

### THE TRUE GOSPEL

Most *Bibles* have the words *The Holy Bible* printed on the cover. Now picture your *Bible* as a Puzzle Box. Inside the box are thousands and thousands of pieces that must be properly assembled. Most puzzle boxes have a picture of the puzzle on it, in order to give you an idea of exactly how to put the puzzle together. But your *Bible* has no picture to guide you.

Within *The Bible*, there are little bits and pieces of truth – a little here and a little there. These are pieces which can help you put the picture together and reveal *the plan* that God has in store for you. If you put most of *the major pieces together*, you will be able to understand God's *purpose* for His *creation*. God calls these puzzle pieces, "*The mysteries of The Kingdom of Heaven*" (Matthew 13:11). The word "*Holy*" means "*clean*" or "*unblemished*" and the word "*Bible*" is from the word "*biblos*" in Greek meaning "*book.*" *The Holy Bible* contains "*truthful books.*" When you look at the complete picture of The Plan of God, you would start with Adam and Eve, then proceed through *The Old Testament* and then come to *The New Testament*. The last pieces would involve Jesus Christ and Jerusalem followed by The Apostles and *Revelation*.

#### Thousands Of Puzzle Pieces

So, *The Bible* holds thousands of different pieces, wait-

ing for you to place them (as God directs) *into perfect order*. First, you attempt to put the large pieces together. Once the major pieces are properly anchored, then you will be able to assemble the smaller pieces on your own. As you continue to study your *Bible* and through prayer, God will reveal more and more to you. As with every puzzle, you must have a starting point. What is *The True Gospel*? In the yellow pages, you can look up churches and you will find a multitude of different names, including Four Square Gospel or Full Gospel. Now, you will begin to learn *the true meaning* of the word “*Gospel*.” Paul’s *Epistle to The Galatians* is all about *The Gospel*. In most cases, scribes wrote Paul’s *Epistles* as he dictated what they should write. In this particular case, Paul was so upset that he wrote *The Letter to The Galatians* in his very own handwriting.

Galatians 6:11 You see how large a letter I have written to you with mine own hand.

Paul wanted them to know the extent of the conflict he was having. He was visibly upset about the subject he was covering. Galatia is the southern part of what is today called Turkey. At one time it was called Asia Minor. Basically, it was the location for Paul’s first evangelistic journey (as he traveled to establish churches).

## Preaching The Gospel

Over the years, as Paul continued preaching *The Gospel*, he started to hear that the people in Galatia (southern Turkey or Asia Minor) were beginning to follow something different from what he had *originally taught them*. This

upset him greatly. Another name for *The Letter to The Galatians* could be called *The True Gospel*. *The Book of Galatians* tells you where to look when searching for *The True Gospel*.

Galatians 1:1-12 <sup>1</sup>Paul, an Apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead;) <sup>2</sup>And all the brethren which are with me, to the churches of Galatia: <sup>3</sup>Grace be to you and peace from God the Father and from our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>4</sup>Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father: <sup>5</sup>To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. <sup>6</sup>I marvel that you are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ to another gospel: <sup>7</sup>Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you and would pervert the gospel of Christ. <sup>8</sup>But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than that which we have preached to you, let him be accursed. <sup>9</sup>As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel to you than that you have received, let him be accursed. <sup>10</sup>For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. <sup>11</sup>But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. <sup>12</sup>For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

Paul was irate, angry and highly affected when he wrote this letter. Paul starts by telling The Galatians that he is an Apostle – but not an Apostle made by men. Paul did

not receive *The True Gospel* from any man or from any of The Apostles. It came directly by *revelation*.

## The First Lesson

This is the first lesson that Paul tried to get across to them. He explains how the words he preached were not given to him by a human being or from a human conference, “*Neither by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead.*” Through this letter, Paul is telling you to whom he is writing. He says, “<sup>2</sup>*And all the brethren which are with me.*” There were those who were *not* with him, so he was writing, only, to those who were still following what he taught.

Notice that he said, “<sup>2</sup>*To the churches of Galatia: <sup>3</sup>Grace be to you and peace from God the Father and from our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>4</sup>Who gave himself for our sins that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God [it is God's will to save the world] and our Father: <sup>5</sup>To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. <sup>6</sup>I marvel that you are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ to another gospel: [Now the critical key is that they had received a gift, and yet, they turned to another Gospel] <sup>7</sup>Which is not another; [This is because it is not even considered to be a gospel – in that sense of the word] but there be some that trouble you and would pervert the gospel of Christ.*”

The word “*pervert*” is a good English translation, but it does not tell the full story. The Greek root for the word “*pervert*” is “*to turn*” or “*to reverse.*” *This different gospel* was affecting The Galatians to the point that they were

going *backwards*, instead of *growing spiritually*. Paul was so concerned that he called for a curse to be placed on those teachers as well as on any Christians if they followed *another gospel*.

## Another Gospel?

Many of The Christians were following *another gospel*. Paul felt it was unthinkable for them to follow *another gospel* so soon after he had explained *The True Gospel* to them. Perhaps after 2,000 years, you can understand why there are thousands of variations of *The Gospel*. This phenomenon was amazing, because it was so soon after Paul had been there, in person, to speak to The Galatians. He said, “<sup>10</sup>*For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.*” Paul’s *purpose* was not to please men. He said, “<sup>11</sup>*But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the Revelation of Jesus Christ.*” *The True Gospel* came straight from Jesus Christ. Then Paul explains the history of how he received *The True Gospel* directly from Christ.

Galatians 1:18-19 <sup>18</sup>Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter and abode with him fifteen days. <sup>19</sup>But other of the Apostles saw I none, save James the Lord’s brother.

Paul was converted on the road to Damascus. He was blinded at this time but his eyesight was later restored. Jesus Christ personally taught Paul *The True Gospel*. When Paul returned to the region of Syria and Cilicia, the people

learned that he had been converted to Christianity.

**Galatians 2:1-4** <sup>1</sup>Then fourteen years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas and took Titus with me also. <sup>2</sup>And I went up by revelation and communicated to them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of reputation, less by any means I should run or had run, in vain. <sup>3</sup>But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised: <sup>4</sup>And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:

## 17 Years

Paul preached *this Gospel* for seventeen years. This was three years after his conversion. He spent two weeks with Peter and then preached for fourteen more years, for a total of about seventeen years. “<sup>1</sup>*After I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas and took Titus with me also.* <sup>2</sup>*And I went up by revelation.* [Christ wanted him to go. Paul didn't want The Apostles or teachers to get into each other's way or to cause dissension among themselves]. <sup>3</sup>*But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised.*” Barnabas was a Jew and Titus was a Greek. The problem was circumcision, although this historical rite was just the beginning of the problem.

*The Law* was, also, a part of the controversy. Eventually, you will find that there are *two types of gospels*. This is based on, “<sup>4</sup>*And that because of false brethren unawares*



*brought in.*” False teachers (or brethren) were preaching another *gospel*. These people “*came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us to bondage.*” The false brethren preached that these believers must be *circumcised*. But circumcision produced only slavery instead of liberty. With circumcision, The Jews wanted The Gentile Christians to keep *The Whole Law of Moses* (Acts 15:5).

Acts 15:5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

## True Freedom

As God reveals His *plan* for Christians, you learn so much more about *true freedom*. In The United States, Americans talk about living in a free society. However, no one knows the true meaning of freedom until they have received true Christianity. God’s way is total liberty and complete freedom. God does not impose *works* that take away your freedom. You will come to see *The True Gospel* is not a religion or any religious ceremony, but a way of living your Christian life.

Galatians 2:5-10 <sup>5</sup>To whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour; that the truth of the gospel might continue with you. <sup>6</sup>But of these who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it makes no matter to me: God accepts no man’s person) for they who seemed to be somewhat in conference added nothing to me: <sup>7</sup>But contrariwise, when they saw that the

gospel of the uncircumcision was committed to me, as the gospel of the circumcision was to Peter; <sup>8</sup>(For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles). <sup>9</sup>And when James, Cephas and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given to me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go to the heathen and they to the circumcision. <sup>10</sup>Only they would that we should remember the poor; the same which I also was forward to do.

Paul said that he had not given place by subjection to these teachers at all. What he spoke was *the truth*. It was *The True Gospel* and he desired “*the gospel might continue with you* [he was mostly concerned about the teachers] “*who seemed to be somewhat* [the teachers may have acted like the leaders of these people but they were not] *whatsoever they were, it makes no matter to me* [Paul didn't care if it was Peter, John or James], *God accepts no man's person* [Paul stated that he did not preach what any man told him; but rather he preached what Christ told him to preach].” But “*in conference*” these teachers were discussing the pros of Circumcision and *The Law*. Paul said these men “*added nothing to me.*”

## Two Gospels

Here are the two gospels, “<sup>7</sup>*when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed to me, as the gospel of the circumcision was to Peter.*” Notice, that both are the same gospel, but one gospel makes you *go backward*, while *the other gospel* will help you *grow spiritually*. Isn't this

ironic? Peter was given the responsibility of The Gospel of The Circumcision (The Jews) but Paul was given The Gospel of The Uncircumcision (The Gentiles).

When these pieces of the puzzle are put together, the result becomes very plain. Paul said, “<sup>8</sup>*For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the circumcision.*” So, Paul is stating that even though Peter was the first, Peter could never have been The Pope of Rome because Peter is The Apostle to The Circumcision (The Israelites). Peter was given the job of *converting The Tribes of Israel*.

Only Paul could have been The Pope of Rome, since only he was given the job of *converting The Gentiles*. Notice: “<sup>8</sup>*the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles.*” This shows that Peter was teaching The Gospel of The Circumcision, which was effective in converting Israelites to Christ. Paul was effective when he was sent to *the uncircumcised*. “<sup>9</sup>*And when James, Cephas [Peter] and John, who seemed to be pillars [leaders] perceived the grace that was given to me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go to the heathen.*”

The “*heathen*” are *The Gentiles* or “*the remainder of the people in the world.*” There are only two groups of people. You are either an Israelite (12 Tribes of Israel – the circumcised) to whom *the promise* was made, or else, you are one of the rest of the world (the uncircumcised – The Gentiles). So Paul’s Apostleship was *to all the others of the world*. “*We should go to the heathen [uncircumcised] and they to the circumcision [The 12 Tribes].*” Peter specifically had to remain as The Apostle to The Circumcision for a very good reason.

Acts 15:24-25 <sup>24</sup>Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, You must be circumcised and keep the law: to whom we gave no such commandment: <sup>25</sup>It seemed good to us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men to you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul.

The Apostles wrote a letter to The Gentile Christians stating their unanimous agreement of what Gentile Christians were obligated to do as *believers*. They said, “<sup>25</sup>*It seemed good to us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men to you.* [This was done with this letter that explained how some went out from us and said] <sup>24</sup>*you must be circumcised and keep the law: to whom we gave no such commandment*” (Acts 15:24-25).

Matthew 16:15-19 <sup>15</sup>He said to them, But whom say you that I am? <sup>16</sup>And Simon Peter answered and said, You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. <sup>17</sup>And Jesus answered and said to him, Blessed are you, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood has not revealed it to you, but my Father which is in heaven. <sup>18</sup>And I say also to you, That you are Peter and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. <sup>19</sup>And I will give to you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Why were these two Apostles given *two different gospels* (to Israel and to The Gentiles) with which to work with and teach? The answer begins with, “<sup>15</sup>*He [Jesus] said to them,*

*But whom say you that I am? [And Peter said] <sup>16</sup>You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. [Then, Christ said to him] <sup>17</sup>Blessed are you, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood has not revealed it to you, but my Father which is in heaven. <sup>18</sup>And I say also to you, that you are Peter.”* Repetition is vital.

### The Little Stone

Peter was a little pebble, stone or “*petros.*” But “*upon this rock [boulder – Christ] I will build my church; and the gates of hell [the grave] shall not prevail against it.*” This is a very significant statement. Why did Jesus say death would not prevail? What did Christ say to Peter? “<sup>19</sup>*And I will give to you the keys of the kingdom of heaven.*” Peter received a special commission which the other Apostles did not receive. It was because he recognized that Christ was The Son of God.

Christ told him, “<sup>19</sup>*I will give you the keys to the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.*” What does that mean? It means that God commissioned Peter *to open the way into His kingdom for The Gentiles.* He had the keys. *Peter converted the first Gentile.* Christ had Peter (not Paul) convert the first Gentile. Peter obtained the key to unlock the door to The Kingdom of God for The Gentiles. Peter, The Apostle whom God used in Acts 10, remembered the vision of all the unclean animals which came to him three different times.

God repeatedly told Peter to eat by saying, “*Don’t take*

*what God has cleansed and call it unclean.”* God was dealing directly with The Apostle Peter who obtained *the key to the kingdom* for The Gentiles! Hence, The Gentiles were no longer regarded as common, unclean or unworthy to know God's *plan*. Now, Gentiles could, also, be converted. So, God chose Peter as The Apostle to open *the way to God's kingdom*.

Acts 10:28 And he said to them, You know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company or come to one of another nation; but God has showed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.

### The Significance Of Cornelius

Peter was told who the first Gentile convert would be. God not only picked a Gentile, but in fact, He picked a Roman. Furthermore, He selected a military man, as the first Gentile to be converted. The text says, “<sup>28</sup>*And he [Peter] said to them, You know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company or come to one of another nation; but God has showed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.*”

Peter was the only Apostle who could open the door for The Gentiles. Only Peter was given that key. So, The Apostle Peter did, indeed, open the door for the rest of the world of Gentiles to inherit The Kingdom of God. Christ told Peter that he would receive the keys to unlock the way into The Kingdom of God (Matthew 16). Christ would bind it in heaven and on earth – after Peter accepted Cornelius.

**Peter was used to convert Cornelius, the first Gentile. He was The Apostle responsible for unlocking the door so Gentiles could come to The Kingdom of God. On the other hand, Paul was called *out of season* and was The Apostle to The Uncircumcised. (Peter only had the key to open the door to The Uncircumcised).**

**Those who were under The Apostle Paul were under The Gospel of Grace. Peter was working with people who were under *The Gospel of Circumcision* (Israelites) which *reversed* the process of The Spiritual Gospel of The Kingdom.**

### **How Was The Gospel Reversed?**

**Galatians 2:11-15 <sup>11</sup>But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. <sup>12</sup>For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision. <sup>13</sup>And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation. <sup>14</sup>But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said to Peter before them all, If you, being a Jew, live after the manner of Gentiles and not as do the Jews, why compel you the Gentiles to live as do the Jews? <sup>15</sup>We who are Jews by nature and not sinners of the Gentiles**

**Still, Peter was afraid of The Circumcision Christians. Most Christians, at that time, were Jews. In Antioch, they came together in a gathering where The Circumcised Jews**

(A Tribe of Israel) and Gentiles (the rest of the world, The Uncircumcised) were both in attendance.

Peter would not have anything to do with The Gentiles, so Paul stood up and told him off by saying, “<sup>14</sup>*If you, being a Jew, live after the manner of Gentiles.*” So, Peter, himself, was not following The Gospel of The Circumcision. He was following The Gospel of The Uncircumcised in his Christian life. In essence, Paul asked, “*How can you, Peter, be like that?*” Peter was afraid to talk to The Gentiles when The Circumcised Jews were around – but, in *private*, he would live just like The Gospel of The Uncircumcised (to The Gentiles). Peter was humbled by the incident and accepted Paul’s admonition. Now, understand this piece of the puzzle. Essentially, Paul was saying, “*Look, there are two gospels.*” There is The Gospel of Circumcision (to Israel) and there is The Gospel of The Uncircumcised (to The Gentiles). One requires you to be circumcised because it has *great meaning* for Israel. But, in 70 A.D., the temple was destroyed by Titus, Emperor of Rome, which ended The Gospel of Circumcision or *The Old Covenant* (Hebrews 8:13).

## Decision From Jerusalem

After the matter was discussed, The Apostles got together and concluded, “*Paul, they don’t have to be circumcised; you are doing the right thing. Only remember the poor.*”

James 1:26-27 <sup>26</sup>If any man among you seem to be religious and bridles not his tongue, but deceives his own heart, this man’s religion is vain. <sup>27</sup>Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To



visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

During the 15 days, Paul spoke not only to Peter but to James also. You will find what true Christian religion really is (James 1:26). The Jewish religion is The Gospel of The Circumcision (Works of *The Law*). However, Christianity, The Gospel of The Uncircumcised, is *not* a religion (Colossians 1:27 and Colossians 2:3,8). The Gospel of The Circumcision is a Jewish religion based on *works*. The Apostle James tells you about the only types of works that Christians should perform. Any other works carry a *curse* because they are man-made religions. If your religion is based on works, then you *must* keep every bit of *The Law* so as not to be under the curse (James 2:10). “<sup>26</sup>*If any man among you seem to be religious.*” The Greek definition of “*religion*” means “*ceremonial*” or “*pious.*”

How do you conduct yourself? Is it piously? How do you appear physically *pious*? Humanity as a whole, and Christians in particular, can appear pious or religious. They may observe Easter, with its eggs and rabbits or keep Christmas, with its decorated tree and giving presents among themselves. Or, they could remove all leavened bread from their houses during The Days of Unleavened Bread. It could be the taking of the barley (wheat) harvest and bringing it on Pentecost. All of these practices represent The Gospel of Circumcision (which demand human works). These are the only works that some Christians think they should do *religiously*.

These are *outward works* that other people may see you do in your religious practice. James said, “*Look I will show*

*you my faith by my works. Faith without works is dead.”* What type of works should there be? “<sup>26</sup>*If any man among you seem to be religious [piously acting like a Christian] and bridles not his tongue, but deceives his own heart, this man's religion is vain.* [This show of piety is vain. Rather] <sup>27</sup>*Pure religion”* is something else.

James 1:27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

## Man-Made Religions

Man-made religions allow a person to *show* his/her religion by *going to church, tithing, keeping pagan holidays* and doing all sorts of *physical works*. They use human effort to try and prove their *individual righteousness* to themselves, others and their God. During The Middle Ages, The Catholics were selling bones and relics to gain access to The Kingdom of God. Martin Luther was disturbed because everything had to do with what you *appeared* to do *righteously* before God. These were *works* that man did of his own accord in order to be a Christian.

It bothered Martin Luther so much that he broke off and split into Protestantism. So, the world ended up with hundreds of different denominations of Protestantism, while The Jews comprise The Orthodox, Reformed and Conservative groups. Each group continually divides and splits. The reason there are so many Judeo/Christian denominations is because they are all *based on human works*. This is mankind showing his own form of *righteousness* – not

Christ's (Matthew 6:33). Every religious argument concerns what you do or don't do and it is all based upon what seems right in a person's own eyes.

## Fatherless And Widows

James says very plainly that if you want to be a Christian with pure religion (which is undefiled and not corrupted), then you must "*visit the fatherless and widows.*" So, a Christian's obligation is to take care of the orphans and widows (they have no inheritance). Many widows and orphans have no one to lean upon. Paul was told to remember the poor; this is true Christian work. This is a physical activity that a Christian must do. The words, "*in their affliction,*" apply to those who do not have their needs cared for. It goes on, "*and to keep himself unspotted from the world.*" As a Christian, to show true Christianity, you must control your mouth. Stop judging people and stop accusing others. Be forgiving, as Christ was. Take care of the poor. Don't steal or covet. Don't be idolatrous and don't kill. Keep yourself from sinning. That is it. *There are no other physical religious requirements.* There are no other works. Ultimately, *agàpè* (love) fulfills all of God's works.

Mark 10:17 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running and kneeled to him and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

Christ was asked a very significant question, "<sup>17</sup>*What must I do to inherit eternal life?*" Christ said, "*Keep the commandments and do not sin.*" Do you believe Jesus?

## The Sabbath Shadow

The Sabbath is the only *Commandment* that doesn't tell you what sin is. It is *a shadow* of something to come. Christians keep The Sabbath by doing *good works*, just as Christ did. If you love God (keeping the first three *Commandments*), then you will love your neighbor as yourself. So in this sense, The Sabbath is *The Gospel*. The Sabbath Rest is *The Gospel*. Again, consider that as a Christian, from a standpoint of works, what must you do? The answer is to control your mouth, give to the poor and don't sin. That is it!

Mark 10:20-21 <sup>20</sup>And he answered and said to him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth. <sup>21</sup>Then Jesus beholding him loved him and said to him, One thing you lack: go your way, sell whatsoever you have and give to the poor and you shall have treasure in heaven: and come, take up your cross and follow me.

The rich man said, “<sup>20</sup>*Master, all these have I observed from my youth.*” Christ loved him because the man did not sin. The rich man added, “*What do I lack?*” Did Christ ask if he removed the leavened bread from his house during Unleavened Bread Days? Did Christ inquire if he went to a temporary house during The Feast of Tabernacles? Did Christ ask if he kept Easter or Christmas *Holy*? *No!* Instead Christ said, “<sup>21</sup>*sell whatsoever you have and give it to the poor.*” Christian works are equal to *don't accuse, help the poor and don't sin!*

Luke 19:1-9 <sup>1</sup>And Jesus entered and passed through

Jericho. <sup>2</sup>And, behold, there was a man named Zacchaeus, which was the chief among the publicans and he was rich. <sup>3</sup>And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. <sup>4</sup>And he ran before and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way. <sup>5</sup>And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up and saw him and said to him, Zacchaeus, make haste and come down; for to day I must abide at your house. <sup>6</sup>And he made haste and came down and received him joyfully. <sup>7</sup>And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. <sup>8</sup>And Zacchaeus stood and said to the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold. <sup>9</sup>And Jesus said to him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a son of Abraham.

### The Rich Publican

In Luke 19:1-9, Christ went to a rich publican's house. The rich man, Zacchaeus, gave *half of his wealth to the poor* and if any thought he was dishonest, Zacchaeus said he would give back four times the amount. Christ said this man had *Salvation* (Luke 19:9). *No other works were required of him.* Do you believe Jesus Christ?

Galatians 2:15-21 <sup>15</sup>We who are Jews by nature and not sinners of the Gentiles, <sup>16</sup>Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ and

not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. <sup>17</sup>But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid. <sup>18</sup>For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. <sup>19</sup>For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live to God. <sup>20</sup>I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ lives in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. <sup>21</sup>I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

**You should know what Christianity is. First, it is not a religion. It's not the keeping of days or years or physical things that people do. It really only entails *spiritual change*.**

**Christ said that Christians should worship God *spiritually* and not with physical works (John 4)! When you get down to *The Gospel*, it is all about The Kingdom of God. Most Christians don't know what The Kingdom of God is. "<sup>15</sup>*We who are Jews by nature and not sinners of the Gentiles.*" The Jews, by keeping *The Law*, were not sinners like The Gentiles who did not know *The Law*. "<sup>16</sup>*Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law.*" You are not forgiven of your sins by keeping any *physical Works* of The Law, but rather, "*by the faith of Jesus Christ even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ.*" Paul said this for a specific reason. He did it to show *the promise* of *The Gospel* although there are still two *gospels* – old and new. The Jews (The Cir-**

cumcision) had a different *gospel* than The Gentiles (The Uncircumcision) who did not have to keep *The Letter of The Law*.

### How To Read *The Book Of Galatians*

Many Christians read *Galatians* and think Paul was only saying they shouldn't be *circumcised*. Not so. Circumcision is just *the beginning of the works*. In Acts 15, Circumcision and *The Law of Moses* are not required. The word "works" is plural. It is "ergon" in Greek – which is "any type of religious work" whether paganism, *The Babylon Mystery System* or even of *The Law of Moses*, "<sup>16</sup>And not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified." People know they are not justified by the works of *The Law*. They are *justified* by the death of Christ. So, why do they perform *The Works of The Law*? It is not *merely* justification but much more. Instead, if you do the works of *The Law*, you are under a *curse*.

Paul explained that those who preach *the gospel* of works should be accursed. If you do *The Works of The Law*, then you are under a curse. This includes any works, aside from the ones that James said Gentile Christians should perform. If one believes that *Works of God's Law* are required to please God, then that person is under the curse. Why is this? It is because no one can keep *The Whole Law*.

If you keep *any part* of *The Law*, you must *keep it all* or else you are under the curse (James 2:10). "<sup>17</sup>*But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God for-*

*bid.*” As a Christian (with The Mind of God), you do not sin. The act of not sinning is a rare act of piety. Humans cannot stop from sinning. Controlling your mouth and giving to the poor is *true piety*. Humans must give to the needy. Paul said, “<sup>18</sup>*For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.*” When Christ was crucified, all your sins were forgiven.

### Sin After Forgiveness?

Do you want to begin sinning again after you have been forgiven? The answer should be “*no.*” You should not sin. So, this is not talking about the part of *The Law* that tells you what *sin* is. It is talking about that part of *The Law* that concerns physical works of piety. It is a monumental difference! “<sup>18</sup>*For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.*” If you go *backward* and *start sinning again*, you will be guilty again. You are perverting *The True Gospel* by going backward. “<sup>19</sup>*for I through the law am dead to the law [do not sin any more] that I might live to God [striving to be like God].* <sup>20</sup>*I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I.*”

Now, if a Christian is *dead* to *The Law*, then it means you can't do any *works*. If you are *living in the flesh* and *doing human works*, then Christ is not living “*In You.*” If you do human works as an act of righteousness or piety, then Christ was not crucified for you. Paul said that this was like “*dung*” (Philippians 3)! However, he said, “*But Christ lives in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh [as a human being] I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.*” Now the whole answer is, “<sup>21</sup>*I do not frustrate the grace of God.*” These people were



depending upon *The Works of The Law*, such as building huge churches, beautiful edifices and creating pictures, statues and rosaries. It would include Monks going into caves and attempting to deny themselves. This concerns Christians following The Jewish religion or Christians following The Jewish Works of *The Law*.

### Admonition Of Pharisees

Remember, Christ's admonition about The Pharisees and Sadducees. Most Christians act like The Pharisees and Sadducees but do not know it. Jesus said, "*You are like white sepulchres.*" You look good on the outside but on the inside, you are full of dead men's bones. On the outside, you look very religious. You go to church and try to keep the days and the months *Holy* in the best way you can. You pray over the food, even in a restaurant, for the world to see *your piety*. Christ said, "*Your left hand is not to know what your right hand is doing.*"

Don't advertise your *religious deeds* by being so pious. When you fast, anoint yourself and look as if you are not fasting. When you give to the poor, make sure no one knows about it. When you pray, do it in a closet. This is another distinction. This is the difference between *man-made Christianity* and those who want to follow Christ.

One method has human works with traditions, just as though one is acting in *a religious play*. The Pharisees and Sadducees had their traditional oral laws and *The Law of Moses*, which also had *works*. The other method is to follow God who will lead you to *Salvation* into The Kingdom of God.

Then, “<sup>21</sup>*for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.*” Whether you keep pagan days, Jewish religious works or if you keep *The Works of The Law* – it is “*all in vain.*” To Christ, it doesn't mean anything and the sadness of it all is that many *so-called Christians* don't understand *The True Gospel*.

Galatians 3:1-10 <sup>1</sup>O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ has been evidently set forth, crucified among you? <sup>2</sup>This only would I learn of you, Received you the Spirit by the works of the law or by the hearing of faith? <sup>3</sup>Are you so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are you now made perfect by the flesh? <sup>4</sup>Have you suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain. <sup>5</sup>He therefore that ministers to you the Spirit and works miracles among you, does he it by the works of the law or by the hearing of faith? <sup>6</sup>Even as Abraham believed God and it was accounted to him for righteousness. <sup>7</sup>Know you therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. <sup>8</sup>And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel to Abraham, saying, In you shall all nations be blessed. <sup>9</sup>So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. <sup>10</sup>For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continues not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them [not the oral law of Jewish traditions].

You must look at all the pieces of the puzzle to find *The Real Gospel*. Paul asked The Galatians, “<sup>1</sup>*Who has be-*

*witched you?”* Who has confused and brainwashed you? Was it a promise that was given as *a gift* or was there something you had *to do* to get it? “<sup>3</sup>*Are you so foolish?”* Only The Spirit of God teaches you. You never learn by doing *works*.

When you throw leavened bread out of your house during The Days of Unleavened Bread, can this make you perfect? Do you need to throw out leavened bread to remind you that you are a sinner? Has The Spirit of God revealed this to you? Do you think that, when you make a temporary dwelling at The Feast of Tabernacles, it can make you perfect? Can any of these works lead you to *perfection*?

### Pagan Holidays

When you keep Christmas or Easter, does it make you like Christ? “*O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you, <sup>4</sup>Have you suffered so many things in vain?* [Many were persecuted and crucified. Simply stated, God’s *Spirit* teaches you how to please God]. *<sup>6</sup>Even as Abraham believed God and it was accounted to him for righteousness.* [This is how Abraham kept *The Law* in God’s eyes]. *<sup>7</sup>Know you therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. <sup>8</sup>And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel to Abraham.”*

You must go back to The Abrahamic Covenant when Abraham received *The True Gospel*. “<sup>8</sup>*Before the gospel to Abraham, saying, in you shall all nations be blessed.*” This passage is a promise that *all* nations will be saved. *All nations* are going to be blessed with *this Gospel* – period.

## The Abrahamic Promise

Galatians 3:9-10 <sup>9</sup>So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. <sup>10</sup>For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written [that is the reason Paul said] Cursed be everyone who follows this perverse gospel.

Everyone who is “*of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continues not in all things, which are written in the book of the law to do them.*” Do not miss this important admonition. If it is a requirement to perform *The Works of The Law* in order to be a Christian, then you must do *every work* of *The Law*. The list includes sacrifice, circumcision, leavening removal, wave sheaf offering, putting blood on doorposts and not touching unclean animals. You must keep every part of *The Law* or you are accursed (Galatians 3:10). So states God's *word!* Do you believe God's *word?*

Men must be circumcised because that was *the first work*. You must put yourself in the company of Israel by performing sacrifices, washings, observing The Holy Days, The Sabbath, the new moons and all the other things they did. Ask yourselves, why would you put leavened bread out of the house but not put blood on your doorpost? On the second day, during The Week of Unleavened Bread, you should take the wave sheaf offering and offer it to The Father. Why don't people take the firstfruits and offer it at Pentecost? Why don't people blow trumpets or fast on The Day of Atonement? Why not go to a place of temporary dwelling during The Feast of Tabernacles? If you do *one* of these works, you're obligated to do all of

them. This is *scripturally* plain and direct! “*Know you therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham*” (Galatians 3). It is not by *The Works of The Law*.

## A Subject Greater Than Circumcision

This subject is far greater than The Circumcision. It has to do with *all The Works of The Law*. It covers every part of *The Law*. You cannot miss any one of *the works*. If you tithe, you had better do *The Whole Law*. This is one of the many reasons why you shouldn't tithe to the ministry. If you tithe, you had better read Malachi 3. The reason you tithe is so you will be physically blessed and your storehouses can be full. But, those who follow Christ are under a completely different blessing. It is a totally different system of doing *the work* based on need.

Galatians 3:8-10 <sup>8</sup>And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel to Abraham, saying, In you shall all nations be blessed. <sup>9</sup>So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. <sup>10</sup>For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continues not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith.

You may say you know you are not justified by *The Law*, but *Scripture* says that if you *don't do every part of The Law*, you are *cursed*. Why? It is because you are rejecting

**Christ's sacrifice.** You are rejecting what *The Law shadows* – Christ (Hebrews 10:1-2 and John 5:46). *The Works of The Law* point to Christ. This is the reason you don't sacrifice animals. You don't put leavened bread out of your house because you, yourself, are to be unleavened. You don't offer *the wave sheaf* during Unleavened Bread because Christ was already accepted by The Father. You don't give *the first fruits of the harvest* at Pentecost because the church has already received God's *Spirit*. If you study *The Scriptures* and put each piece together, you can assemble the puzzle and work towards *perfection*. Otherwise you can attempt to do *the works* that only make you look pious and ultimately result in *a curse*.

Galatians 3:11-16 <sup>11</sup>But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith. <sup>12</sup>And the law is not of faith: but, The man that does them shall live in them. <sup>13</sup>Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangs on a tree: <sup>14</sup>That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. <sup>15</sup>Brethren, I speak after the manner of man; Though it be but a man's Covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulls or adds thereto. <sup>16</sup>Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He said not And to seeds, as of many; but as of one And to your seed, which is Christ.

## Curse Of The Law

If Christ has *redeemed* you from the curse, you are not re-

quired to do any of *the works*, “*Being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangs on a tree: <sup>14</sup>That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles. [Salvation will come to the rest of the world] Through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.*” A man’s agreement is a contract between human beings. It is signed by both individuals and “*No man disannulls or adds thereto.* [Human physical contracts are binding]. <sup>16</sup>*Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made.*” This is *a covenant and a contract.* Part of The Abrahamic Covenant is a contract and part of it is *a promise with no conditions except faith.* “*Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made.*”

The blessings for all nations is a promise, “*He said not. And to seeds, as of many; but as of one* [so Abraham had *The Gospel of Jesus Christ* preached to him] *And to your seed, which is Christ.*” In summary, there are two types of gospels: 1) The Circumcision based on *works* and 2) The Uncircumcision which is not based on *works.* *The only human works* you are to do as a Christian is to keep your mouth shut, don’t sin, help others and give to the poor. That is your piety. That is your *life’s work.* That is it, in a nutshell.

Genesis 12:1-3 <sup>1</sup>Now the LORD had said to Abram, Get you out of your country and from your kindred and from your father’s house, to a land that I will show you: <sup>2</sup>And I will make of you a great nation and I will bless you and make your name great; and you shall be a blessing: <sup>3</sup>And I will bless them that bless you and curse him that curses you: and in you shall all families of the earth be blessed.

In The Abrahamic Covenant, Abraham was given 1) *Physical Promises* and 2) *Spiritual Promises*. Abraham is told to leave his country and go into a new land. The very first book, *Genesis*, begins to tell you about *The Gospel*. In *Galatians*, Paul said this was *The Gospel*. “<sup>1</sup>Now the LORD had said to Abram, Get you out of your country and from your kindred and from your father's house, to a land that I will show you: <sup>2</sup>And I will make of you a great nation. [This is a *physical promise* not a *spiritual promise*]. <sup>3</sup>And I will bless you.” And, Abraham prospered.

## Genesis 49

You are told that Abraham's seed (all of his children) would prosper and be blessed. This is an amazing *promise*. When you see wealthy nations prospering today, it is because they are the children of Abraham. “<sup>3</sup>And I will bless you and make your name great: and you shall be a blessing. [Although this is directly out of Galatians 3:8, these are all physical blessings]. *And I will bless them that bless you and curse him that curses you: and in you shall all families of the earth be blessed.*” This is a *spiritual blessing*. In *Galatians*, Paul is talking about Christ and not about *circumcision*. Now, you will understand, in greater degree, the time when *circumcision* became important.

Genesis 17:1-8 <sup>1</sup>And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram and said to him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me and be you perfect. <sup>2</sup>And I will make my Covenant between me and you and will multiply you exceedingly. <sup>3</sup>And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, <sup>4</sup>As for me, behold, my Covenant is with you



and you shall be a father of many nations. <sup>5</sup>Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made you. <sup>6</sup>And I will make you exceeding fruitful and I will make nations of you and kings shall come out of you. <sup>7</sup>And I will establish my Covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting Covenant, to be a God to you and to your seed after you. <sup>8</sup>And I will give to you and to your seed after you, the land wherein you are a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.

Abraham was 75 years old when he left The Babylonian area and was 99 years old when this covenant was made. Perfection was required of Abraham and *perfection* is required of True Christians who understand *the truth*. Jesus Christ said, “*Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect*” (Matthew 5:48). Abraham was promised that, through his seed, he would be made into many nations. His *previous promise* was about blessings. Now, God’s *covenant* says, “*And I will make my covenant between me and you and will multiply you exceedingly. <sup>3</sup>And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, <sup>4</sup>As for me, behold, my covenant is with you and you shall be a father of many nations.*” This literally means physical nations throughout the ages.

## In The Beginning

In the beginning, *The Gospel* was preached to Adam and Eve, but they *blew it*. Adam, who was the first type of Christ, could have been *the father* of all nations. All na-

tions would have been blessed and Eve would have been *the mother* of all nations. Instead, she was replaced by Sarah. These were *the physical promises* made. “<sup>7</sup>*And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting Covenant, to be a God to you and to your seed after you* [this refers to the physical Kingdom of God]. <sup>8</sup>*And I will give to you and to your seed after you, the land* [Abraham was promised The Land of Canaan in this Covenant]. *Wherein you are a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.*”

*The role of circumcision* now comes into play.

Genesis 17:9-12 <sup>9</sup>And God said to Abraham, You shall keep my Covenant therefore, you and your seed after you in their generations. <sup>10</sup>This is my covenant, which you shall keep, between me and you and your seed after you; Every man child among you shall be circumcised. <sup>11</sup>And you shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token of the covenant betwixt me and you. <sup>12</sup>And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of your seed.

*No circumcision* was mentioned when *the spiritual blessing* was given to Abraham and his future nations (Genesis 12). All he had to do was have *the faith* to leave his country, “<sup>9</sup>*And God said to Abraham, You shall keep my covenant therefore.* [What is that *covenant*?] <sup>10</sup>*This is my covenant, which you shall keep.*” This is the reason The

Jews wanted to be *circumcised*. It concerns, “*Between me and you and your seed after you; every man child among you shall be circumcised.*”

This is *The Covenant of Circumcision*, or The Gospel of Circumcision. Israel thought The Abrahamic Covenant came through *The Law*. It was a physical government. It had to do with the land, which was The Land of Canaan. It concerned *the nations, kings and kingdoms*, “<sup>11</sup>*And you shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token.*” This is the signature of *the covenant* between God and Abraham. Paul said that a human contract, if it is signed and confirmed, could *not* be broken. “*And he that is eight days old.*”

## Covenant When Christ Returns

*This same covenant* will be enforced when Christ *returns* and Israel enters the land that Christ restores during The Millennium (study Ezekiel 36-48). The Eighth Day shadows The Day of Judgment when *all* will be *saved*. That is why The Jews were *circumcised* on The Eighth Day, as it was The Day of Release. This is God’s Jubilee.

“<sup>12</sup>*And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of your seed.*” This is The Covenant of Circumcision. This is why The Jewish Christians were telling The Gentile Christians they had to be *circumcised*. As a sign, *circumcision* gave Israel *the promise*. They understood how *the promises* came through circumcision in The Abrahamic Covenant. *The promise* to Abraham was very

logical because they all understood *the promises* of Christ. Through *this covenant* came *the promises, blessings and prosperity of the physical Kingdom of God*.

As time went on, King David and King Solomon became rulers over the leading nations in the world. Different kings governed many nations and, in Solomon's time, they were prosperous beyond belief. *Those promises* were a blessing, not only to Israel, but to everyone. However, they refused to enter into God's *rest*.

When did *that rest* begin? It started on The Seventh Day with Adam and Eve. Just as Adam and Eve wanted to decide for themselves, the people wanted to decide for themselves what was *right* and *wrong*. They did not follow *The Will of God*. Adam and Eve could have taken fruit from The Tree of Life. But, because they did not, they could not enter God's *rest*. Neither David nor Solomon entered into God's *rest*. David was, indeed, *faithful* and will be in The Kingdom of God. However, The Tribes of Israel (as a nation) will not. They will be *saved later* (Romans 11).

## The Christian Promise

Genesis 22:1-2 <sup>1</sup>And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham and said, to him, Abraham: and he said, Behold, here I am. <sup>2</sup>And he said, Take now your son, your only son Isaac, whom you love and get you into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell you of.

Examine *the promise*. It is based on the great test of Abra-

ham, “<sup>1</sup>*And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham.*” This was Abraham’s ultimate test. *The only work* that Abraham had to perform was to be obedient to God. Remember that *The Gospel* was already preached to Abraham. Now, something is to be *added* to this gospel, “<sup>2</sup>*And he said, Take now your son, your only son Isaac, whom you love and get you into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell you of.*”

### Sacrifice Of Isaac

Abraham took his son Isaac to a special mountain. Isaac could have been between 21 to 33 years of age, just as Christ was at His death. No one knows exactly. Isaac asked, “*Father, where is the offering?*” Abraham said, “*Lay down on the altar as the sacrifice.*” And Isaac said “*Yes, father.*” So he laid himself down to be killed. It was a matter of faith in God. Later, Christ said to His Father, “*Yes, Father, not my will be done, but your will be done.*” Abraham had to have *the faith* to believe and trust God.

Abraham believed that if he killed Isaac, then Isaac would be immediately resurrected. He trusted God enough to know that if he gave his only son (as God would give His only Son), then the son would be resurrected. Abraham understood absolutely and believed fully. He had total *faith* that Isaac would be *resurrected*.

Genesis 22:15-18 <sup>15</sup>And the angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of heaven the second time, <sup>16</sup>And said, By myself have I sworn, said the LORD, for because you have done this thing and have not withheld your

son, your only son: <sup>17</sup>That in blessing I will bless you and in multiplying I will multiply your seed as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; <sup>18</sup>And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice.

Notice that “<sup>15</sup>*the angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of heaven the second time.*” The first time, it was a *physical covenant* with physical promises of prosperity. God is affirming all this. Remember how *The Law* requires *two witnesses*. The two witnesses here are 1) God and 2) the fact that God *cannot lie*. Combined, these are *the two witnesses*, “*By myself have I sworn, said the LORD, for because you have done this thing.*” *The covenant is past history*. Abraham's *covenant with circumcision* is also *past history*.

*The covenant with Abraham was based upon physical promises, which were The Land of Canaan, kingship, nations and prosperity. Then God said, “<sup>17</sup>That in blessing I will bless you and in multiplying I will multiply your seed as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is upon the sea shore [this is the whole world]. <sup>18</sup>And your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies [Israel will be the gatekeeper in New Jerusalem]. And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice.”*

## Abrahamic Covenant

The Abrahamic Covenant had two parts: 1) a *physical part* that required *circumcision* or *physical works* and 2) a *spiritual part* which never required works (absolutely

*no works*). There is a great difference between the two. Even The Apostles were confused until Paul explained it to them. Paul was able to explain it because he learned it from Christ, Himself.

Mark 1:1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ,  
the Son of God.

Why are *The First Four Books of The New Testament* called *The Gospels*? One important clue lies in the words, “<sup>1</sup>*The beginning of the gospel.*” The word “gospel” in Greek is “*euaggelion.*” “*Euaggelion*” means “good news” or “angelic message from God.” The word “evangelist” comes from the word “angel.” “*Evangelism*” is “the good news” or “angelic message” from God. Remember that angels are God’s *messengers* to all mankind.

This is the beginning of the good news or the angelic message from God about Jesus Christ. *The four gospels* are all different and are, indeed, true *gospels*. In the beginning, *Matthew* deals with the genealogy of Christ. This shows Christ’s *inheritance* of *The Gospel*. Through *the promise of the inheritance* (Abraham’s seed), Christ had a right to the good news. *Jesus is The Good News.*

## Luke’s Account

Luke’s *Gospel* gives you the instructions for how Christians are supposed to live. John’s *Gospel* is different. In John 1:1, “*In the beginning was the word.*” Mark’s *Gospel* starts with the beginning of The Good News of Christ. John’s *Gospel* proves The Kingdom Message is from The Word of God – or God’s *word*.

**I Peter 5:13** The church that is at Babylon, elected together with you, salutes you; and so does Marcus my son.

**Mark was a relative of Peter's.** Peter regarded him as a son. Peter used Mark as a scribe at times. Here is his account.

**Mark 1:14-15** <sup>14</sup>Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God. <sup>15</sup>And saying, The time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent you and believe the gospel.

**John 6:29** Jesus answered and said to them, This is the work of God, that you believe on him whom he has sent.

*The Gospel* is The Angelic Good News about Christ. It is important for you to believe what Christ, Himself said as The Word of God! His ministry started in Mark 1, “<sup>14</sup>Now after that John was put in prison.” This completed John, The Baptist's work. John, The Baptist will be *the best man* in the marriage between Christ and His Bride. John prepared the way for The Bridegroom. “*Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God. And saying, The time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand.*” The Covenant of Abraham had all the clues foretelling about *The Gospel*. But, to inherit certain rights in that *gospel*, you had to be *circumcised*. Now, a *different gospel* is presented, “<sup>15</sup>*God is at hand: repent you* [He is not asking you to be *circumcised* but rather asking you to] *repent you and believe the gospel.*”



Two things are required:

- 1) Have *a change of mind* to follow God's *will* and,
- 2) Have faith that God will *see to fruition all His promises*. Abraham had *that faith*. Abraham showed his *faith* by offering his son, Isaac. For that faith, he received *the promise of Eternal Life*.

Acts 1:4-6 <sup>4</sup>And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which said he, you have heard of me. <sup>5</sup>For John truly baptized with water; but you shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. <sup>6</sup>When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, will you at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?

### Apostles Assembled

All The Apostles were gathered together with Jesus Christ (Acts 1). Christ was teaching them during the forty days and forty nights prior to His ascension.

*“<sup>4</sup>And, being assembled together with them, [He, Christ] commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which said he, you have heard of me. <sup>5</sup>For John truly baptized with water; but you shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. <sup>6</sup>When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, will you at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?”*

The Apostles didn't know *The True Gospel* at that time. All they knew was The Gospel of Circumcision (about the physical kingdom). They knew The Abrahamic Covenant had promised The Land of Canaan, *the kings* and *the prosperity*. *But that was all they knew*. This belief continued until Paul had received his instructions from Christ (Galatians 3:16). Prior to that, no one knew *The True Gospel*. Paul said, "*He said not And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to your seed, which is Christ.*" Paul understood *the spiritual promise* of Jesus Christ and *The Gospel* of The Kingdom of God when Isaac was offered. Clearly, there is a great difference between these parts of *The Gospel*. *The Works of The Law* are still *meaningless* and *useless* today.

Galatians 4:10-11 <sup>10</sup>You observe days and months and times and years. <sup>11</sup>I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

Paul explains very plainly, "<sup>10</sup>*You observe days and months and times and years.*" Is he talking about pagan days? No, he is not. They had already *left those days*. But then, they returned to *the beggarly elements of days and years* again. These are just different days. Paul said, "<sup>11</sup>*I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.*" Specifically, this tells you all about *the sacrifice* of Isaac and the life of Hagar and Ishmael. It also tells you about the difference between *the physical part* and *the spiritual part* of The Abrahamic Covenant.

Galatians 4:19-25 <sup>19</sup>My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you, <sup>20</sup>I desire to be present with you now and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you. <sup>21</sup>Tell me, you

that desire to be under the law, do you not hear the law? <sup>22</sup>For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. <sup>23</sup>But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. <sup>24</sup>Which things are an allegory: for these are the two Covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar. <sup>25</sup>For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children.

Paul addresses these people as, “<sup>19</sup>*My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you.* [He was angry and said] *For I stand in doubt of you.*” They were tithing, taking leavening out of their houses and running off to build a temporary dwelling. “<sup>21</sup>*Tell me, you that desire to be under the law, do you not hear the law?*” He wants mankind to know what *The Law* is in *Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy*.

These are The Five Books of *The Old Testament*. “*For the law having a shadow of good things to come and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices, which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect*” (Hebrews 10:1).

## Two Sons Of Abraham

Paul says, “<sup>22</sup>*For it is written, that Abraham had two sons* [This text brings you back to The Abrahamic Covenant. Regarding the two sons, he said] *The one by a bondwoman* [slave] *the other by a freewoman.* [However, there are problems] <sup>23</sup>*But he who was of the bondwoman was born after*

*the flesh* [by human effort] *but he of the freewoman was by promise.* [This was a *miracle* and a *gift*. The promise to Isaac was that he was born *free*. Then, the clarification] <sup>24</sup>*Which things are an allegory*" (Galatians 4:22-24). There are two different types. Hagar through Ishmael is one while Sarah through Isaac is another.

Remember, (humanly and metaphorically speaking) Abraham was like God, The Father and Isaac was like The Son, Jesus Christ. Hagar also signifies (in duality) one thing and Ishmael signifies another. *The Holy Scriptures* tell you what each means, "*For these are the two covenants* [in Israel, this included *The Law of Moses*, because they were unconverted] *the one from the Mount Sinai* [*The Law of Moses*], *Which genders to bondage, which is Agar* [Hagar] <sup>25</sup>*For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children.*" He is talking about Jerusalem in his day. There was a *temple*, The Holy Place, wherein dwelt *The Shekinah*, which is The Glory of God. In order for God to stay with them, be their God and have *the promises* according to Abraham, they were required to do all *The Works of The Law*. *The temple* was the center for performing *The Works of The Law*!

It seems ludicrous to have to throw leavened bread out and bring in barley harvests *forever* in order to become a Son of God. It even sounds funny when you say it that way. Paul says, "<sup>25</sup>*For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children*" (Galatians 4:25). They are in slavery. *The Law* intended *those works* to be a *form of slavery*. *Those works* were only to *bring them to Christ*. They were

in slavery when they had to do *all The Law!* This was only supposed to last until the appointed time.

## Bondage Of Works

The bondage of *The Works of The Law* reminds the people of their sin. That was The Jewish Religion based on *The Law of Moses*. The Jewish *form of piety* was based on *the physical promises* of The Abrahamic Covenant which required the men to be *circumcised*. You could not miss any of *the works*, because if you missed one, you would be *under the curse*, which meant *Christ's sacrifice* was in vain.

Can you now understand why Paul was so angry? It should make all of you angry to have been fooled by your so-called Christian leaders! Paul said, "*Be you angry and sin not*" (Ephesians 4:26). What is *The Gospel* and what is *The Kingdom*? "*26But Jerusalem which is above is free*" (Galatians 4:26). Freedom means that no one has the authority to tell you what to do, physically, to receive *the promise*. That is why God had to *write His laws in your heart and mind* or *change your nature*. There is *no need for anyone* to tell you what Works of *The Law* you need to do (Romans 2:12-29). Through God's Spirit, you will not deliberately sin. If you slip, you will repent and, with God's help, you sin no more.

"*The law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient*" (I Timothy 1:9). You only *need The Law* when you are unrighteous and a sinner. You must have a *schoolmaster*, which is *The Law*, to remind you to be like Christ! "*26But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.*" Indeed, the pieces of the

puzzle are now showing *a more complete picture of The Plan of God.*

## Sin Added The Law

Galatians 3:17-22 <sup>17</sup>And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. <sup>18</sup>For if the inheritance be of the law it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise. <sup>19</sup>Wherefore then serves the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. <sup>20</sup>Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. <sup>21</sup>Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. <sup>22</sup>But the scripture has concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

*The purpose of The Law is told to you in Galatians 3:17. The Law is Holy, it is just and it is good. No one should be against it, “<sup>17</sup>And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.” Keeping The Works of The Law doesn't change anything in the promise. It is a complete gift.*

Christ said, “*not one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass*

*from the law, till all be fulfilled*” (Matthew 5:17-19). That is, until God’s *plan* is completed. “<sup>19</sup>*Wherefore then serves the law?*” He is not talking about sin, rather he is talking about *The Works of The Law*. “*It was added, because of transgressions.*” This was until a point in time when *The Letter of The Law ceases*.

## Why The Law Was Given

So, *The Law* was given to allow you, a sinner and a transgressor, to be able to come to Christ. *The Law* allowed you to understand that you were a sinner but when Christ came, He bought you with the payment of His death. *The Works of The Law* are no longer required. Christ came, died and was resurrected. *New Christians*, who understand this, can skip *The Works of The Law completely*.

Romans 4:20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God.

*Romans* tells you that *The Law* was made because all are sinners (Romans 5:20). To inherit The Kingdom of God, Christ said you must *repent* and *believe The Gospel*. Jesus Christ plainly tells you what The Kingdom of God is.

Matthew 18:1-4 <sup>1</sup>At the same time came the disciples to Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? <sup>2</sup>And Jesus called a little child to him and set him in the midst of them. <sup>3</sup>And said, Verily I say to you, Except you be converted and become as little children, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. <sup>4</sup>Whosoever therefore shall humble himself

as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

When *The Bible* was divided into chapters and verses, a great deal of meaning was lost. When the context does not flow, the message does not progress in the proper, continuous manner.

## Kingdom Of God

The subject here is The Kingdom of God. Notice, it is also called *The Kingdom of Heaven*. Where is New Jerusalem? Is it in Heaven? Christians misuse *this Scripture* to say that you can and will go to heaven. No! It says "*kingdom of heaven.*" It doesn't say "*kingdom in heaven.*" It is *The Kingdom of Heaven*. Don't you pray, "*Your kingdom come your will be done on earth as it is in heaven?*" This will be done *on earth*. This is another piece of the puzzle, "*2And Jesus called a little child to him and set him in the midst of them. 3And said, Verily I say to you, Except you be converted and become as little children, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. 4Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.*" To enter God's *kingdom*, you must be *humble* and *innocent* like a little child. You must be open, teachable and seek God's *will*. "*Repentance*" is "*a change of mind.*"

God's *word* tells you how to change. Don't let the ideas of men tell you what you should do. This concerns the example of the converted.

Matthew 18:10-14 <sup>10</sup>Take heed that you despise not



one of these little ones; for I say to you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>11</sup>For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. <sup>12</sup>How think you? If a man have a hundred sheep and one of them be gone astray, does he not leave the ninety and nine and goes into the mountains and seeks that which is gone astray? <sup>13</sup>And if so be that he find it, verily I say to you, he rejoices more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. <sup>14</sup>Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

## Save The Whole World

God's *will* is to save the whole world. When you honestly and sincerely *repent*, you are *saved*. You will not be lost. Compare what it means to be *lost* and what it means to be *restored*. This word "*saved*" in Greek means "*restore*." What must be restored is that which *was lost*.

Genesis 3:22-24 <sup>22</sup>And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life and eat and live for ever: <sup>23</sup>Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. <sup>24</sup>So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.

After Adam and Eve sinned in The Garden of Eden, God said, "*Behold, the man is become as one of us.*" God was

not talking to Himself. He was talking to everybody in heaven (who is like you), including The Sons of God, The 24 Elders and *the angels*. They all look like you.

God said, "*The man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, less he put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life and eat and live for ever.*" The Tree of Life was lost. Christ came to restore the opportunity to receive *Eternal Life*. "<sup>23</sup>*Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. <sup>24</sup>So he drove out the man: and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.*" Generations of people knew about *The Cherubims* that were placed in *the garden* to guard The Tree of Life. *Eternal Life* was lost, so Christ had to come to restore *Eternal Life*.

What is The Kingdom of God? It is *the good news* for all mankind! It is *The Angelic Good News of The Message from God*. God's Son, Jesus Christ, came to restore *Eternal Life* in The Kingdom of God.

Luke 17:20-21 <sup>20</sup>And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God comes not with observation: <sup>21</sup>Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

How different is The Kingdom of God from what Peter, The Apostles or The Jews thought? "<sup>20</sup>*And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when The Kingdom of God*

*should come.”* They all, even The Apostles, were looking for a physical kingdom. But *“He answered them and said, The Kingdom of God comes not with observation.”*

The Kingdom of God is The Good News that Christ brought. He *saved* you so that you can have *Eternal Life*. This is *not* a physical kingdom. *“<sup>21</sup>Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or, lo there! For, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.”* It is a *spiritual kingdom* “*within you*” and requires only *spiritual works*. This is “*Christ – In You*” (Colossians 1:27).

John 3:1-6 <sup>1</sup>There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: <sup>2</sup>The same came to Jesus by night and said to him, Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that you do, except God be with him. <sup>3</sup>Jesus answered and said to him, Verily, verily, I say to you, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup>Nicodemus said to him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother’s womb and be born? <sup>5</sup>Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say to you, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. <sup>6</sup>That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

## Kingdom Within You

Theologically, there has been a great debate over what Christ meant when He said, “*The Kingdom of God is within you*” (Luke 17:21). All the theologians needed to do was *believe what Christ said* and they could have understood.

Each person needs to be reborn into another being, *but, not just yet*. If a person is not *reborn*, then they cannot enter *the kingdom*.

If The Apostles asked you, “*Are you going to restore the kingdom of Israel at this time,*” what would you tell them? That is not what *the kingdom* is. “*That which is born of the flesh, is flesh* [as long as you are human you are in the *flesh*] *that which is born of the Spirit is Spirit.*” The good news about Christ is that you have a *promise* that God *will eventually save The Whole World*. It is in God’s plan for all mankind to inherit *Eternal Life*. That is *The True Gospel*. You are to be a Spiritual Son of God, be just like Him and be in His family!

Revelation 21:1-2 <sup>1</sup>And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

The Kingdom *fulfills* The Sabbath Rest. This is what The Sabbath is all about. The Israelites *never* entered into God’s *rest*. They came close in the physical sense during Solomon’s day but their problem was that they didn’t believe, “<sup>1</sup>*And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.* <sup>2</sup>*And I, John saw The holy city.*”

Paul said that Christians are from Jerusalem, which is in *heaven* (Galatians 4:26). *It is not Jerusalem with The Physical Laws of The Temple of that time*. It was “*coming down*

*from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.”* So what is New Jerusalem? Christ said, *“I go to prepare a place for you”* (John 14:2). His Bride, *the church*, is dressed in jewels. Many wealthy men satiate themselves and their families with all the luxuries money can buy. After buying more luxuries than they can possibly use, they begin to do good things for others. They build hospitals, orphanages, libraries, museums, resorts, hotels and parks. They create many nonprofit organizations, foundations and endowments. They donate their mansions and gardens to the public.

### **Richest Being In The Universe**

God is the richest being in the universe. God owns everything. You may ask, *“What is God’s purpose?”* It is to *reproduce* Himself so every human being can become one of His Sons! God has the power to allow you to *live* forever. God is reproducing Himself through His Sons and The Bride (the church). What is The Kingdom of God? It is New Jerusalem descending down out of *heaven* and is The Mother of everyone. It will be the dwelling place of The Bride (the church) and Christ, The Groom. This is *the promise* you have through Abraham. It is *The True Gospel* of The Kingdom. *The True Gospel* is about a *spiritual kingdom* where you will be *spiritual* Sons of God. When God reproduces Himself, God will be *“all and in all”* (I Corinthians 15:28). God’s Kingdom is God reproducing Himself into a Family of Nations. That means *Salvation for each and every one of you*. It is God’s *will and shall be fulfilled*.

## Chapter 8

### MARRIAGE – THE GREAT MYSTERY

About 6,000 years ago, Adam and Eve were given the opportunity to obtain Eternal Life. This Gift would have passed on to all subsequent generations. However, they failed and everyone had to die.

Christ appeared on earth about 2,000 years ago to give His life, “*to save that which was lost*” (Matthew 18:11). God does not intend to lose any of His sheep (Matthew 18:14). Christ mentions the story of the shepherd who has 99 sheep and looks for the one that is lost. He does not rest until He finds the one that got lost. This is a very important concept to understand. This story concerns *the most fantastic promise* that has been given to you. God will not rest until *all are saved!* Eventually, everyone will enter God’s Spiritual Kingdom. *The True Gospel* is God’s plan for all creation to be saved. Everyone will be saved but not as physical beings. All will be *Spiritual Beings* in a *Spiritual Kingdom*. God’s Library records everyone who will be in New Jerusalem. They are written in *The Book of The Life of The Lamb*. Everyone who will enter The Kingdom of God, when New Jerusalem appears, is written in *The Lamb’s Book of Life*.

#### Why Written

Why was *The Book of Life* written at all? Only those who

become worthy are written in *The Book of Life*. Everyone must repent. They must qualify just as Christ, The Son of God, had to *qualify*. Those who do not believe and have not repented will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Matthew 18:11 declares that *the purpose* for Christ's coming is "to save that which was lost." This means He will restore everything back to the way it was in The Garden of Eden. This Chapter holds the most important piece of the puzzle in *The Bible*. It is one of the major events in the process of restoring everyone and everything. This is the whole reason Jesus Christ came to earth.

Matthew 19:3-8 <sup>3</sup>The Pharisees also came to him, tempting him and saying to him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? <sup>4</sup>And he answered and said to them, Have you not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, <sup>5</sup>And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they both shall be one flesh? <sup>6</sup>Wherefore they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder. <sup>7</sup>They say to him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement and to put her away? <sup>8</sup>He said to them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

As you read and study *The Bible*, it is best to try to understand it from *the restoration* point of view. "<sup>3</sup>*The Pharisees also came to him, tempting him* [they tested Him all the time] *and saying to him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?*" They were asking if it is

permissible to obtain a divorce. The response was, “<sup>4</sup>*And he answered and said to them, Have you not read, that he which made them at the beginning.*” Always be mindful to start at the beginning of *The Book of Genesis*. What was it like between the man and the woman at that time? *The Bible* says that God made them male and female. Notice, there was *no marriage ceremony* between Adam and Eve. Why were they not married? It is because Eve came directly out of Adam. Do you mean to say they were living Common Law? Of course not! Genesis says God “*made them male and female.*” As male and female, where did they come from? They came from God. God said, “<sup>5</sup>*For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they two shall be one flesh?*” Literally, they were one flesh but now they are two separate entities.

## Helpmate Required

When Adam was created, he needed a helpmate. In Genesis 2, God had Adam fall asleep and then removed a part of him. The English word is “*rib.*” The Hebrew word means “*side.*” God took a bone out of Adam’s side and created Eve. Yet, she was Adam. They were not two. They were truly *one*. Hence, they did not need to be married. They were already *one flesh*. “*Wherefore they are no more two [they aren’t two] but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder*” (Matthew 19:6). Eve, being brought forth out of Adam, proves they were, literally, one flesh. That is why she carried Adam’s name. Being *one flesh*, how could they have been put asunder? How could there have been a divorce? How could Adam have put her away? This essentially means that it would



have been necessary to cut them in half. “*They [Pharisees] say to him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement and to put her away?*” (Matthew 19:7). The question posed was why a man (under *The Law*) could divorce his wife. “*8He [Jesus] said to them, Moses because of the hardness [unrepentant] of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.*” Christ was required to come and restore marriage. He came to *save* human life and, you will find, it is saved through marriage!

## Marriage Is Central

You will discover that everything written in *The Bible* is about marriage. In fact, the most important part of the puzzle to understand is that everything from *Genesis* to *Revelation* is all about marriage. In the beginning, Adam and Eve were *one flesh* literally. She was “*bone of his bone.*” It is the same reason that each of you must, one day, become *one* with The Son and The Father. Moses permitted divorce because the ancient Israelites did not have *love*. When someone has hardness in their heart, they lack love (God’s *agàpè* love). Humans can only love because of passion or compatibility. Since God, through Moses, knew they didn’t have love, He permitted men to divorce (put away) their wives. You must understand that if divorce was not permitted for carnal individuals, they would kill each other. They never regarded marriage as being one flesh. Their wives were not perceived as “*bone of their bone and flesh of their flesh.*” How did this come about and what was the reason?

Matthew 19:9-10 <sup>9</sup>And I say to you, Whosoever shall

put away his wife, except it be for fornication and shall marry another, commits adultery: and whoso marries her which is put away does commit adultery. <sup>10</sup>His disciples say to him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

Christ's Disciples did not understand how to be *one flesh* with a wife. They did not know God's *agàpè* love. How could a husband and wife be the same flesh? Many books have been written about what keeps married people together. One book declares that you must be compatible. Other books claim that man and woman stay together because of their passion or emotions (*eros*) for each other.

### Why Accept Each Other?

Another reason why a person accepts someone else is because of "*philia*." You seem to be compatible and you like to do the same things. Because you enjoy doing the same things, you accept each other without wanting the other to change. So, it seems men and women marry on the basis of two points: 1) passion and/or 2) compatibility. But, that is not what it takes to make a marriage last for life. It takes God's *agàpè* love. Having *agàpè* love for each other is the only way to become one flesh.

Ephesians 5:25-32 <sup>25</sup>Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church and gave himself for it; <sup>26</sup>That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word. <sup>27</sup>That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. <sup>28</sup>So ought men to love their

wives as their own bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself. <sup>29</sup>For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord the church: <sup>30</sup>For we are members of his body, of his flesh and of his bones. <sup>31</sup>For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother and shall be joined to his wife and they two shall be one flesh. <sup>32</sup>This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

*“<sup>25</sup>Husbands, love your wives.”* The word for “love” is “*agàpè*.” In Greek, it means “*giving to the other*” or in The King James translation, it means “*charity!*” Soon, you will see what part of marriage was lost in The Garden of Eden. Husbands must “*agàpè*” their wives. Then Paul explains what “*agàpè love*” is by stating, “*even as Christ, also loved [agàpè] the church and gave himself for it* [this is self-sacrificing one’s own life for the other] <sup>26</sup>*That he might sanctify [making it special] and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, <sup>27</sup>That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle.”*

## Significant Fairy Tales

Many fairy tales tell the story of marriage. The story of Cinderella (preparing and waiting for the prince) favorably compares with the account of Jesus Christ and His Bride. Snow White (who was poisoned by the female Satan) and The Seven Dwarfs (seven churches) are, also, about Jesus Christ and The Bride. *The Wizard of Oz* with its song “*Over the Rainbow*” is a story about Jesus Christ and The Bride (Dorothy) who was lost while trying to find the road home. On this basis, it can be said, “<sup>27</sup>*that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrin-*

*kle or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish [no flaws]. <sup>28</sup>So ought men to love their wives as their own [what?] bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself [why is this? If she is of his bone, flesh and blood, then they will love each other] <sup>29</sup>For no man ever yet hated his own flesh.”*

How different was the first Godly marriage from all other marriages after that? With Eve virtually coming out of Adam, they were one flesh and one bone. They would need to become divided (severed) in order to be divorced. It is obvious that they would, then, both die.

## Marriage And The Passover

Now, what happens at The Passover? Christ said that unless you eat “*My Body*” and drink “*My Blood*,” you have no part of Me. He was talking about a marriage. It was about one flesh, “<sup>30</sup>*For we are members of his body, of his flesh and of his bones.* <sup>31</sup>*For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother and shall be joined to his wife and they two shall be one flesh.* <sup>32</sup>*This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.*” This is a story revealing The Purpose of The Entire Word of God. This is a story all about marriage. When Christ restores (saves) that which was lost, He is saving *the original marriage state*. This is *Salvation* – which is becoming *one flesh*. If Adam was a type of Christ (Romans 5:14), then Paul says the marriage makes *the church* – The Body of Christ. It is a great mystery. *The Bridegroom and The Church are to be married to each other.*

If Adam and Eve kept God’s way of marriage instead of

following Satan, they would have remained in The Garden of Eden with God. Eve's children could have lived there. Adam could have been *the appointed Christ-figure!* When Christ came to *save* (restore) sinners (the world) and give *Eternal Life*, He did it by restoring marriage. Most follow *Satan's system of marriage* which is based upon women being *sex objects* and men dominating the women (Genesis 3:1-16). When Adam and Eve ate the forbidden fruit, both became aware they were naked (Genesis 3:10-11). In Satan's marriage system, women become the husband's property.

Deuteronomy 24:1 When a man has taken a wife and married her and it come to pass that she find no favour in his eyes, because he has found some uncleanness in her: then let him write her a bill of divorcement and give it in her hand and send her out of his house.

Moses permitted divorce because of the hardness of their (The Israelites) hearts. Paul said the husband should *agàpè* his wife or love her as he loves his own body. Husbands did not have *agàpè* love for their wives, so they were allowed to divorce.

## Marriage And Baal

The word "*marry*" in Hebrew is "*baal.*" "*Baal*" was *the prominent god of fertility* for The Canaanites. Baalism is all about sex. Therefore, "*A man has taken a wife and*" married ("*baal*") her. "*Baal*" was a master or a lord of fertility and she became his property. So, when Israel became a whore and went after "*baal,*" God says she was married to another.

Israel literally changed from being one flesh with God to becoming the property of “*Baal*.” Check the word “*marry*” in Deuteronomy 24:1 (in a concordance) to be sure it is “*baal*.” Understand that the word “*marry*,” throughout *The Law*, is always “*baal*.” How did it change from the time, in the beginning, when Adam and Eve were one flesh?

Adam loved that flesh because it was his own. Adam listened to his wife because she was his own flesh. It may be difficult for you to understand why God placed women in *the position of slavery*. When a person is under *Baal* they become a slave to Baal. True Christians are “*doulos*” or “*slaves*” to their husband, Christ. According to *The Law*, *The Israelites* are just as much a slave to *Baal*. *The time of release* will come later. How did all this change from true marriage (based upon *agàpè* and bone of bone and flesh of flesh) to property? After all, slaves and women were bought and sold. How did this happen?

Genesis 3:11-16 <sup>11</sup>And he said, Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded you that you should not eat? <sup>12</sup>And the man said, The woman whom you gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree and I did eat. <sup>13</sup>And the LORD God said to the woman, What is this that you have done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me and I did eat. <sup>14</sup>And the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, you are cursed above all cattle and above every beast of the field; upon your belly shall you go and dust shall you eat all the days of your life: <sup>15</sup>And I will put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed; it shall

bruise your head and you shall bruise his heel. <sup>16</sup>To the woman he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband and he shall rule over you.

How did marriage change? The original marriage wasn't based on the man being the head or lord, but on the man being the head by means of loving his flesh (his wife). This is a totally different situation and cannot be *put asunder*. When your wife is your property, then you can divorce her, sell her and get rid of her, but never by murder. The text says, "<sup>11</sup>*Have you eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded you that you should not eat?*"

## Finding Fault

A man will always say that it was his wife's fault. The claim is that, "*My wife did it or it was her idea.*" "<sup>12</sup>*And the man said, The woman whom you gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree and I did eat.*" This is after Adam and Eve ate from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. Adam did it because he loved his wife. Those who love their wives have a difficult time saying "*No*" to them. As a man, I can say that it is quite tough, isn't it?

Well, it was pretty difficult for Adam too. However, this was no excuse. He should have thought of his wife and said, "*We better not take that fruit.*" Instead, "<sup>3</sup>*And the LORD God said to the woman, What is this that you have done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me and I did eat.*" The chain reaction begins. First, Adam blames Eve and, then, Eve blames the serpent.

## Blame The Serpent

It is never the fault of the perpetrator because human nature always finds someone else to blame. This is the process of never accepting the blame and always passing the buck, “<sup>14</sup>*And the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, you are cursed above all cattle.*”

In God’s eyes, Satan was placed beneath all the other animals. He was the most carnal, beastlike and poisonous, “*and above every beast of the field; upon your belly shall you go and dust shall you eat all the days of your life: <sup>15</sup>And I will put enmity [hostility] between you and the woman and between your seed [Satan, also, has children] and her seed [her children]; it shall bruise your head [speaking about Christ] and you shall bruise his heel. <sup>16</sup>To the woman he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception.*” Bearing children comes with pain. Eve went through this pain and will again in the future when she sees her children thrown into The Lake of Fire. This will be a painful sight, “*in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband and he shall rule over you.*” There is the indictment.

## The Change In Marriage

Marriage changed, substantially, at this point. This was not the way things were supposed to be in the very beginning. No longer was Adam *head* as the husband. He was, now, the master. He was like *Baal*. Since then, men could go out and buy women as possessions. They became a *product*. That is how it all began. Why must women be handled like *chattel*? This is their penalty for following



Satan. God gave them over to Satan's *system of marriage*. So Christ was sent to *save* that which was lost. Christ had to *save* His marriage. He had to come and sacrifice Himself. Afterward, through His death and resurrection, He could marry His church. Christ must *restore* marriage to the way it was in the beginning. You will need an even greater understanding of this when you read Matthew 19, "<sup>10</sup>*If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.*" This is amazing!

There is a complete difference between God's marriage and man's marriage (Satan's system). Man's marriage is based on *eros* and *philia* while God's marriage is based on *agàpè* love. Paul said, "*God's marriage is a great mystery.*" Christ must restore marriage to where both mates love each other as one flesh and with *agàpè* love. Was there a better way for God to *save* His creation than having to require His own Son to die? His Son had to die to prove He was worthy (*agàpè*) of His wife. This meant that Christ had to buy back or *redeem* His wife. Why do you have to have a Savior and why didn't Adam qualify? It was all because of *free choice*.

## Two Choices

In the beginning, God gave Adam and Eve two choices. He said, "*Look, Adam, you can be Savior and you can be The Christ.*" He went on to say, "*Eve, you can be the mother of all the living.*" Here is The Tree of Life and God, Himself, is in The Garden. *Agàpè* was there! God is love. They could have eaten from The Tree of Life at that time.

Love (*agàpè*) is the fulfillment or the completion of *The*

*Law* (Romans 13:10). So if God was with them and they were *One* with God (all joined together, as one), then they would all be *One* (married as one flesh). They would have had *Eternal Life*. All their children could have lived forever and would not have had to go through what mankind has had to endure. But, they chose The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil and said, “*No, we do not choose to follow your way. We choose to follow our own ideas of right and wrong.*” Do you know why Satan is *the father of lies*? First, he believes his own lies. There is never a better liar than a person who believes his or her own lies. There are people who will lie to you and, all the while, believe they are telling you the truth. By using deception, they never tell you a total lie. Part of what they say is true. When Satan tried to tempt Eve with the fruit, Eve said, “*God says we shouldn’t eat it because when we eat it we are going to die.*” And what did Satan say, “*You are not going to die.*” He was telling her the truth, but he didn’t tell her that they would need to die, be resurrected and then be saved. Also, he didn’t tell her there is a *first death* and a *second death*.

### Satan Deceived Eve

Satan deceived Eve by reasoning with her. In essence, he said, “*Look, the reason God doesn’t want you to eat the fruit of The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil is because you will become wise and know right from wrong.*” Eve wanted to decide for herself what was right or wrong by the hard knocks of trial and error. Eve bought into the lie because Satan told the truth but only in part. Eve was not going to die instantly. Now, do you see what must be restored? Christ came to *save oneness with God*. God’s pur-

*pose* is to become *all in all* (I Corinthians 15). God is *agapè love*. Christ came to restore marriage, as was *planned* from the very beginning.

Matthew 22:1-13 <sup>1</sup>And Jesus answered and spoke to them again by parables and said, <sup>2</sup>The kingdom of heaven is like to a certain king, which made a marriage for his son. <sup>3</sup>And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. <sup>4</sup>Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed and all things are ready: come to the marriage. <sup>5</sup>But they made light of it and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: <sup>6</sup>And the remnant took his servants and entreated them spitefully and slew them. <sup>7</sup>But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies and destroyed those murderers and burned up their city. <sup>8</sup>Then said he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. <sup>9</sup>Go you therefore into the highways and as many as you shall find, bid to the marriage. <sup>10</sup>So those servants went out into the highways and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests. <sup>11</sup>And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: <sup>12</sup>And he said to him, Friend, how came you in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. <sup>13</sup>Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot and take him away and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Jesus Christ spoke specifically about marriage and *the kingdom* (Matthew 22). However, it is vital to note that *The Bible* and everything from Genesis 1 to Revelation 22 is all about *marriage*. This is an important part of the puzzle. God's marriage is about husband and wife becoming *One*. God is reproducing Himself "*In You*." Christ said, "*Unless you eat My body and drink My blood, you can have nothing to do with Me*." However, this means that *certain ones* will be excluded from *The Marriage*.

### Marriage Agreement

*Passover* (Communion) was The Marriage Agreement when The Disciples ate His *body* and drank His *blood*. They became *one flesh*. There is a profound meaning behind this, as you can already perceive. This insight often occurs when a person eats the bread and drinks the wine. "<sup>1</sup>*And Jesus answered and spoke to them again by parables and said, <sup>2</sup>The kingdom of heaven is like to a certain king, which made a marriage for his son*" (Matthew 22). The subject is The Kingdom of God and New Jerusalem. Christ came to restore marriage back to the way it was intended from the beginning. "<sup>3</sup>*And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.*" When this marriage took place between The King's Son and His Bride, most assumed The Bride was *the church*. But that is not accurate.

Christ is designated as The Giver while The Bride is *the church* (Ephesians 5). Remember, The Guests are not The Bride, they are The Guests. "<sup>3</sup>*And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. <sup>4</sup>Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell*

*them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed and all things are ready [so they were invited]: come to the marriage.”*

What is the marriage? It is The Passover. It is taking *the bread and wine* so they can become *one flesh*. This is The Agreement. *The Passover is a contractual agreement*. It is The Marriage Contract between Christ and *the church*. The Marriage is The Feast. The Marriage Feast is the dinner, which will come later. There is a big difference between *The Contract*, which was *The New Testament* and *The Feast*. *The New Testament is The New Contract* between Christ and His Bride. The invitation is sent out to invite people to The Wedding. So, *The Guests* are different from *The Bride*. *The individuals* who were invited to the marriage *treated the occasion with disdain*. Hence, *judgment* will be forthcoming. Later, you will understand that The Return of Christ and The Marriage Feast is The Time of The Judgment. *Understand this time-frame correctly!*

## The Guest Roster

“<sup>8</sup>Then said he to his servants, *The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. <sup>9</sup>Go you therefore into the highways.*” Of course, the first guests to be invited were all of *Israel*, but *they missed out*. Then, they go and call others, “*and as many as you shall find, bid to the marriage.*” <sup>10</sup>*So those servants went out into the highways and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good.*” This is The Resurrection of The Just and those to be judged (John 5:29). Remember that The Parable of Wheat and Tares is about the time when Christ said, “*The Wheat is The World and The Seed is The Good Seed of*

*The Son. The Tares are The Children of Satan.*” So, these Guests were invited to the wedding (both the good and the bad). This is the time of The Great Judgment and The Resurrection. It, also, spans a great period of time. The Marriage Feast lasts for a long period indeed, “*and the wedding was furnished with guests. <sup>11</sup>And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment.*” This is *The Judgment Period*.

Remember, you must be dressed in *The Wedding Garment of Righteousness*. Can you remember back to Cinderella when twelve o’clock starts to strike? The stagecoach turns back into a pumpkin and all the fine clothes turn to rags. This scene corresponds with, “<sup>12</sup>*And he said to him, Friend, how came you in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. <sup>13</sup>Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot and take him away and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*” These will be those farthest from New Jerusalem and the access to The Tree of Life.

## Christ And The Church

So The Wedding is between Christ (The Groom) and *the church* (The Bride). The Guests are those who are resurrected at The Time of The Resurrection (both the *good* and the *bad*).

John 5:21-29 <sup>21</sup>For as the Father raises up the dead and quickens them; even so the Son quickens whom he will. <sup>22</sup>For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son: <sup>23</sup>That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honours

not the Son honours not the Father which has sent him. <sup>24</sup>Verily, verily, I say to you, He that hears my word and believes on him that sent me, has everlasting life and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death to life. <sup>25</sup>Verily, verily, I say to you, The hour is coming and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. <sup>26</sup>For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself; <sup>27</sup>And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. <sup>28</sup>Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup>And shall come forth; they that have done good, to the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, to the resurrection of damnation.

The Son is The Groom and He gives these people Everlasting Life. Notice how many times *The Son* is mentioned in regards to *judgment, honor and listening*. You should *believe Christ* because He is *your Husband* and He *sanctifies you*. He will make you *righteous* and then you will become The Bride (representing *the church*). You are going to be *saved*. Christ said, “<sup>25</sup>*the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live* [this is the first resurrection] <sup>26</sup>*For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself.*”

Jesus is The Groom. The Son and The Father are *one*. If The Bride and Groom become *one*, then all is *One* with God. When The Groom loves you and you love The Groom then *The Marriage takes place*. “<sup>28</sup>*Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice.*”



## Second Resurrection

Only those called during *The First Resurrection* will become The Bride of Christ. They heard His voice. The Guests will be called to The Wedding Feast later (this is The Second Resurrection). The Father is having a marriage for His Son and The Bride. *The Others* are The Guests. But who are they? “<sup>29</sup>*And shall come forth; they that have done good to the resurrection of life.*” When the servants were sent to invite The Guests, they went into the highways. The bad and the good (the wheat and the tares) were called together. This is The Marriage Feast, The Time of Judgment. The judgment is not a time of horror, rather it is *A Time of Release*. It is a time of joy, “<sup>29</sup>*And shall come forth; they that have done good. To the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, to the resurrection of damnation.*” The word “*damnation*” is a poor English translation. The literal meaning is “*a time of sentencing.*” In Greek, the word “*krisis*” is “*crisis.*” How many people come to The Wedding of The Bride and The Groom?

Matthew 22:14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

*Most people* will be going into The Lake of Fire. When a person does not have the proper garment, that person is thrown out (weeping and gnashing of teeth). What does Christ say, “<sup>14</sup>*For many are called [to the wedding], but few are chosen.*” That is quite clear.

**100,000,000 People**

The number of individuals brought before The Throne of



Judgment is referenced in Daniel 7:10. It is 10,000 times 10,000 or *one hundred million people*. These are *the chosen few*. Daniel may be correct or perhaps he was merely giving an example. What this implies is that out of the billions of people who lived on earth, there will be only about one hundred million people who will experience *the resurrection of the just*, “<sup>14</sup>*For many are called, but few are chosen.*”

Everyone who will be in New Jerusalem is written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*. If you are not written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*, then you will burn. Only those written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*, The Groom, The Bride and The Guests are part of The Marriage. *The Lamb's Book of Life* is about marriage. *The Book of Life* is a Marriage Registry. Christ said, “*Because strait is the gate and narrow is the way, which leads to life and few there be that find it*” (Matthew 7:14). He is talking about the gate that opens into New Jerusalem.

New Jerusalem has Twelve Gates and *the path* to get there is narrow and difficult. *Character* and *righteousness* is required to pass through. Very few people will have the character needed to go through this gate. Those left out are the dogs, liars and whoremongers who will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. In *The Gospels*, Jesus consistently talks about children. When the little children came to Him, The Disciples tried to keep them away. Christ said, “*No, permit little children to come to me. Of such is The Kingdom of God.*” Unless you are like *a little child*, you shall not enter into *The Kingdom*. Christ will not marry just any woman. He will not allow any guests to be at His Wedding if they do not have humility (*agàpè love*).

***Humble* people can be taught *like children*. They are *open-minded*. They don't get into *arguments*. They are *looking for truth* and discern *the right* way to live. If you can spend a good portion of your time giving (self-sacrifice for others), then you don't have time to think about yourself. If you are productive and help the poor and the sick, then you will not have *idle time* to think about yourself.**

**If all you do is think about yourself, you *probably* won't get into God's kingdom (without first seeking God).**

Song of Solomon 1:1-7 <sup>1</sup>The song of songs, which is Solomon's. <sup>2</sup>Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth: for your love is better than wine. <sup>3</sup>Because of the savour of your good ointments your name is as ointment poured forth, therefore do the virgins love you. <sup>4</sup>Draw me, we will run after you: the king has brought me into his chambers: we will be glad and rejoice in you, we will remember your love more than wine: the upright love you. <sup>5</sup>I am black, but comely, O you daughters of Jerusalem, as the tents of Kedar, as the curtains of Solomon. <sup>6</sup>Look not upon me, because I am black, because the sun has looked upon me: my mother's children were angry with me; they made me the keeper of the vineyards; but mine own vineyard have I not kept. <sup>7</sup>Tell me, O you whom my soul loves, where you feed, where you make your flock to rest at noon: for why should I be as one that turns aside by the flocks of your companions?

## Cinderella

*The Song of Solomon* could be portrayed as Cinderella

with her lost slipper. *The Book of Revelation* could be compared to Snow White. Snow White is looking for her Prince riding on a white horse. She awaits his coming to wake her up. Don't forget, *the seven dwarfs* (seven candlesticks) took care of Snow White until The Prince arrived. The dwarfs represent The Seven Churches in *Revelation*. *The Bible* is the greatest and the most wonderful love story that ever existed. *The Song of Solomon* illustrates the path to take.

How did Snow White wake up? “<sup>2</sup>*Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth.*” Snow White had to wait for the Prince to come and kiss her. “*For your love is better than wine.*” <sup>3</sup>*Because of the savour of your good ointments your name is as ointment poured forth, therefore do the virgins love you.*” Cinderella had stepsisters (the other virgins) who were, also, interested in the prince. “<sup>4</sup>*Draw me, we will run after you* [this is about the virgins, not The Bride. Then] *The king has brought me into his chambers: we will be glad and rejoice in you, we will remember your love more than wine: the upright love you.*”

In Cinderella's story, she is *the cinder-maid* who didn't have decent clothes. She was required to do all the work for everyone else, “<sup>5</sup>*I am black, but comely.*” “Comely” in English means “good looking.” She is *black* from working in the fields and from the rays of the sun, “*O you daughters of Jerusalem, as the tents of Kedar, as the curtains of Solomon.* [These were black]. “*Look not upon me.*” In other words, don't look upon me, Prince. The Prince was going to The Ball. The stepsisters and the other virgins in the town were primping up. They were setting their hair and getting their faces made up. They were dressing in

beautiful clothing. But Cinderella was saying, “*Look not upon me, because I am black, because the sun has looked upon me: my mother’s children [stepsisters] were angry with me [as with Cinderella] they made me the keeper of the vineyards [in other words, they made her do all the work] but mine own vineyard have I not kept.*” She was not able to take care of herself. Can you see Cinderella in this story? “*Tell me, O you whom my soul loves, where you feedest [where is The Prince?] Where you make your flock to rest at noon: for why should I be as one that turns aside by the flocks of your companions?*” Why should she be shunned away?

The similarity of the story of Cinderella to *the original biblical text* is amazing. Going on with the story, the fairy godmother gave her a beautiful outfit. She was dressed in *righteousness*. She had a beautiful carriage but at twelve o’clock the carriage would turn into a pumpkin and her clothes would turn into rags. Christ warns both the virgins who are wise and the ones who are foolish (Matthew 25). Cinderella runs into the carriage and sprints home as it turns into a pumpkin. She barely makes it in time. How can The Prince tell if she is *the church*? It is the slipper. Whose slipper is this? Now you can tie this together with *The Law of Inheritance*.

## Law Of Inheritance

Ruth 4:1-7 <sup>1</sup>Then went Boaz up the gate and sat him down there: and, behold, the kinsman of whom Boaz spake came by; to whom he said, Ho, such a one! Turn aside, sit down here. And he turned aside and sat down.  
<sup>2</sup>And he took ten men of the elders of the city and said,

Sit you down here. And they sat down. <sup>3</sup>And he said to the kinsman, Naomi, that is come again out of the country of Moab, sells a parcel of land, which was our brother Elimelech's: <sup>4</sup>And I thought to advertise you, saying, Buy it before the inhabitants and before the elders of my people. If you will redeem it, redeem it: but if you will not redeem it, then tell me, that I may know: for there is none to redeem it beside you; and I am after you. And he said, I will redeem it. <sup>5</sup>Then said Boaz, What day you buy the field of the hand of Naomi, you must buy it also of Ruth the Moabitess, the wife of the dead, to raise up the name of the dead upon his inheritance. <sup>6</sup>And the kinsman said, I cannot redeem it for myself, lest I mar mine own inheritance: redeem you my right to yourself; for I cannot redeem it. <sup>7</sup>Now this was the manner in former time in Israel concerning redeeming and concerning changing, for to confirm all things: a man plucked off his shoe, and gave it to his neighbour: and this was a testimony in Israel.

*The Bible contains the entire marriage saga. You will be surprised by what The Wedding is all about and how it takes place at the end. Elimelech was an Israelite who lived in The Land of Israel (Ruth 4:1). There was a famine in the land, so Elimelech took his wife, Naomi, his two sons and they left Israel for Moab. Moab was a Gentile area filled with pagan religions. Who does Elimelech and Naomi's sons marry? They marry Gentile women.*

Elimelech dies and, eventually, the sons die. One of the Gentile wives went back to her father's home while Ruth, although a Gentile, stayed with Naomi.

Compare this with the time when Christ came and was sent to Israel. The nation rejected Him so He went to The Gentiles. Ruth was used by God because she was a Gentile. That which was first *is last* and that which was last *is first*. Israel should have been first but ended up being last. Instead, The Gentiles came in first, as The Bride. This is the story of how Ruth had to become The Bride. It is a parallel to Christ and His Bride. Ruth is tied into *The Law of Inheritance* through Israel and her future husband. As time goes by, Naomi decides to leave Moab and go back to her own nation. Ruth, her daughter-in-law, who has endeared herself to Naomi as a daughter, decides to go with Naomi (while the other daughter-in-law went back to her father's family).

### Reaching Israel's Land

When they reach The Land of Israel, Naomi tells Ruth to work in Boaz's vineyard, since he was a kinsman. This is an important point. You will understand the reason why Christ had to be your Savior. Boaz agreed with Ruth and went ahead to *redeem her*. Now, know this. Boaz had to *redeem her*. He was able to redeem her through *the inheritance* because he was a kinsman to Naomi. *The Law* states that this *had* to happen. This is another piece of the puzzle.

Boaz, as the leading kinsman, redeemed her. This coincides with The Prince and Cinderella's slipper. “<sup>1</sup>*Then went Boaz up to the gate and sat him down there: and, behold, the kinsman of whom Boaz spoke came by.*” There was one kinsman who was ahead of Boaz. A relative through Elimelech's lineage was a closer relative. Therefore, “to

*whom he said, Ho, such a one! Turn aside, sit down here. And he turned aside and sat down. <sup>2</sup>And he took ten men of the elders of the city and said, Sit you down here. And they sat down. <sup>3</sup>And he said to the kinsman.” This kinsman had first choice to Naomi and Ruth’s inheritance, “Naomi, that is come again out of the country of Moab, sold a parcel of land, which was our brother Elimelech’s [this concerns *The Law of Inheritance*] <sup>4</sup>And I thought to advertise [advise] you [this is the way they contractually made everyone understand that they were coming to an agreement, signing a contract] saying, Buy it before the inhabitants.”*

### A Woman Was Property

What kind of marriage does *The Law* promote at this time? The woman is considered property along with the land. As property, the purchaser must buy her, “*and before the elders of my people. If you will redeem it, redeem it.*” Then, Boaz asked the kinsman, “*If you want to buy her, you can because you have first choice to redeem Ruth [then he adds] but if you will not redeem it, then tell me, that I may know: for there is none to redeem it beside you: and I am after you.*” He is saying, “*If you don’t buy her, then I have the right to buy her.*” Remember she is property at this point. That is what Ruth 4 tells you, “*And he [a kinsman] said, I will redeem it. <sup>5</sup>Then said Boaz, What day you buy the field of the hand of Naomi, you must buy it also of Ruth the Moabitess, the wife of the dead.*” Here, the contract is spelled out. It is not merely a contract between people for people but, also, for the land. By buying the land that belonged to Elimelech, Boaz also buys Naomi and Ruth (with Ruth, as his wife). Notice, “*the wife of the dead, to raise up the name of the dead* [so, *The Inheritance*



could continue] *upon his inheritance*. *‘And the kinsman said, I cannot redeem it for myself, lest I mar mine own inheritance: redeem you my right to yourself.’* What this means is that Boaz could buy her because the kinsman could not do so, *“For I cannot redeem it. <sup>7</sup>Now this was the manner in former time in Israel concerning redeeming and concerning changing, for to confirm all things: a man plucked off his shoe.”*

### Cinderella’s Slipper

This brings you to a very interesting point about Cinderella’s slipper. *Cinderella’s shoe was all that was righteous*. The shoe is her *agreement* to marry The Prince, just like Boaz and Ruth. Notice the words, *“his shoe and gave it to his neighbour: and this was a testimony [contract] in Israel.”* In The Cinderella Story, The Prince tries to find the woman whose foot will fit the slipper. Why is the slipper at the gate? It is because the only way to get into The Kingdom of God is through The Gate.

Each gate in *The New Heaven* and *The New Earth* represents A Tribe of Israel. You cannot come into The Kingdom of God except through Israel. Unless you become *a spiritual Israelite*, you cannot be The Bride of Christ. At the time of restitution, Israel, who will have rejected Christ during The Millennium, will then have their chance to become *spiritual Israelites*. They will be required to *keep The Whole Law*, which they did not do before, so they will learn to follow Christ.

All the pieces of the puzzle fit together. New Jerusalem has Twelve Gates and each gate represents A Tribe of Is-



rael. It is the only way you can get into *The Kingdom*. The Bride is present because she is part of The Salvation Walls along with The Apostles. Why did Boaz have to sit at The Gate? He sat there because it was the only way to carry out *The Law of Inheritance*. The Elders at The Gate bound *the agreement* there. The only way you can get through The Gates in The Kingdom of God is to become *a spiritual Israelite* (Romans 2). It fits into the puzzle and makes sense. It is, truly, a great love story.

## Outline Of The Royal Marriage

**Why did Christ have to redeem (pay the price for) all of you? Hebrews 4 is the outline for entering into God's *rest*, The Sabbath's *rest* or New Jerusalem.**

Isaiah 58:1-10 <sup>1</sup>Cry aloud, spare not, lift up your voice like a trumpet and show my people their transgression and the house of Jacob their sins. <sup>2</sup>Yet they seek me daily and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God. <sup>3</sup>Wherefore have we fasted, say they and you see not? Wherefore have we afflicted our soul and you take no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast you find pleasure and exact all your labours. <sup>4</sup>Behold, you fast for strife and debate and to smite with the fist of wickedness: you shall not fast as you do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. <sup>5</sup>Is it such a fast that I have chosen? A day for a man to afflict his soul? Is it to bow down his head as a bulrush and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? Will you call

this a fast and an acceptable day to the LORD? <sup>6</sup>Is not this the fast that I have chosen? To loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens and to let the oppressed go free and that you break every yoke? <sup>7</sup>Is it not to deal your bread to the hungry and that you bring the poor that are cast out to your house? When you see the naked, that you cover him; and that you hide not yourself from your own flesh? <sup>8</sup>Then shall your light break forth as the morning and your health shall spring forth speedily: and your righteousness shall go before you: the glory of the LORD shall be your reward. <sup>9</sup>Then shall you call and the LORD shall answer; you shall cry and he shall say, Here I am. If you take away from the midst of you the yoke, the putting forth of the finger and speaking vanity; <sup>10</sup>And if you draw out your soul to the hungry and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall your light rise in obscurity and your darkness be as the noon day.

To fully understand the topic of marriage, you must learn how to *become righteous*. Then, you learn to *qualify* to be The Bride. You, also, learn how the marriage takes place. These people are seeking God (Isaiah 58:1-2). In Hebrew, they are called “*The Hassidim*” or “*The Righteous Ones*.” They are *chosen* and, rightfully, called *saints*. “<sup>3</sup>*Wherefore have we fasted, say they.*” Remember the parable that Christ gave about The Pharisee and *the poor man*. The Pharisee said, “*I fast twice a week and I tithed.*” Does this sound familiar to the way some people speak today? They fast and pay tithes of all they have. The poor man comes in, he has not fasted or tithed and says, “*I am a sinner.*” Hence, Christ said he (the poor man) would be in The Kingdom of God. The person who admits that he is

a sinner (feels not worthy) will be in The Kingdom of God. *“And you see not? Wherefore have we afflicted our soul.”* Why do you fast? What is your motive? This instruction is about Atonement and The Jubilee.

But God says, *“Behold, in the day of your fast [Day of Atonement] you find pleasure and exact all your labours.* [These people are still seeking everything for themselves]. *<sup>4</sup>Behold, you fast for strife and debate and to smite with the fist of wickedness [all this is hypocrisy. The warning is] you shall not fast as you do this day [Atonement], to make your voice to be heard on high.”* God did not want people to make a show of piety through the physical work of *The Law*. God says, *“Is not this the fast that I have chosen to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens and to let the oppressed go free?”* That is *the type of fast* that leads to freedom.

## Christ's Bride

The Bride of Christ must be *humble* and very giving. That is *true Christianity*. *The Jubilee Year is The Marriage Feast*. The Bride is *the first fruit* and is *redeemed before the time of release* or Jubilee. She is *redeemed* in a shorter period of time, which culminates at The Pentecost when she gets her *inheritance* (God's Holy Spirit). This is *“to undo the heavy burdens and to let the oppressed go free and that you break every yoke.”* During The Jubilee, all debt and sin is forgiven. *“<sup>7</sup>Is it not to deal your bread to the hungry and that you bring the poor that are cast out to your house? When you see the naked, that you cover him; and that you hide not yourself from your own flesh?* [This instruction is all about marriage and family]. *<sup>8</sup>Then shall*

*your light break forth as the morning and your health shall spring forth speedily: and your righteousness shall go before you: the glory of the LORD shall be your reward. <sup>9</sup>Then shall you call and the LORD shall answer”* (this is when God will be with you in The Kingdom). Notice it says, “*you shall cry and he shall say, Here I am.*” This is a theme that appears to be right out of *The Book of Revelation*.

## Sabbath Of Rest

How does a person keep The Sabbath? God wants you to do *good works* on *The Sabbath* and call it a *delight* (Isaiah 58:13). A person does not do his or her own pleasure on this day. They do *good works*. God and Jesus worked on The Sabbath by doing *good works* (John 5:17). *The true Sabbath* concerns *the rest*. The Marriage, The New Jerusalem and you are to delight in *that promise*. The first Sabbath in *Genesis* was very good (Genesis 2:3).

Isaiah 58:14 Then shall you delight yourself in the LORD; and I will cause you to ride upon the high places of the earth and feed you with the heritage of Jacob your father: for the mouth of the LORD has spoken it.

*The inheritance* came from Abraham through Jacob. *The righteous* enter The Gates of New Jerusalem. *The covenant* comes through Israel and Abraham. In *Galatians*, you learn that, “*New Jerusalem is the mother of us all*” (Galatians 4:26). Perhaps now, you will be able to read *The Bible* with greater understanding because the main pieces of the puzzle are assembled together.

Isaiah 59:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Behold, the LORD’s hand is not

shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: <sup>2</sup>But your iniquities have separated between you and your God and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

**God can and will *save everyone*. Atheists say, “*Why doesn't God show Himself?*” God can't show Himself around *sin*. No man, except The Son, has seen The Father. *Sin* is corruption and God cannot be around *sin*. At The Marriage, if you don't have the right garments (without sin), then you will burn.**

Isaiah 59:20-21 <sup>20</sup>And the Redeemer shall come to Zion and to them that turn from transgression in Jacob, said the LORD. <sup>21</sup>As for me, this is my covenant with them, said the LORD; My spirit that is upon you and my words which I have put in your mouth, shall not depart out of your mouth, nor out of the mouth of your seed, nor out of the mouth of your seed's seed, said the LORD, from henceforth and for ever.

## Christ To Jerusalem

**Do you remember how Ruth was redeemed? Christ, The Redeemer, is coming to Jerusalem. *This is His return*. God will be with *everyone* forever. He says, “<sup>21</sup>*Your people also shall be all righteous, they shall inherit the land for ever; the branch of my planting, the work of my hands, that I may be glorified*” (Isaiah 60:21).**

Isaiah 62:4 You shall no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall your land any more be termed Desolate: but you shall be called Hephzi-bah and your land

**Beulah: for the LORD delights in you and your land shall be married.**

Now, to an important promise, “*4You shall no more be termed Forsaken* [God forsook Israel. Then, in talking about Zion] *neither shall your land any more be termed Desolate.*” Through *The Law of Inheritance*, Boaz bought the land first; then, he *bought his bride*. From Boaz through Ruth (a Gentile) came Jesse, from whom came David, from whom came Jesus. So you see, the line comes through *the church and The Gentiles*. (Israel was the first but did not accept Christ, The Groom). So, God called *The Gentiles and they will be first, ahead of Israel, to become The Son’s Bride*. That is why Ruth had to be a Gentile and marry into the line of Abraham.

Ruth became *a spiritual Israelite – or The Body of Christ*. The result is that, “*4neither shall your land any more be termed Desolate: but you shall be called Hephzi-bah* [“Hephzi-bah” in Hebrew means “*delight*”] *and your land Beulah* [the word “*Beulah*” in Hebrew means “*married*”] *for the LORD delights in you and your land shall be married.*” So, *The Marriage includes The Land and The Bride*. When Boaz redeemed Elimelech’s land, he bought the land as a possession, along with Ruth and Naomi. Therefore, *all was redeemed*. That is why Christ was required to die and *redeem you from Satan*. Only, then, can you receive God’s *inheritance*. Who is *clothed with righteousness* (a Hagios) (Isaiah 58:6-14 and Ephesians 1:1)?

## Correct Wedding Garments

What does it take to be clothed in *the right marriage gar-*

*ment?* Who has the right shoe? Like Cinderella, Boaz gave his shoe to fit *righteous* Ruth. Ruth accepted *the true* God and His *inheritance*. This is a lesson in *humility* and giving to *the poor*. It is releasing the ox from the heavy burden. Clearly, The Sabbath's Rest is doing *good works*. Now, you can see where more of the pieces fit together in the puzzle. What do you think is *the Holiest time* of all? If you were going to pick a holy time, which would you pick? Would it be The Sabbath or The Holy Days? Read on. It gets better!

Leviticus 25:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And the LORD spoke to Moses, in mount Sinai, saying, <sup>2</sup>Speak to the children of Israel and say to them, When you come into the land which I give you, then shall the land keep a sabbath to the LORD. <sup>3</sup>Six years you shall sow your field and six years you shall prune your vineyard and gather in the fruit thereof; <sup>4</sup>But in the seventh year shall be a sabbath of rest to the land, a sabbath for the LORD: you shall neither sow your field, nor prune your vineyard. <sup>5</sup>That which grows of its own accord of your harvest you shall not reap, neither gather the grapes of your vine undressed: for it is a year of rest to the land. <sup>6</sup>And the sabbath of the land shall be meat for you; for you and for your servant and for your maid and for your hired servant and for your stranger that so journeys with you.

**The Marriage of The Land and The People** (the reason Christ had to *redeem* you) is *revealed* in Leviticus 25. *The Whole Law is the shadow of things to come* (Hebrews 10:1). Let *The Law* lead you to Christ, The Groom and Husband. When *The Law* leads you to Christ, then you are fulfilling

*The Law* and have *agapè love*, which completes *The Law*. This all takes place when Christ *returns*. It is *The Time of Restitution*. He comes to Israel for The Restoration of all things. The first item to be *restored* is The Land Sabbath during The Seventh Year. Perhaps Jesus will *return* in The Seventh Calendar Year (The Land Sabbath).

The strangers, The Gentiles and all who come into the land are at rest with the land. The land, at that time, is going to produce so much that no one can eat it all and the sea will have a great abundance of fish. Now, to the holiest time of all for everyone. This is The Marriage Feast, the time of rejoicing! Certain people were left out of *The Book of Life of The Lamb* because they did not qualify. Only those who are called as The Bride or Guests are in *The Lamb's Book*. Everyone else is *released* from their other sins at a later time.

Leviticus 25:8-20 <sup>8</sup>And you shall number seven sabbaths of years to you, seven times seven years; and the space of the seven sabbaths of years shall be to you forty and nine years. <sup>9</sup>Then shall you cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound on the tenth day of the seventh month, in the day of atonement [one with God] shall you make the trumpet sound throughout all your land. <sup>10</sup>And you shall hallow the fiftieth year and proclaim liberty throughout all the land to all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee to you; and you shall return every man to his possession and you shall return every man to his family. <sup>11</sup>A jubilee shall that fiftieth year be to you: you shall not sow, neither reap that which grows of itself in it, nor gather the grapes in it of your vine undressed. <sup>12</sup>For it is



the jubilee; it shall be holy to you: you shall eat the increase thereof out of the field. <sup>13</sup>In the year of this jubilee you shall return every man to his possession. <sup>14</sup>And if you sell ought to your neighbour, or buy ought of your neighbour's hand, you shall not oppress one another: <sup>15</sup>According to the number of years after the jubilee you shall buy of your neighbour and according to the number of years of the fruits he shall sell to you: <sup>16</sup>According to the multitude of years you shall increase the price thereof and according to the fewness of years you shall diminish the price of it: for according to the number of the years of the fruits does he sell to you. <sup>17</sup>You shall not therefore oppress one another; but you shall fear your God: for I am the LORD your God. <sup>18</sup>Wherefore you shall do my statutes and keep my judgments and do them: and you shall dwell in the land in safety. <sup>19</sup>And the land shall yield her fruit and you shall eat your fill and dwell therein in safety. <sup>20</sup>And if you shall say, What shall we eat the seventh year? Behold, we shall not sow, nor gather in our increase.

*The Spring Harvest* lasts for 50 days. It is a short period of time for *The Bride* to be redeemed before The 50<sup>th</sup> Year, “<sup>9</sup>Then shall you cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound.” The word “*Jubilee*” means “*feast*” or “*marriage supper.*” This is *the horn of plenty* at harvest time. It is the time of The Jubilee. It is a time of great abundance because God pours out all of His love and gives everything He has to you as your *inheritance*.

You had better *understand* this wonderful God that you worship! Do you think that God could destroy any of His

children? God disciplines every child and He destroys none (Hebrews 12). So The Jubilee text continues with, “*Then shall you cause the trumpet of jubilee to sound [when?] on the tenth day of the seventh month.*” This is The Jubilee. It is The Marriage Feast which begins on The Day of Atonement. What type of fast does God want? He does not want you looking maudlin and pale. He doesn’t want you in ragged clothing. He wants you to be set free. He wants you to give to the poor and help individuals who are in need. After the resurrection, He wants to *release* everybody’s *debt* or *sin*.

### Proclaim Liberty

This is true love. Beautiful, isn’t it? You are to be *One* with God. How long does this Holy Day last? He says, “<sup>10</sup>*And you shall hallow the fiftieth year and proclaim liberty throughout all the land to all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee to you; and you shall return every man to his possession.*” God gave an inheritance to Israel; but, as you found in *The Book of The Law*, God also gave an inheritance to The Gentiles. This is the time when there is *no more debt to pay*, “<sup>10</sup>*return every man to his possession.*” It doesn’t require *redeeming*. Do you get the point? There is no price to pay. No Savior is needed – only a *Judge*. These people are not required to be in *The Book of Life* because only those in *The Book of Life* are to be *redeemed* before the time, “<sup>10</sup>*and you shall return every man to his possession and you shall return every man to his family.*”

### Feast Of Marriage

Have you ever wondered why *the church* named their

feasts after *love feasts* (*agàpè* feasts)? It is because of *The Feast of Marriage*. “<sup>12</sup>*For it is the jubilee; it shall be holy to you: you shall eat the increased thereof out of the field.* <sup>13</sup>*In the year of this jubilee you shall return every man to his possession.* <sup>14</sup>*And if you sell ought to your neighbour, or buy ought of your neighbour's hand, you shall not oppress one another.”* This certainly sounds like Isaiah 58. If you want to buy a person's land and it is The 25<sup>th</sup> Year with 25 more years until The Jubilee Year, then you can only retain it for the remaining 25 years. This is why Christ had to come and pay a price.

If you want the land back before the 25 years end, you must redeem it. That is why *Baal marriage* makes a woman a possession, just as the land was a possession. Christ has to come to *redeem* you before The Jubilee. Do you understand the impact of all this? Christians are *saved* in The First Resurrection as Christ's Bride. This is *the great mystery* of The Church and Christ. In Leviticus 25, “<sup>16</sup>*According to the multitude of years you shall increase the price thereof and according to the fewness of years you shall diminish the price of it.”* The parable of the penny relates to this. He said that in The 9<sup>th</sup> Hour, He would pay the workers *a penny*. Then in The 11<sup>th</sup> Hour, He said He would pay them *a penny*. It was His to give and He determined the price. *He is The Redeemer.*

Leviticus 25:15-18 <sup>15</sup>According to the number of years after the jubilee you shall buy of your neighbour and according to the number of years of the fruits he shall sell to you: <sup>16</sup>According to the multitude of years you shall increase the price thereof and according to the fewness of years you shall diminish the price of it: for

according to the number of the years of the fruits does he sell to you. <sup>17</sup>You shall not therefore oppress one another; but you shall fear your God: for I *am* the LORD your God. <sup>18</sup>Wherefore you shall do my statutes and keep my judgments and do them; and you shall dwell in the land in safety.

**This is talking about The Time of The Restoration.**

Leviticus 25:23-27 <sup>23</sup>The land shall not be sold for ever: for the land is mine; for you are strangers and sojourners with me. <sup>24</sup>And in all the land of your possession you shall grant a redemption for the land. <sup>25</sup>If your brother be waxen poor and has sold away some of his possession and if any of his kin come to redeem it, then shall he redeem that which his brother sold. <sup>26</sup>And if the man have none to redeem it and himself be able to redeem it; <sup>27</sup>Then let him count the years of the sale thereof and restore the overplus to the man to whom he sold it; that he may return to his possession.

To explain The Redemption, “<sup>23</sup>*The land shall not be sold for ever.* [Therefore, the death penalty on humanity cannot be forever]. *For the land is mine; for you are strangers and sojourners with me.* <sup>24</sup>*And in all the land of your possession you shall grant a redemption for the land.*” You are able to redeem it. That is why Boaz was able to redeem the land. Now carefully analyze the text of Leviticus 25. The message is that Christ had to come as The Savior to pay the price for your *redemption* through His death. This is before The Jubilee. That is why Pentecost (The Spring Harvest) is the early harvest. The Fall Harvest of The

Great Jubilee of The Last Great Day is when you have a Redeemer. If you have no Redeemer, then you can not be released from your debt or *The Marriage of The Land and People*, until The Jubilee. The Jubilee is The Fiftieth Year when everyone else is *released* (but not all are redeemed). To be "*redeemed*," Christ literally had to come and pay a price for you and buy you before The Jubilee. That is the reason you are in *The Lamb's Book of Life* and you go to The Marriage along with The Guests. *Marriage* truly explains the meaning of God's *word*. Isaiah 58 through Isaiah 66 fills in all the pieces of the time period. Then, study Leviticus 25 about The Redemption and The Jubilee.

## Two Vital Roles

Christ has two roles. First, He is *The Redeemer* (before The Jubilee for The Bride and Guests) and secondly, He is *The Judge* to *release* everyone else after the sentence (The Jubilee). Many worldly churches just observe the bread and the wine (Communion) without The Jubilee because they do not know that God is *saving everyone*. With this major piece of the puzzle solved, you now have the complete picture. Christ came as The Redeemer *before* The Year of Jubilee. He can buy you and *redeem* you before The Jubilee. He will restore everything to the original Marriage with The Bride and The Guests, but *no one else*. When The Bride and Groom are married and The Marriage Jubilee (wedding feast) takes place, then where are the children? When do The Bride and Groom have children? Where do they come from? Read about God's *thoughts* for His Creation which are so wonderfully explained (Psalm 40). He talks about Christ and how Christ had to qualify. He had to *redeem you* and, then, He will give you everything

**He has. It is more than overwhelming! Read about God's beautiful *purposes for His creation.***

**Revelation 19:1** And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation and glory and honour and power to the Lord our God.

**Revelation 19:7** Let us be glad and rejoice and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come and his wife has made herself ready.

**The fall of Babylon and the great whore is explained in Chapter 18. She is called a whore and doesn't think she will ever be a widow. The fall of Babylon and this great false woman is followed by instruction regarding The True Woman of Christ in Revelation 19. So, Isaiah 58 ties in with this by showing how to make yourself ready (by getting *dressed in righteousness*).**

## **Armies Of God**

**Revelation 19:14-16** <sup>14</sup>And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. <sup>15</sup>And out of his mouth goes a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treads the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. <sup>16</sup>And he has on his vesture and on his thigh, a name written, KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.

**Christ (The Prince) is now ready to *resurrect His Bride***

(*the church*) (just like Snow White). The fine linen that is white and clean is the clothing of *righteousness*. He is “**KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.**” The Prince will come on His white horse with His armies to receive *the church* (Snow White). This coincides with the child's story *The Wizard of Oz*. What did Dorothy need to do? She had to find *the right path* to go back home. Jesus said, “*I am the Alpha and the Omega. I am the beginning and the end.*” Dorothy (Eve) was hopelessly lost.

Just as Eve lost God, she also lost her husband (or the way he should have been). When you read *The Song Of Solomon* you realize that she *lost Eternal Life*. That is why she was trying to find her way back. When she winds through all the mazes, she sees New Jerusalem off in the distance. What does it look like? It is like *an emerald rainbow*. Do you remember the song “*Over The Rainbow?*” That is the story of *The Wizard Of Oz*. Remember, Dorothy had shoes that were special, just like Cinderella's slippers. Writers often borrow concepts from *The Bible* when writing children's fairy tales.

Revelation 21:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. <sup>3</sup>And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men and he will dwell with them and they shall be his people and God himself shall be with them and be their God. <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor

crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. <sup>5</sup>And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said to me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. <sup>6</sup>And he said to me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give to him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

## The Final Scene

*New Jerusalem is the wedding site. It is The Marriage of The Land and The People. God will establish His abode with the people. There will be no more pain, sorrow or suffering of any kind. This is The True Sabbath Rest. All the former things have passed away and it will be like The Garden of Eden. It is Paradise (The Beginning and The End). This includes The Guests at The Wedding and all the others. They will receive The Fountain of The Water of Life freely.*

These are all those who are written in *The Book of The Life of The Lamb*. *The Book of The Life of The Lamb* includes The Marriage and The Marriage Feast. If you are not invited to the marriage or marriage feast, you will get burned, *but only to the point of your repentance*. God will give you every opportunity. He will wait until you are ready. It is very plain and very simple.





## Chapter 9

### THE COVENANTS

God has had *a plan* of reproducing Himself from the very beginning of time. In fact, *The Bible* was created as a puzzle. Everyone has a chance to be called, but only at his/her own appointed time. When Christ returns to earth, He will put down all the enemies of God. This includes Satan who will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Then, Christ will turn everything over to God, The Father.

**This theme of complete victory by Christ is a powerful one. In due course, His *rule* will be followed by the consummate act of turning everything over to God, The Father.**

I Corinthians 15:28 And when all things shall be subdued to him, then shall the Son also himself be subject to him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

**There are *five different covenants or agreements* that God made in order to bring His *purpose to fruition*.**

#### Five Covenants

In order to create a universe with *a family and sons*, God arranged His *plan* to have *five separate agreements*. Four of those will eventually produce The Kingdom of God (Sons of God). The fifth and final agreement is when God estab-

lishes His *Kingdom* and makes everything new. Each time God makes *an agreement* or *covenant*, it is for *a different specific purpose*. Furthermore, each covenant is based on *different requirements*. Many worldly *churches* get confused with the various *covenants* so Christians argue and debate *the covenants*. Since *these agreements* have *different purposes*, it is important for you to understand *the differences* between each *agreement* or *covenant*.

All of God's *covenants* will finally result in all mankind becoming Sons of God. God made these *agreements* with either *one person*, *a group of people* or with *the whole world*. *These agreements* were made with Adam and Eve, with one nation (Israel) and, finally, with all nations.

It can be confusing when a person does not understand the end result for *each covenant*. For those who earnestly want to understand, God makes it eminently clear and keeps it very simple. However, this depends upon the reader following *each scripture* step-by-step. God used one of His powers (name or title) in reference to *a particular agreement*. You must know the titles or names that God uses. God uses six of them in *The Old Testament* and one in *The New Testament*. Even God's name or title causes Christians to argue. Each title or name denotes what God is doing in a particular situation.

### Accurate Identity Through Names

God names things for what they are. He uses a specific name when preparing a new contract. He is revealing His *purpose* for any particular contract at any given time. When He uses "*Elohim*," it is a plural word meaning

**“many.”** God is reproducing Himself. Many Christians believe in *a trinity* while others believe in the notion of just *two gods*. But, there is only *one God*. Few understand that He uses one of His names when depicting what He wants to accomplish *at a particular time*. When God came to deal with Israel as a nation, He became “**YHWH**” (JHVH). He was never known by that name to any of the fathers (Abraham, Isaac or Jacob). YHWH (JHVH) is the **“I AM THAT I AM.”** So YHWH (JHVH) was the name He used specifically for Israel.

Abraham not only had *Elohim* but also *El Shaddai*. *Elohim* is the plural or *universal* God who is *all encompassing* (God’s purpose is to be *all and in all*). When God uses the name “*Elohim*,” He is talking about being in everything or dealing on a *universal basis*. When talking to Abraham, God was *Elohim* and *El Shaddai*, *The Mighty Pourer-Forth* or *nurturer*. “*El Shaddai*” means “*mighty*,” “*nurturing*” and “*prospering*.” When He talked to Abraham, He was *Elohim*, a *Nurturer* and *The Mighty Giver for the whole universe*. He was *the one* who made everyone prosper.

In Hebrew, the word “*JHVH*” means “*merciful*,” “*just*,” “*good*,” “*righteous*” and “*a judgmental God*.” This is the name He used when dealing with Israel. God *wanted Israel to repent*, but Israel was stubborn and unrepentant. That was *the purpose of His covenant* with them. *The covenant*, which included *The Law*, was designed to bring them to Christ. *The Law* was to bring Israel to repentance. Many Christians think God is very stern. In a way, He is very demanding – *an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth*. Through His different names, God *will reveal what He is doing in each covenant or agreement*.

## Why God Is A Father

When you get to *The New Testament*, you find God with, yet, another name, *Our Father*. This is a *personal* Father with a *one-on-one* relationship through His Son, Jesus Christ. So, your Father created a *family relationship*. God became a Father who gives, teaches, instructs, forgives and loves. He has drawn up “*a will*” so you can receive an *inheritance*. These *agreements* appropriately fit the name they were given by God, who uses it to tie in with a *particular covenant*. That key will help you understand when you study *The Bible*.

Hebrews 4:2-3 <sup>2</sup>For to us was the gospel preached, as well as to them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it. <sup>3</sup>For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

*God's Sabbath rest was Paradise in The Garden of Eden and it was very good. Everything was perfect. God gave instructions to Adam and Eve, making an agreement with them. A covenant was created in Eden. Since there was no Law, the requirement was faith or belief under this first covenant. At first, Adam and Eve didn't realize they were naked. They learned this after their first sin. Consider the situation posed later, “As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest [referring back to the beginning] although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.” This is when everything was complete in The Garden of Eden. In The Book of Revelation, God*

tells you that He is The Alpha and The Omega. He tells you that *the beginning* and *the end* are *one and the same*. *The end picks up from the beginning and completes God's Plan*. Christ came "to save [restore] what was lost" (Matthew 18:11). Both are concerned with *entering God's rest*.

## The Word Of God

Christ became The Word of God. Jesus Christ said He did what The Father told Him to do. That statement alone ought to explain that there is only *one* God. The Word (before Christ became human) didn't exist as another *being* because *that Word* became Christ. Christ spoke and acted like The Father. Christ *became The Word of God* or *The Living Word of God* (John 1:14). In *The Book of Revelation*, He is referred to as The Alpha and The Omega, as well as being The Word of God. From the beginning, He was God's *word* (God's *thoughts* and God's *mind*).

Because Adam and Eve did not have *faith*, they did not enter into God's *rest* (Sabbath) nor could they remain in The Garden of Eden. They had to be cut off from The Tree of Life. Paradise was lost and, as a result, Christ had to come restore this idyllic state for Adam, Eve and all of God's Creation. He had to come so you, too, can have Eternal Life.

For thousands of years, people have wondered why God didn't make humans perfect from the beginning and give them everything wonderful in His *kingdom*. He tried. God gave Adam and Eve that chance, but He had to give them *free choice*. *This free choice* is a trait that God has, so He wants all His *children* to have it too.

When God gave them *the right* to choose, He made an agreement saying, “*Here is The Tree of Life and here is The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. You must decide what is right and wrong.*” That was *the first agreement* between God and man. Adam was a type or a figure of Jesus Christ (Romans 5:14). Eve, whose name means “*the mother of all living,*” was the type of the mother for everyone or New Jerusalem. So, Adam and Eve, as a type, could have been Christ and *the church*. Notice that they, also, had been joined according to God’s *marriage*.

Genesis 1:27-28 <sup>27</sup>So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. <sup>28</sup>And God blessed them and God said to them, Be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.

## Made In The Image Of God

In Genesis 1, God is *Elohim*, the all-encompassing God who is *All and In All*. Had Adam and Eve made the correct choice, then all their generations would not have had to suffer for thousands of years. “*And God said, Let us make man in our image*” (Genesis 1:26). This is the same as with The 24 Elders and all the sons that were not begotten of God. “<sup>28</sup>*And God blessed them* [Adam and Eve]. <sup>27</sup>*So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.*” Adam and Eve were married as one flesh. Not only is God dominantly male but He, also, has a female side. Both are in God. Christ is your Husband and *the church* is The Bride. The

Bride will become *one* with Christ in God's type of *love*. Therefore, you are becoming *one* with God, The Father. You are a Son and a reproduction of God. "28 *God blessed them* [He married them] *And God said to them, Be fruitful and multiply* [God wants children] *and replenish the earth and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.*"

### First Covenant Agreement

God told this first couple about the two trees, which is *the first agreement* between God and man (Genesis 2). It is *a covenant*. Furthermore, the name "Elohim," besides being plural, also means "covenant keeper." So God, as *Elohim*, enters into *covenants* or *agreements* which He will not break. It is *a universal agreement*. In the beginning, Adam had it all. He and Eve were in Paradise. They had *Eternal Life* (The Tree of Life), but they, also, had the choice of death. This was *the first agreement*.

Four more *covenants* will be covered. These are *the covenants* God made with various human beings. Then, along came Satan. *The Book of Galatians* tells you very plainly that *The Law* was added 430 years after Abraham. Paul also said, "Where there is no law, there is no [what?] *sin*" (Romans 5:13). If God doesn't reveal His *truth* to you, then you are not responsible. All they had to do was believe God, have *faith* and eat of The Tree of Life. That was *the covenant* and *the agreement*.

Instead, they sold themselves to Satan. In Hebrew, the word "Satan" is "Hay-lale," translated by Jerome (a Cath-



olic priest) into "*Lucifer*." The Hebrew word "*Hay-lale*" means "*bright bolster*." Satan's marriage idol was Baal, *the god of fertility*. Eve bought into Satan's story. When they ate from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil, they recognized they were naked. Only then, did they realize that the woman was *a sex object* used for reproduction. Thus, she became *a slave or property* of the man.

Satan is *the god of this world*. *A seed* would have to come and *redeem the world* by buying them back from Satan's domination (Genesis 3:15). They had followed Satan's system and type of marriage. There were two types of marriages: 1) Godly marriage, which is true love or *agapè* and 2) Satan's marriage, which is *eros, passion, emotion, sex, compatibility* and *philia*. You are presented with *two opposing types of marriage*.

If Adam and Eve had eaten the fruit of The Tree of Life, then you and your children would be in *Paradise*. Wouldn't that be wonderful? But, it didn't happen. In *God's marriage*, both male and female are of each other (one flesh). Because they are *one flesh*, they have God's love or *agapè*. Through God's love, both are concerned for the other's welfare. Satan's marriage (Baal) views the woman as a sex object, a slave and as the man's property.

## The Second Covenant

The First Covenant was given to Adam and Eve. *The second covenant* was *The Promise of The Seed*. *The promise* is that Christ will redeem Adam and Eve's children from Satan (Genesis 3:15). This covenant (which is a different contract) is with Abraham, who was *a faithful and righ-*

*teous* man because he believed God. This is God's *second covenant*, which had *a promise* about *Christ, The Seed*. It did not have any other requirements.

*The promise* was made to Abraham because of Abraham's willingness to sacrifice Isaac. Abraham already met the requirement (his faith), so *this Covenant* became *a promise* without any added conditions. Circumcision would not be necessary after Christ, *The Seed*, came.

Hebrews 11:8-18 <sup>8</sup>By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. <sup>9</sup>By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs of him of the same promise: <sup>10</sup>For he looked for a city which has foundations, whose builder and maker is God. <sup>11</sup>Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised. <sup>12</sup>Therefore sprang there even of one and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable. <sup>13</sup>These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off and were persuaded of them and embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. <sup>14</sup>For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. <sup>15</sup>And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned. <sup>16</sup>But now they desire a better country, that

is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he has prepared for them a city. <sup>17</sup>By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, <sup>18</sup>Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall your seed be called.

Many people are so busy trying to understand what *faith* is that they don't pay attention to what the text actually says (Hebrews 11). When you understand what God *plans to accomplish*, then will you learn the meaning of *faith*.

This chapter shows that it was an act of faith for Abraham to go into an unknown land (Verse 8). Abraham obeyed God and kept His *commandments* and *statutes*. And, yet, there was *no law*. Abraham kept God's *commandments* simply because he had *faith* in God. He had *agàpè love*. When you have *agàpè love*, you will have God's Law in your heart (Romans 13:10). When God told Abraham to go to Canaan, he obeyed, "*for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.*"

## Abraham In Eden?

What if Abraham had been in The Garden of Eden instead of Adam? You can be sure that Abraham would have eaten of The Tree of Life. "*By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles.*" Abraham never lived in a house (only tents). Isaac and Jacob lived in tents too. This was because, "<sup>10</sup>*For he looked for a city which has foundations, whose builder and maker is God.*" This applies to *The New Heaven and The New Earth* (New Jerusalem). The example of *faith* continues

with Sarah conceiving *the promised child*, Isaac (Verse 11). At first, Sarah laughed because she did not think it was possible. Then the story continues, “<sup>12</sup>*Therefore sprang there even of one and him as good as dead [very old], so many as the stars of the sky in multitude and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.*” God was going to make many nations throughout the generations. A whole host of nations were to come from *the seed* of Sarah and Abraham. Yet, “<sup>13</sup>*These all died in faith, not having received the promises.*”

### Why Circumcision?

This Covenant was sealed with *circumcision*. Why *circumcision*? Being *circumcised* was a sign of being delivered from Satan’s *system* or method of reproduction. It shadows humanity being delivered from Satan on The Eighth Day. The Eighth Day refers to The Eighth Day after The Fall Feast. On that day, Christ reveals *the release* from Satan. Christ said, “*If any man thirst, let him come to me and drink*” (John 7:38). This symbolizes Christ offering The Holy Spirit to everyone. However, this time it is *circumcision of the heart*.

Circumcision symbolized getting rid of the filth of the flesh of Satan’s children. This was to allow a person to have *the right relationship* with God. God chose *circumcision* as the sign of *The Covenant*. Starting with Adam, Satan is trapping most of mankind. Now Christ, The Seed, would change that. Circumcision causes one to bleed, so it was no wonder that Moses’ wife said that he was a bloody man. When Christ came and through His death, His *blood* was spilled. From then on, *circumcision* was no

longer required. The only requirement was *circumcision of the heart* (*true repentance*).

### The Sole Requirement

With *the first agreement*, Adam and Eve's only requirement was to believe. However, they never made it into *the rest*. With Abraham and all who came from his loins, *circumcision* was their only requirement. God said that through Isaac and Jacob, *the promises* would be fulfilled. *This Seed* would come to *buy the people* back from Satan's system. These people all died without receiving *the promises*, but, "*were persuaded of them and embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.*" The Abrahamic Covenant was made with *circumcision* being a *sign* of the promise. However, *the promises* were still not received in their lifetime.

Notice, "<sup>14</sup>*For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. <sup>15</sup>And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.* [But they did not return. The reason is made clear]. <sup>16</sup>*But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly.*" At that time, they knew there would be *a New Heaven* and *a New Earth* sometime in the future. This is certain because the text says that God, "*has prepared for them a city.* <sup>17</sup>*By faith Abraham offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son.*"

*The promise* would be realized through Isaac and, specifically, The Tribe of Judah. *This covenant* had *promises* that were different from *the later promises* of *The New*

***Covenant.*** So, *this second covenant* was totally based on *faith* and became *a promise* (Galatians 3:17). As a young adult, Isaac was willing to be offered. *The second covenant* had no more requirements, so it became *a promise*. This promise is in the form of *an inheritance*. In fact, *this covenant* did not have an immediate payoff. It was not to be given until *The New Heaven* and *The New Earth* came. This is when The Kingdom of God comes to earth (Hebrews 11:13-16).

Hebrews 4:4-7 <sup>4</sup>For he spoke in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works. <sup>5</sup>And in this place again, if they shall enter into my rest. <sup>6</sup>Seeing therefore it remains that some must enter therein and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief: <sup>7</sup>Again, he limits a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, Today if you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.

### Third Covenant

*The covenant* made with Moses (and a nation) is *the third covenant*. The Seventh Day is a reflection of The Garden of Eden, “<sup>4</sup>*And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.* [This is paralleled with] *enter into my rest.* <sup>6</sup>*Seeing therefore it remains that some must enter therein and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief* [no faith], <sup>7</sup>*Again, he limits a certain day* [or time], *saying in David, Today, after so long a time; as it is said, Today if you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.*” Through David, *the promises* were going to be fulfilled. It was the only way they could enter into *the rest*. That is

why they were *not* allowed to enter into God's *rest* after *the wilderness trek*.

Deuteronomy 5:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And Moses called all Israel and said to them, Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day, that you may learn them and keep and do them. <sup>2</sup>The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. <sup>3</sup>The LORD made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us, who are all of us here alive this day. <sup>4</sup>The LORD talked with you face to face in the mount out of the midst of the fire. <sup>5</sup>(I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to show you the word of the LORD: for you were afraid by reason of the fire and went not up into the mount;) saying, <sup>6</sup>I am the LORD thy God, which brought you out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.

## Elderly Moses

*This third covenant* comes at the time when Moses is getting old. *The Book of Deuteronomy* is the *re-writing* of the covenant. *This third covenant* is based on *the second one*. *Exodus* is the history of the covenants. At the end of *Deuteronomy*, Moses dies. Joshua may have completed the last chapter of *Deuteronomy*. Moses talked to the children of Israel about what they were promised in *the third* (Old) *covenant*. “<sup>1</sup>And Moses called all Israel and said to them, Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day [Moses called the people to attention in order to hear about] <sup>2</sup>The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb.” This was at Mount Sinai (Exodus 19 and 20). “<sup>3</sup>The LORD made not this covenant with our fathers.” This is *not the covenant* that was made with Abraham. This is



*a different covenant with a different purpose and different results. Yes, it was based on The Abrahamic Covenant, but it is different, nonetheless. God was making this covenant because something else had to be done.*

## A Mighty Display

God showed Israel a mighty display of His power to reinforce the seriousness of what was transpiring, *“<sup>4</sup>The LORD talked with you face to face in the mount out of the midst of the fire. <sup>5</sup>I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to show you the word of the LORD: for you were afraid by reason of the fire.”* God is a consuming fire so He could not show Himself (Hebrews 12:29). If He had, then Moses would have been burned to a crisp. A powerful figure, an angel, represents God (Acts 7). *“For you were afraid by reason of the fire and went not up into the mount saying, <sup>6</sup>I am the LORD your God.”* Now, onto *The Ten Commandments.*

Deuteronomy 5:22-27 <sup>22</sup>These words the LORD spoke to all your assembly in the mount out of the midst of the fire, of the cloud and of the thick darkness, with a great voice: and he added no more. And he wrote them in two tables of stone and delivered them to me. <sup>23</sup>And it came to pass, when he heard the voice out of the midst of the darkness, (for the mountain did burn with fire,) that you came near to me, even all the heads of your tribes and your elders; <sup>24</sup>And you said, Behold, the LORD our God has showed us his glory and his greatness and we have heard his voice out of the midst of the fire: we have seen this day that God does talk with man and he lives. <sup>25</sup>Now therefore why should we die? For this great fire will consume us:



if we hear the voice of the LORD our God any more, then we shall die. <sup>26</sup>For who is there of all flesh, that has heard the voice of the living God speaking out of the midst of the fire, as we have and lived? <sup>27</sup>Go you near and hear all that the LORD our God shall say: and speak you to us all that the LORD our God shall speak to you; and we will hear it and do it.

*The Ten Commandments* was the only law they were to receive because the text says, “*and he added no more.*”

### Moses Takes Dictation

Later, God told Moses to write everything in a book. Moses went up a second time after he had broken the previous tablets and was told, “*Write down all the words I give you in a book.*” Moses recorded all The Judgments, Statutes, Washings, Meal Offerings, Sacrifices, Holy Days, New Moons and Sabbaths. This became *The Law of Moses* which states *the conditions* imposed by *The Old Covenant*. *This third covenant* was not like *the other covenants*, which made certain promises to Abraham. It did not have conditions like *the covenant* with Moses.

Deuteronomy 5:32-33 <sup>32</sup>You shall observe to do therefore as the LORD your God has commanded you: you shall not turn aside to the right hand or to the left. <sup>33</sup>You shall walk in all the ways which the LORD your God has commanded you, that you may live and that it may be well with you and that you may prolong your days in the land which you shall possess.

What did *this covenant* do? It instructed the people not to

deviate from the course that had been set. How much of *The Law* were they required to follow? The answer is: *all of it*. They could not turn to the left or to the right.

The Israelites had to do *exactly what God said*. “<sup>33</sup>*You shall walk in all the ways which the LORD your God has commanded you...that you may prolong your days in the land.*” So this Covenant was intended to bring *long life, prosperity, abundance and physical blessings*. However, there was *no Salvation*. During this time, God was known as YHWH (JHVH). His *Name* denotes that He *was good, merciful, righteous, just and most Holy*.

Deuteronomy 30:19 I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both you and your seed may live.

God made this same offer to Adam and Eve, but the rules were different for a very good reason. In the case of Adam and Eve, God told them what was *right* and what was *wrong*. They had to make a decision regarding what to choose. In Deuteronomy 30:19, God signed *an agreement* with Moses, “*I call heaven and earth to record this day against you.*” What did this Covenant contain? It concerns “*life and death.*”

## Making The Right Choice

This is the same *choice that Adam and Eve* had. They were offered The Tree of Life and The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. The same options were available in *the agreement* with Moses except additional stipulations *were*

*added*, which were “*blessings and cursings.*” This *agreement* had a blessing and a curse. To keep any part of *The Law of Moses*, you had to keep *all of The Law*. A person could *not miss one part of it*. If they did, they would receive a penalty – death.

If you, as a Christian, think you must keep *The Law of Moses*, then you must *keep it all* (Galatians 3:10). If you do not keep it all, then you are cursed. What does *The Bible* mean when it says, “*you are not under The Law?*” Worldly religious groups believe that it means you are under *The Law* with its penalties. However, in *The Scripture*, you will find it means to not be under *The Law*. It has nothing to do with a penalty. To be *under the penalty* means you are *under a curse*. This *covenant* had two important parts: 1) *life and blessings* and 2) *death and cursings*. To be *under the curse* means to be under the penalty. This *covenant* was a blessing for *life*. God told Adam and Eve that, in The Garden of Eden, there was A Tree of Life or the curse of *death*.

Hebrews 8:1-5 <sup>1</sup>Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such a high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; <sup>2</sup>A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched and not man. <sup>3</sup>For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer. <sup>4</sup>For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law: <sup>5</sup>Who serve to the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was

about to make the tabernacle: for, See, said he, that you make all things according to the pattern showed to you in the mount.

When you study *The Bible* and understand the significance of *this Old Covenant Law*, you must not study selected pieces only. *You must study it all*. All of the pieces (big and small) of the puzzle must fit together. You must look at *The Scriptures* you agree with as well as those *Scriptures* with which you do not agree. You must allow *The Scriptures* to open your eyes to any new *truths*. God allows you to read. This is a process that takes time, prayer and study.

### Priesthood Comparisons

The basic difference between The Priesthood of Melchizedek and The Priesthood of Aaron relates to *The New Covenant* and *The Old Covenant*, “<sup>1</sup>Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; <sup>2</sup>A minister of the sanctuary and of the true tabernacle.” The theme is presented this way because *the old tabernacle* and *The Old Covenant* were *not* the primary intent of God’s plan. *The Old Covenant* and *The Tabernacle* were symbolic and only spoke of Christ (John 5:46). They were a type of *the true tabernacle in heaven*, “*which the Lord pitched and not man*. <sup>3</sup>*For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer*. <sup>4</sup>*For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest*.”

If Jesus was on earth at the time of *The Epistle of Hebrews*, then He would not have fulfilled the role of Melchizedek.

He could only be Melchizedek in *heaven* at the right hand of God. In fact, Paul said that if Christ were on *earth*, He could not have been Melchizedek, “*seeing that they are priests that offer gifts according to the law [The Old Covenant] <sup>5</sup>Who serve to the example and shadow of heavenly things.*”

*The entire Old Covenant includes The Law of Moses. Everything they did was only a shadow or picture of the future heaven or kingdom. The Old Covenant that was made with Moses and The Children of Israel was not real. The Old Covenant with The Law of Moses was just a shadow. The whole Law pointed to Christ (Hebrews 10:1).*

John 5:39-47 <sup>39</sup>Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. <sup>40</sup>And you will not come to me, that you might have life. <sup>41</sup>I receive not honour from men. <sup>42</sup>But I know you, that you have not the love of God in you. <sup>43</sup>I am come in my Father's name and you receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him you will receive. <sup>44</sup>How can you believe, which receive honour one of another and seek not the honour that comes from God only? <sup>45</sup>Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuses you, even Moses, in whom you trust. <sup>46</sup>For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me: for he wrote of me. <sup>47</sup>But if you believe not his writings, how shall you believe my words?

## Search The Scriptures

These are the words from your Savior, “<sup>39</sup>*Search the scrip-*

tures.” *The only Scriptures* that were available at that time was *The Old Testament*. Why should anyone search? The answer is, “*for in them you think you have eternal life.*” The whole argument between The Pharisees and The Sadducees was that The Sadducees did not believe in *the resurrection*. However, The Pharisees did believe in *The Resurrection*. The Sadducees *did not* understand that there would be a resurrection. They kept waiting for *The Promised Seed*. Scholars and Christians get into arguments because they do not understand the difference between *The Old* and *New Covenants*.

The controversy regarding whether you have to keep *The Law of Moses* only proves that these combatants still do not have all of the information. *The Holy Scriptures* say, “<sup>39</sup>*are they which testify of me.* <sup>40</sup>*And you will not come to me, that you might have life.*” The only way you can obtain *life* is through Christ or *The New Covenant*. *The New Covenant* is real. It writes God’s Law in your heart because it is not just a shadow. *The purpose of The Old Covenant* (a shadow) with *The Law of Moses* was to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24). You cannot obtain *everlasting life* under *The Old Covenant*. You can keep *The Old Covenant* with *The Law of Moses* till *the kingdom* comes. But, in doing so, you will never obtain *life*. Jesus said, “<sup>41</sup>*I receive not honour from men.* <sup>42</sup>*But I know you, that you have not the love of God in you* [you do not have God’s *agàpè* love “*In You*”]. <sup>43</sup>*I am come in my Father’s name and you receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him you will receive.* <sup>44</sup>*How can you believe.*” Some say, “*Well, what that Scripture really means is...*” Then, all they give is their own opinion. When you hear this, all sorts of warnings should go off in your mind.

## Coming In Whose Name?

Jesus went on to explain about those who come in the name of a greater authority. He said, “<sup>43</sup>*I am come in my Father's name and you receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him you will receive.* [He wanted to know the basis for their actions]. <sup>44</sup>*How can you believe, which receive honour one of another and seek not the honour that comes from God only?* <sup>45</sup>*Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuses you, even Moses, in whom you trust.*”

This was *the purpose* of *The Law*. The first step is to have a person *repent*. The next step, which is through Christ, is for *The Law* to be written in *your heart* (Hebrews 8:10). To have *The Ten Commandments* written in your heart means you are living like Christ. You never think of lying, stealing or breaking any of *The Commandments*. Jesus told the religious leaders, “<sup>46</sup>*For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me: for he wrote of me.* <sup>47</sup>*But if you believe not his writings, how shall you believe my words?*” *The Old Covenant* was a *shadow* of Christ who brought *The New Covenant*. God writes His Law in your heart through “Christ – *In You*.” *The Law of Moses* (The Letter) cannot please God or *save* you. This Law can only bring you to Christ.

Hebrews 8:5-11 <sup>5</sup>Who serve to the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle: for, See, said he, *that* you make all things according to the pattern showed to you in the mount. <sup>6</sup>But now has he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much

also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. <sup>7</sup>For if that first *covenant* had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. <sup>8</sup>For finding fault with them, he said, Behold, the days come, said the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: <sup>9</sup>Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant and I regarded them not, said the Lord. <sup>10</sup>For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, said the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God and they shall be to me a people. <sup>11</sup>And they shall not teach every man his neighbour and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

*The Old Covenant and The Law* pointed to Christ and was “*a shadow of heavenly things.*” Moses was instructed to build everything according to the pattern that was set down in the heavens. This was the basis for Christ, who “*has he obtained a more excellent ministry* [a better ministry than Moses] *by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant.*”

### Angel Of The Lord

God spoke to the people through an angel saying that *this covenant* (between Israel and God) was not *the same covenant* He made with Abraham and Isaac. The evidence is,



***“<sup>7</sup>For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second.” If The Law of Moses kept you from sinning, made you righteous and perfect, then why would you need any other covenant? The answer is, “<sup>8</sup>finding fault with them.” What is this fault? The answer is, “Behold, the days come, said the LORD, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah” (Jeremiah 31:31).***

**What is *The New Covenant*? It is, “<sup>9</sup>Not according to the covenant, that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant and I regarded them not, said the Lord. <sup>10</sup>For this is the covenant [this is taken right out of Jeremiah 31:31-34. The passage is talking about *The New Covenant* with the church] *I will put my laws into their mind and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God and they shall be to me a people.”* This is the vital change in the old procedure. It will bring about the condition, “<sup>11</sup>And they shall not teach every man his neighbour and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.” It is God’s Holy Spirit in each human that helps them know good from evil.**

## **Changing Human Nature**

**What will make the people different? They will know Him because they will have His Law written in their hearts. The Letter (the physical *Law of Moses*) can only bring you to Christ and *repentance* (*The Law* is no longer required) (II Corinthians 3:1-3). *This covenant ended in 70 A.D. when The Temple was destroyed.***

*The Law of Moses* was only supposed to last until Christ came (Galatians 3:19). How plain could these *Scriptures* be? Once Jesus came, *The Law* that was given to Moses was simply not required! It was no longer in force. You just need to repent when God calls you. *The Law of Moses* was only intended for unrepentant people (I Timothy 1:9). In Hebrew, the word “*beriyth*” means “*covenant*” (Deuteronomy 5). So literally “*beriyth*” means in Hebrew “*to cut in half*” or “*to choose.*” It is *an agreement or covenant* with a choice between one or the other (life or death or blessing or cursing). God’s *agreements* and *promises* are based upon your choosing *life*. In *The New Covenant* you learn that God writes His Laws in your heart and mind.

The word “*covenant*” in Greek means “*terms of the agreement*” (*an inheritance or gift*). *The New Covenant* is a *promise*. It does not have conditions like *The Law of Moses*. There are no other conditions, requirements or choices. It requires *faith* and *repentance*. Some say you must be in both The Letter and in The Spirit. Wrong!

One (The Spirit) is nothing more than *a gift* through *inheritance*. You inherited that right. *The Old Covenant* requires you to choose between two things. You must follow one or the other. It is impossible to do both. You cannot follow The Letter (choose) and The Spirit (receive the promise). You cannot: 1) choose and also 2) inherit.

It is one or the other. You cannot do *works* to obtain a reward and still consider it *a gift*. *The first covenant* was a matter of choice between The Tree of Life or The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. *This second covenant* was based purely on *faith*, with no other conditions.

## Abrahamic Covenant

*The second covenant is The Abrahamic covenant, which The Old and New Covenants are based upon. It was based totally on faith and, because Abraham was The Father of The Faithful, it was counted to him as righteousness.*

The Abrahamic Covenant did not demand or require one to keep *The Law of Moses*. Because of his faith, Abraham kept *The Commandments*, statutes and *The Law* (Romans 2:15). *The Law of Moses* consisted of *blessings* and *cursings*. It literally means “to cut us under the flesh” (a division). You either get the blessings or you get the cursings. It is one or the other. You had to keep *all The Laws*, or you would be cursed. What was wrong with *the first covenant*? The fault was with the people. So God, as YHWH (JHVH), *Merciful, Good, Righteous, Just and Holy*, gave a Law to people who were flawed. They were unrepentant, hard-hearted and stubborn. *The Law of Moses* was made for disobedient people (I Timothy 1:9). *The Law* was not needed for those who were repentant or *righteous* through Christ. The stubborn people were given a choice just like Adam and Eve. They just did not make the right choice.

I Timothy 1:3-9 <sup>3</sup>As I besought you to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that you might charge some that they teach no other doctrine, <sup>4</sup>Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do. <sup>5</sup>Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart and of a good conscience and of faith unfeigned: <sup>6</sup>From which some having swerved have turned aside to vain jangling; <sup>7</sup>Desiring

to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. <sup>8</sup>But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully; <sup>9</sup>Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

Paul was warning The Church not to engage in this kind of dangerous action, “<sup>3</sup>*As I besought you...that you might charge some that they teach no other doctrine,* <sup>4</sup>*Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies* [saying you are the children of Abraham] *which minister questions, Rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do.*” When you have *the truth*, it fits together beautifully. When you don’t have *the truth*, you have one question after another without any *valid answers*.

### Written In The Heart

You keep *The Commandments* because they are written in your heart. Christians must keep *The Commandments* better than they kept *The Law of Moses* (Matthew 5:20 and 6:33). “<sup>5</sup>*Now the end [goal] of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart and of a good conscience and of faith unfeigned.*”

It takes *faith* to keep *The Commandments*. It, also, takes an honesty in your inner being. *The purpose of The Commandments* is to lead or bring you to *agàpè love*. Only then are you fulfilling *The Law* (Romans 13:10). Remember, it is not *an eros* type of love, it is not *philia* love and it is not a matter of emotion. It is *agàpè love*. Some church

groups insist that you must keep *The Law of Moses* (or at least certain parts of it). How do you decide which part to keep? Some say certain parts point to Christ. Wrong. *It all points to Christ.* Even *The Commandments* point to Christ. The only goal of *The Commandments* (as a whole) is *agàpè love*. God is love. Christ is love. It all points to Christ.

If you must keep *The Law of Moses*, which parts do you keep? The answer is “*all parts.*” If you don’t keep all of *The Law*, then you will come under the curse. “*6From which some having swerved have turned aside to vain jangling [what kind of jangling?] 7Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.* [If you are not under *The Law*, you don’t have to teach it, do you? He tells you how to use *The Law*]. *8But we know that the law is good.*” Of course, *The Law* is good.

*The Law of Moses* gave everyone a choice between *life* or *death*. It was a stepping-stone to *repent* and get to Christ. The Tree of Life and The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil were different choices. “*8We know the law is good, if a man [what?] use it lawfully.*” This means that you should use *The Law* the way God intended.

### Law Written For Whom?

How did God want *The Law* to be used? Please underline Verse 9 and, perhaps, you should memorize it, “*9Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man.*” *The Law* is not made for Christians with The Spirit of God within them. Your sins are covered by the blood of Christ and His *righteousness*. Now, how do you use it lawfully?

Here is the answer, *“The law is not made for a righteous man but for the lawless and disobedient.”* Does that sound like it is important for Christians? Rather it says, *“for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers.”* For whom did God make *The Law*? It was made only for *unconverted people*. That is its *sole purpose* according to God. That is why they were given a *choice*. *The Law* was made to *control the ungodly*.

It was filled with works and religious acts that were a burden. Humans do not naturally (inherently) know *right from wrong*. God said, *“Oh that [if] there were such a heart in them”* (Deuteronomy 5:29). This concerns *repentance*. God pleaded with them to *repent*. Galatians 3:23-24 states, *“to be under the Law is to be under a schoolmaster.”* They did not have enough schooling (prayer and faith) to *truly repent*. *Real repentance* is a condition in your mind whereby God can write His Laws in your heart.

II Corinthians 3:1-6 <sup>1</sup>Do we begin again to commend ourselves? Or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you? <sup>2</sup>You are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men: <sup>3</sup>Forasmuch as you are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. <sup>4</sup>And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: <sup>5</sup>Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God; <sup>6</sup>Who also has made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter kills, but the spirit gives life.

Regarding this matter of commendations, does this mean that churches are to be incorporated? This idea sounds like it was written for today's religious organizations. Rather, Paul states, "*<sup>2</sup>You are our epistle written in our hearts.*" What is *The New Covenant*? God writes His Laws in your heart and your mind. That is how Christians are "*known and read of all men.*"

### A Change Of Nature

Christians must have a change of nature (Romans 2:14-15). You don't belong to *a specific church group with a specific name, isolated and incorporated*, "*<sup>3</sup>Forasmuch as you are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink [not the letter], but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone [no Law of Moses], but in fleshy tables of the heart.*" God writes His Laws in your heart. Can you see Him writing all *The Laws* about The Holy Days, Lists of Unleavened Bread, *meats, drinks* and on and on? How could it all be written in your heart? Can you see God writing Christmas and Easter in your heart? No, He is writing *The Laws* in your heart which are far more *righteous*. His *Law* is far more demanding than *The Law of Moses*.

*The Law* that was given to Moses as *a covenant in The Old Testament* was specifically for *carnal, unconverted people*. *The Law is Holy, just and righteous*. *The Law is to lead and bring you to Christ*. "*<sup>4</sup>And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: <sup>5</sup>Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God.*" In other words, as a Christian, you must be humble and always open to learning *truths* as they are revealed



when you study your *Bible*. You must always be teachable and want to know if you are wrong. You repent when you are wrong since your desire is to change and grow *spiritually*. You never act as if you have all or enough of *the truth*, “*Who also has made us able ministers of the new testament.*”

You cannot be in *The Letter of The Law* because *The Letter of The Law kills*. The Spirit gives *life*, but if you don't keep *the whole Law* in every detail, then you will be cursed. Since all have sinned and come short of The Glory of God, everyone would be dead. Study Romans 5 through Romans 8 where Paul explains that which was supposed to be good for him (speaking of *The Law*). However, it only brought death. *The purpose of The Law* is to make you understand how bad you really are (Romans 5:20). That is it. And that is why when people offered sacrifices, they offered animal sacrifices.

### Why Animal Sacrifices?

Did you ever wonder why they offered animal sacrifices? It is because they were carnal, just like an animal or a devouring beast. It was their acknowledgement that they were sinners (this happened with The Azazel Goat when they released him into the wilderness). *This goat was a symbol or type of Satan* (who will be chained for 1000 years because of his beastlike carnality). Until *The Seed* came and paid *the ultimate sacrifice* for everyone's sins, it only showed that they kept sinning. Remember, the priests could never give an offering that would make them perfect (Hebrews 8, Hebrews 9:9 and Hebrews 10:1). It was a reminder that they were, also, sinners. That was *the purpose of The Law*.



The Apostle Paul said he kept *The Law* blamelessly (Philippians 3:6). Paul kept *The Whole Law*. That doesn't mean that he kept it perfectly, but he kept it. Every time Paul did something wrong, he had to do *a work of The Law* because he was under *The Law*. Paul sacrificed giving a meal offering, a washing or putting leavened bread out of his house (during the feast).

At that time, Paul was under *the schoolmaster*. If he touched a dead animal, then he stayed out of the camp until evening. Under *The Law*, they were all in bondage, which was a reminder that they were sinners and needed Christ. Israel did not understand this. Some *worldly churches* say that you are not under *The Law*.

They believe they only have to have *love*. This is not *agàpè*, of course, because they didn't know *agàpè* (God's love). They only know "*eros*." So they have gone from *The Law* that was supposed to bring them to Christ and returned to Satan with *eros* or *passion* (*emotion*). They are still Satan's children. They wail, roll on the floor and cry. They think it is all right to sin because they are now under *The New Covenant* of love (*eros*). The only way anyone can receive *agàpè* is to have God's *Holy Spirit* within them. God is *life* and unless you obtain God's love (which is a moral and an intellectual love), you do not have God's Law in your heart and mind.

You obey *The Law* because you have it written in your heart and your mind, through *agàpè*. God's nature (heart), through "Christ – *In You*," makes you hate sin because it is against *agàpè* to sin. You do not need a written Law to tell you what sin is!

## Ministration Of Death

II Corinthians 3:7 But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away

*“<sup>7</sup>But if the ministration of death [death is what Paul calls *The Old Covenant*] written and engraven in stones, was glorious.”* Even *The Ten Commandments* are a shadow. How are they a shadow? Since a shadow has darkness or an evil meaning, the shadow is also a parable. Jesus spoke in parables to confuse the unbelievers. They are in the dark or shadow. God is light with no darkness (I John 1:5). Keeping the first five commandments is loving God. Keeping the last five is loving your neighbor. In doing so, you enter God’s rest. That is *the whole purpose* of *The Ten Commandments*. That is what they foreshadow (to have God’s Law written in your heart). The goal of *The Ten Commandments* is love, but it does not give you *agapè*. *“<sup>7</sup>But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be [what was to happen?] done away.”* Focus upon the words “*done away*.” According to Paul, *The Old Covenant*, which includes *The Law of Moses*, does not pertain to Christians. Do you believe Paul and God’s *Scriptures*?

When you read *The Books of Romans, Galatians* and *Hebrews* about “*under The Law*,” it means “*under the school-master*.” That was *the purpose* of *The Law*. There are only

ten places in *The Bible* that mention *being under The Law*. Read what it really means.

Galatians 3:19-20 <sup>19</sup>Wherefore then serve the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. <sup>20</sup>Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. <sup>21</sup>Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life verily righteousness should have been by the law. <sup>22</sup>But the scripture has concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

To be under *The Law* is explained, “<sup>19</sup>*Wherefore then serve the law?*” Why do you serve it? The word “*serve*” in Greek is not in *The Bible*. If you look at *Strong's Concordance* and look up the word “*serve*” in Galatians 3:19, it is blank. It is not there. It should read, “*Wherefore then the Law?*” In other words, why *The Law*? That is an accurate translation because the word “*serve*” is not there.

## Purpose Of The Law

What was the purpose of *The Law*? In The King James version, the text says, “<sup>19</sup>*Wherefore then serve the law?*” In other words, why bother keeping it? A better translation is, “*What purpose then has the Law?*” No scripture can make *the purpose* of *The Old Covenant* and *The Law of Moses* any clearer. “*It was added [why?] because of transgressions [for how long?] till the seed should come.*” So, it will last only until *The Seed* (Christ) should come. It can-

not last beyond that time if you have repented, “*to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.*” To use it lawfully, it is only for the ungodly, unconverted and rebellious people. If you who think you must keep *The Law of Moses*, you must be rebellious and unconverted. This instruction also includes *The Ten Commandments* because it says, “*written on tables of stone.*” *The Commandments* are a shadow. *The Commandments* were given to bring you to Christ. Christ said, “*You think you can receive eternal life from doing the works of The Old Testament? The Law speaks about Christ as the reality*” (paraphrased).

So *The Law* was only added because of transgressions until Christ should come, “<sup>19</sup>*to whom the promise was made; <sup>21</sup>Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life verily righteousness should have been by the law.*” If they would have chosen to keep *all The Law*, it would have worked. Human nature won’t make it possible for you to do this. They also would have had to keep it all perfectly, “<sup>22</sup>*the scripture has concluded, all under sin.*” No one can keep *The Law* perfectly. Only Christ did. It is impossible to keep *The Law* perfectly, so why keep any of its works? What part do you keep? You cannot keep any part of *The Law*. You must have “Christ – *In You*,” so that God will write His Law into your heart (Colossians 1:27). With *The Law* in your heart, the thought of sinning never comes into your mind.

## Curse Of The Law

Galatians 3:10 For as many as are of the works of

the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continues not in all things which are written in The Book of The Law to do them.

**This is the only way you are under the penalty. Under *The Law* does not mean under the penalty. Being under the curse means being under the penalty. This is why The Galatians were confused about these matters.**

Galatians 3:21-29 <sup>21</sup>Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life verily righteousness should have been by the law. <sup>22</sup>But the scripture has concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. <sup>23</sup>But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up to the faith which should afterwards be revealed. <sup>24</sup>Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us to Christ, that we might be justified by faith. <sup>25</sup>But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. <sup>26</sup>For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. <sup>27</sup>For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. <sup>28</sup>There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for you are all one in Christ Jesus. <sup>29</sup>And if you be Christ's, then are you Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise.

**Is *The Law* against *The Promises* of God? Paul said, “*God forbid.*” He explains why *righteousness* cannot come by means of *The Law*. No one could keep it all, so everyone is under the curse because sin is a transgression of *The Law*. *The Law* tells you what sin is, “*that the promise by***

*faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that [what?] believe [it is a matter of faith]. <sup>23</sup>But before faith came, we were kept [where?] under the law, [now, find out what under The Law means] shut up to the faith which should afterwards be revealed. <sup>24</sup>Wherefore the law was our [what?] schoolmaster.”*

To be under *The Law* is to be under a tutor or teacher. Under *The Law* never meant under the penalty. Under *The Law* means under *the schoolmaster* or *tutor*. To be under the penalty, you are under the curse, “<sup>24</sup>*Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us to Christ [so you could understand you are a sinner and repent], that we might be justified by faith.” The Law is only supposed to bring you to Christ and last until The Seed should come. It ended there.*

## The Schoolmaster

*The Law* is good, just and Holy, but for whom? It is for the unconverted, the unrighteous and the ungodly. Once you repent and believe, you are no longer under that *schoolmaster*. Nor are you under the curse, “<sup>25</sup>*But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.”*

Here is your biblically plain definition, “<sup>6</sup>*For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. <sup>27</sup>For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have [what?] put on Christ. <sup>28</sup>There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for you are all one in Christ Jesus. <sup>29</sup>And if you be Christ’s, then are you [what?] Abraham’s seed and heirs according to the promise.” This promise was never made to Moses.*

Galatians 4:1-5 <sup>1</sup>Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differs nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; <sup>2</sup>But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. <sup>3</sup>Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: <sup>4</sup>But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, <sup>5</sup>To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

When Christ came, the need for *the schoolmaster* ended. Being under *The Law* was over. That is the reason *the temple* was destroyed. Christians, themselves, became The Temple of God, “<sup>3</sup>Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements [this is about human efforts and traditions that are] *of the world.*” This is not all because, “<sup>4</sup>But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.” Was the woman made under the penalty of *The Law*?

No, she was made under *the schoolmaster* or *governor*. Why was this done? It was, “<sup>5</sup>To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.” This is to become Sons of God. These people are bought back from being under *the schoolmaster*. Is it getting simpler now? Do not be concerned that Christianity is getting too simple to understand.

Galatians 6:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, you which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering yourself, lest you also be tempted. <sup>2</sup>Bear you one another's burdens and so fulfill the law of Christ.

**What Laws are Christians to keep? You must be careful when trying to help somebody who has not been called or is not ready to be saved. You should, “*Bear you one another’s burdens and so fulfill the law of Christ.*” That is *The Law* Christians are under.**

**Romans 13:10 Love works no ill to his neighbour:  
therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.**

**Christ said that all *The Law* must be fulfilled (Matthew 5:18). Paul clearly states *The Law* is fulfilled when you, as a Christian, finally have God’s *agàpè love*. It shows that Christ is cleansing you (Romans 13:10). He is making you blameless and Holy. He is making you *perfect*. How? It is by making you like Christ and God. This is *The Law* you are under. *You are under The Law of Christ*, “<sup>10</sup>*Love [agàpè] works no ill to his neighbour: therefore love [agàpè] is the fulfilling of the law.*” Always remember *agàpè*, not *eros* or *philia*.**

## **Fourth Covenant**

**Now you have *The Law* of Christ. God made *the fourth covenant* (a New Covenant) based on *spiritual promises*, and it was made for you. *The New Covenant* is not just the definition of sin according to *The Law*. *The New Covenant* has a much higher requirement because God writes or imbeds His Law in your heart and mind, through The Holy Spirit. This New Covenant is God’s *fourth agreement* or *contract* based on a promise (gift).**

***The New Covenant* does not have a choice of *life* or *death*. *The New Covenant* is *The Gift of Inheritance*.**



I John 5:17 All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not to death.

**“<sup>17</sup>All unrighteousness is sin.”** What is all unrighteousness? **“And there is a sin not to death.”** Any sin that you commit that is forgiven is not to death. Christians have a higher requirement.

Matthew 5:20-24 <sup>20</sup>For I say to you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. <sup>21</sup>You have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: <sup>22</sup>But I say to you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. <sup>23</sup>Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar and there remember that your brother has ought against you; <sup>24</sup>Leave there your gift before the altar and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother and then come and offer your gift.

What is the definition of sin for a Christian? Is it any type of unrighteousness? The answer is “no.” A person must, **“*exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees*, [these are the leaders who followed The Law of Moses. Consequently, following that course means] *you shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven* [The Kingdom of God].”** Christians are held to a much higher standard as the text clearly indicates.

Forgiveness and humility are great keys to all of this. *“<sup>23</sup>Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar and there remember that your brother has ought against you; <sup>24</sup>Leave there your gift before the altar and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother.”* This is far beyond *The Letter of The Law*.

## Hatred Is Murder

So, if you hate your brother, then you are guilty of murder (study Matthew 5, 6 and 7). You do not have to, literally, take something from your brother. You only need to *think about stealing*. *“All unrighteousness”* is *“sin”* if you do not have *agapè*. Unless *agapè* is written in your heart, it is unrighteous. *The Commandments’ aim* is to bring you to *agapè*. *The Law* is a shadow of *agapè*. It all leads to Christ because Christ is *agapè*. *“God is love”* (I John 4:8). That is the type of heart you need.

Romans 2:11-16 <sup>11</sup>For there is no respect of persons with God. <sup>12</sup>For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law; <sup>13</sup>(For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. <sup>14</sup>For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: <sup>15</sup>Which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness and *their* thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;) <sup>16</sup>In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.

**You do not steal** (you do not think of stealing). **You do not covet** (the thought never enters your mind). **You do not commit adultery** (your mate means too much to you). **You do not defame God because you love Him** (never think of anything but The One God as your Creator). **You agàpè** (love) **Him**, “<sup>14</sup>*For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are [what?] a law to themselves [not The Law of Moses] <sup>15</sup>Which show the work of the law written in their hearts [by a change of nature], their conscience also bearing witness and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another. <sup>16</sup>In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.*” How does God write His Law in your heart, so your nature literally changes?

Hebrews 7:11-12 <sup>11</sup>If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchizedek and not be called after the order of Aaron? <sup>12</sup>For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

Some ministers try to make this be about tithing. It is laughable when you try to say Hebrews 7 is about tithing. The subject is, “<sup>11</sup>*If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood*, (for under it the people received the law).” This was under *The Law of the schoolmaster*. *The Law* was changed from The Letter to The Spirit.

Under Melchizedek, it is a change of nature. It becomes a Law in your heart. It is written in your heart. How?

If you have *agàpè*, then you establish *The Law* and you are more righteous than *The Law*. Through God's Holy Spirit, you cannot do anything but keep *The Law* in your mind and heart. It would be foreign to your nature not to keep *The Law*. The thought of sinning would not be a part of your thinking, let alone actually doing anything wrong.

II Peter 1:4-7 <sup>4</sup>Whereby are given to us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. <sup>5</sup>And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; <sup>6</sup>And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; <sup>7</sup>And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.

All unrighteousness is sin. However, there is no unrighteousness if you have *agàpè*. That is why *agàpè* covers a multitude of sins. With *agàpè*, you are not going to sin. You only grow *spiritually*, “<sup>5</sup>*And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith.*” This is the requirement to get under *The New Covenant*. *You should repent and be baptized* (Acts 2:38).

## Generation Of Vipers

When John, The Baptist came, he told the people that their Husband was coming (John 3:29). He told The Pharisees and The Sadducees, “*Oh you generation of vipers and snakes, why are you here? Repent*” (paraphrased). Repentance is required for *this agreement* (*The New Covenant*)

that God made with humanity. Peter says, “<sup>5</sup>*add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge.*” This is how a Christian lives and how God writes His Law in your heart and mind.

As you come to know goodness, which makes you understand knowledge, then knowledge leads you to moderation with no extremism, “<sup>6</sup>*And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness* [you can learn to become like God]; <sup>7</sup>*And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.*”

This is the process God uses to write His Law in your heart. So, in *faith*, you believe. Christians have received The Earnest of The Inheritance promised in *The New Covenant* through God's *Holy Spirit*. As you live this human existence, going from *faith* to *virtue* to *knowledge* to *patience* to *brotherly kindness*, you finally come to having *God's Law written in your hearts*. Study *The Royal Law* (James 2). The Law of Christ is The Royal Law because it is from The King. It is from Christ, Himself and is “Christ – *In You*” (Colossians 1:27).

These are *the four covenants*. Each has a *different purpose*. God lets Himself be known by using different titles (names) for His *different plans* and *purposes*. He is called Father and everyone who wants to be Heirs are and all will become Sons. That is *The New Covenant*. You are no longer under *the schoolmaster* or *The Law of Moses*. You are now under *The Law of Christ* which will write God's Laws in your heart and completely change your nature. This *the fourth covenant*, which is *The New Covenant*, makes you God's Son, like Christ.

## **Fifth Agreement**

**The 14<sup>th</sup> Chapter of this book covers God's *fifth agreement*, which is His *kingdom*. It is when Christ will restore all that was lost in The Garden of Eden. With The Fifth Agreement, God, The Father, becomes *All and In All*, by making all things new (Revelation 21:5)!**

## Chapter 10

### WHAT WAS ADDED TO THE LAW?

The Apostle Paul said, “*By the works of the law shall no flesh [mankind] be justified*” (Galatians 2:16). Paul said Christians could not obtain any type of righteousness by *The Law* (Galatians 2:21). Paul said, “*Wherefore then serves the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator*” (Galatians 3:19). This Law, which was *added*, was extremely important because it was to be in force only *until The Promised Seed* should come (Galatians 3:17).

Works and human effort (Greek “*ergon*” or “*labor*”) can never make an individual right – nor can they justify anyone in God’s sight (Galatians 3:11). *The Law* could have given righteousness, but it did not because everyone has sinned (Galatians 3:21-22). Paul clearly stated that *The Law* was *the schoolmaster* and was only employed as homework. With enough study and prayer, *The Law* would eventually bring you to Christ. When you become a Christian, you are no longer under *this schoolmaster* (Galatians 3:24-25). What exactly was *this Added Law*?

### Three Laws

In determining which Law was *added*, there are only three choices: 1) *The Torah* (*The First Five Books of The Old Tes-*

tament, which includes *The Law of Moses*), 2) *The Talmud* (*The Oral Law*) and 3) *The Law of Moses* (Commandments, Statutes and Judgments).

## The Torah

*The Torah* is the written *Law of Moses*, which makes up *The First Five Books of The Old Testament*. A copy of this Law was to be placed on the side of *the mercy seat of the ark in the temple* (Deuteronomy 31:26). Only the two tablets of stone (which had *The Ten Commandments*) were placed inside *the mercy seat* (Exodus 25:16). There is great significance in having only *The Ten Commandments* reside within *The Ark of The Covenant*. Paul states *the purpose of The Torah*.

Hebrews 10:1 For the law having a shadow of good things to come [Christ] and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.

*The Law* (Hebrew "*Torah*" and Greek "*Nomos*") is composed of *The First Five Books of The Bible* (Pentateuch). It was intended only to depict (be a reminder) what was to come. The sacrifices were only a shadow of things to come. Paul separates the sacrifices from *The Torah* because sacrifices started before *The Torah* or *The Law* was written. Sacrificing actually began with *righteous* Abel. What, exactly, did *The Torah* and the sacrifices foreshadow? Jesus said that The Pharisees believed they could obtain Eternal Life by following *The Scriptures* (John 5:39). Christ said, "*They [The Scriptures] are they which testify of me.*" *The Law*



and the sacrifices were designed to foreshadow Christ, who is The Sacrificed Lamb. This was *The Message* from the foundation of the world. *Ritual sacrifices* occurred for almost 4,000 years until Christ became *the final sacrifice* for all mankind. *The Torah* and the sacrifices foretell Christ, *The Messiah*. This reveals *the true purpose* of *The Law* or *Torah*.

## The Oral Law

What was *the purpose* of The Oral Law? Jesus said The Pharisees (The Sanhedrin) sit in Moses' seat and that Israel was to do everything they instructed (Matthew 23:1-3). Why is this? It is because they sit in Moses' seat. He explained how The Sanhedrin, The Mosaic Court, were in a position over Israel (just as Moses was).

When did this Oral Law begin? (Read all of Exodus 18). Moses passed on to the elders the authority to *sit in his seat* (the smaller matters of *The Law*). This is the beginning of The Oral or spoken Law (Exodus 18). This helped Moses endure his overwhelming job. A good example of how The Oral Law was used with *The Law of Moses* is found in *the process of fasting* on Atonement. The idea of fasting on The Day of Atonement does not come from The Written Law but from The Oral Law. *The Law* given by God to Moses does not state anything about The Day of Atonement (eating, drinking or fasting).

*The Law of Moses* declares that The Israelites were supposed to afflict their souls and not work on The Day of Atonement. However, there is no commandment that says to fast on The Day of Atonement (Leviticus 16:29). To “af-

*flict*” one’s soul in Hebrew means “*to humble*” oneself (Strong’s 6031 “*looking down*”). There is no mention of fasting. The entire concept of fasting on Atonement came from The Oral Law of the elders and was recorded in *The Talmud*. God is against fasting on The Day of Atonement because He wants humility and concern for others. Read all of Isaiah 58.

### Foreshadow Christ

*The purpose of The Torah* was to foreshadow Christ. In addition, The Oral Law was for The Pharisees who sat in Moses’ seat. It was given so they could settle the smaller questions about God’s Law. What was *the purpose and intent of The Law of Moses*? How did *The Law of Moses* come about? Paul referred to it as the works or deeds of *The Law*. This was The Administration of Moses, because following The Letter of *The Law* by human effort (works) can never change you or anyone else. Once you perceive *the real purpose, God’s purpose*, for each Law, then *The Bible* will *scripturally* reveal which Law was *added*. That Law was only intended to bring you to Christ and then it was to *end* (Hebrews 8:13).

Paul declares how *this added Law* (covenant) was to vanish or cease. When *the temple* was destroyed in 70 A.D., *The Covenant* and *The Law of Moses* ended. Remember, you cannot keep *The Law of Moses* without the temple.

Summarizing:

- 1) The Added Law came 430 years after *the covenant* with Abraham. The Abrahamic Covenant

was instituted about 1,900 to 2,000 B.C. So, 430 years later means this added law was instituted around 1,400 to 1,500 B.C. That is exactly the time of Moses.

- 2) Paul said the added law was the one given at Mount Sinai. This Law was *The Old Covenant* which was a Covenant of Bondage (Galatians 4:24-25).
- 3) This added law was intended to be *a schoolmaster* and bring a person to Christ (Galatians 3:24). Then, this Law ended (Galatians 3:17).
- 4) The reason this Law *was added* was because Israel transgressed God's other Laws (Galatians 5:19).
- 5) Finally, if this Law *was added*, then it must have been added to a pre-existing law.

### What Was The Law Added To?

Once the history of The Added Law is *biblically* proven, everything becomes crystal clear. How did it come about? What was its purpose? Consequently, *Galatians* will become one of the simplest of Paul's letters to understand. Deuteronomy 5 proves what this Law was *added to* and Acts 7 details the history. Moses declares how Israel received *The Old Covenant* and *The Law of Moses* (Deuteronomy 5:2-21). Moses said that when Israel came to Mount Horeb in Sinai, God gave them *The Old Covenant*. You read how God *spoke face to face* (through an angel) with Moses (Verse 4). Then He spoke through the midst of the fire to Israel. This was before Moses went up into

the mount to receive *The Ten Commandments*, which was written in stone.

### God Spoke Directly

God spoke directly to Israel by giving them *The Ten Commandments*. When He finished giving *The Ten Commandments*, Moses said that God *added no more* (Verse 22). Re-read this verse to see that God only spoke *The Ten Commandments* and *added* nothing else. Any Law that *was added* after this must be part of The Added Law. The people said they no longer wanted to hear God *directly* (Verses 23-28). They were too afraid so they only wanted to hear Moses. They no longer wanted *direct contact with God*. What was God's attitude regarding their behavior? God agreed to do it their way. God said, "*O that there were such a heart in them, that they would fear me and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them and with their children for ever.*" This is the essence of *The New Covenant*, to have His Law written in your heart and mind. Remember, that after God spoke *The Ten Commandments* directly, *nothing else was added*. When Christ comes, God will write His Law in your heart, which will change your human nature (Jeremiah 31:31-33 and Romans 2:14-15). What God really wanted from Israel was for them to keep His *Commandments* in their hearts. He did not want to *add* anything else.

The rich young man asked Jesus what he must do to obtain *Eternal Life*. Jesus told him to keep *The Ten Commandments*. The rich man said that he had kept them from his youth. He, also, asked what he lacked. Jesus told him to sell what possessions he had and give the proceeds to the

poor. Then he was invited to follow Christ. The rich man could not bring himself to do this. Christ, then, knew the rich man's heart.

In order to receive *Eternal Life*, God wants you to have His *Commandments* written in your heart (*The New Covenant*). This is what God wanted all along for Israel when He gave them *The Ten Commandments*. Stephen gave an account of how God made His *covenant* with Abraham and then told about The Israelites' delivery from Egypt. The Israelites at Mount Sinai heard God give *the lively oracles* (Acts 7:30-39).

It was extremely important to know what *these lively oracles* were. Stephen said that Israel disobeyed these oracles. This transgression is specified in Galatians 3:19.

## The Lively Oracles

What are *these lively oracles* and what was The Added Law? First, you must check the meaning of these two words in Greek: "live" and "oracles." In Strong's Concordance "to live" (#2198) is a verb and an action meaning "to live" or "make alive." Now, for the word "oracles" (Strong's #3051 and #3052). It is "an utterance of God" or God directly speaking His words to Israel. The lively oracles are God's words that are life giving. These life giving words of God were *The Ten Commandments* (Deuteronomy 5:22). Paul said, "What advantage then has the Jew? Much every way: chiefly [what's important] because that to them [The Israelites] were committed the oracles of God" (Romans 3:1-2). Paul said the advantage The Jews had is that they received *The Ten Commandments* which gave

***Eternal Life.*** In The New Heaven and The New Earth, in order to enter New Jerusalem and be able to eat of The Tree of Life, a person must have kept God's *Commandments* (Revelation 22:14).

God added nothing more. Plainly, and without human interpretation, God said that He only wants His *Ten Commandments* written in your heart and *nothing more*.

### The Added Law

Let *The Bible* identify *The Added Law* for you. Stephen said, "*To whom our fathers would not obey*" (Acts 7:39). This is the transgression that made God give additions to *The Ten Commandments* (which God directly spoke to Israel). From this point on, whatever God gave to Moses is The Added Law. After receiving *The Ten Commandments*, Stephen said The Israelites told Aaron to make them "*gods*" (Verse 40). Then, they made the golden calf. They broke God's command by making an idol (Verse 41). Right after God verbally gave them *The Ten Commandments*, they transgressed. So, God *added The Law* which was to be a bondage for them (Galatians 4:24). God gave a Law to them that had blessings and cursings. Stephen explained what God did, "*Then God turned and gave them up to worship the host of heaven*" (Acts 7:42).

After God gave them *The Ten Commandments*, The Israelites did not want to hear God directly (Deuteronomy 5). God said He wished Israel had *repentant hearts*. Then, what did God do? Moses went up to God, alone, and received *The Added Law*. God spoke to Moses on The Mount and gave him *The Commandments*, Statutes and

**Judgments (Verse 31). They had to keep it in its entirety (Galatians 3:10). If you broke one part, you became guilty of breaking every part of it. If you believe you must keep *this Added Law*, then you must keep it *all*. A person cannot decide to keep only certain parts because they *feel* Christ fulfilled other parts. In fact, Christ has fulfilled the whole *Law of Moses*. You must keep it all or you are guilty of breaking it all (James 2:10).**

**That was the reason for the conference in Acts 15 concerning circumcision and *The Added Law*. What Law was *added*? It was *The Law* given to Moses after The Israelites sinned by constructing the golden calf. *The Law of Moses* was *The Added Law*. *The Bible* plainly proves it! *This Added Law*, given to Moses, could not *justify* anyone. This Law could not make anyone *righteous*. It could not make anyone perfect. Paul asked if a person thought they would be perfect by keeping *The Law of Moses* (Galatians 3:3 and II Corinthians 3). Paul tried to tell The Galatians why they had to perform all of *The Law of Moses* in order to be *righteous*. Of course, this was impossible. That was the reason why Paul said *The Law entered* (or was *added*). It was because it was obvious that no one but Christ could keep *The Law*. *The Added Law* was intended to show a person that they were a sinner (Romans 5:20). This was the only reason *The Law of Moses* was *added* to *The Ten Commandments* and Moses was to administer the added Law that God gave him.**

### **Why The Law Was Added?**

***The Added Law*, or *The Law of Moses*, includes The Oral Law. This was because The Israelites were carnal and unrepentant. The Apostle Paul said there were those in the**



church who desired to be teachers of *The Law*. There were many converted Jews, including The Pharisees, who were zealous for *The Law* (Acts 21:20). Paul said that these people did not understand *the purpose* of *The Law* (I Timothy 1:7-10). Remember, this Added Law was a *schoolmaster* that was only intended to bring them (from yet another direction) to Christ. Very clearly, Paul explained why God added *The Law of Moses*. “*Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man* [once baptized you are righteous through Christ], *but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers*” (Verse 9).

*The Law* was added because people were sinners and unrepentant. The Added Law, *The Law of Moses*, was included as a burden to bring them to Christ. There is great significance regarding *the tablets* of *The Ten Commandments* being the only items in *The Ark of The Covenant*. The only way you can *receive mercy* is by letting God (through Christ) write *The Ten Commandments* in your heart. God wrote *The Ten Commandments* on stone to illustrate how they were receiving *this Added Law of Moses* because of their unrepentant, stone-like hearts. Paul stated that God does not want you to keep The Letter of *The Law* written in stone (unrepentant) but in the fleshly tables of your heart (II Corinthians 3:3). This is *repentance* and one's heart (desire) becomes loving toward God and His *creation*. The Added Law only remained until Christ came. Once Christ came, *The Law of Moses* fulfilled its *Godly purpose* of bringing you to Christ. Now, God writes His Law (*Ten Commandments*) and *The New Covenant* in your heart (those who repent and receive mercy).



## Discerning Various Laws

The difference between *The Torah* (first five books), *The Law of Moses* (Added Law) and The Oral Law (Court of Israel to interpret *The Law of Moses*) can be explained in the following way. *The Torah* (*The Law*), “*Nomos*” in Greek, in its root meaning carries the implication of a “rule” or “standard.” In modern English it would mean “*the path.*” Jesus said, “*I am the resurrection and the life; he that believes in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live*” (John 11:25). *The purpose of The Scriptures* (including *The Torah*) is explained in John 5:39. They were to shadow or testify about Christ. So Christ is *The Path* (or the life) that *The Torah* (*The Law*) foreshadows.

*This Torah* is called *the path* because it leads you to Christ. *The Torah* reveals The Messiah and your need for Him. This is *The Law*, which comprises *The First Five Books*, and its *purpose*. *The Torah*, which is *spiritual, good, eternal* and *Holy*, leads you to Christ. In this account, God deals with *the seed* of Abraham (children) who were to receive *the promise*. Abraham’s children (Israel) turned out to be rebellious and did not want God to talk to them (directly). At this point, all God wanted was for them to keep His *Ten Commandments* in their hearts, so He *added nothing more*. They could have received *The New Covenant*, but they rejected it by sinning when they built the golden calf. At this point, Moses pleaded for their lives. God realized that the way to help them come to Him and The Messiah was by *The Added Law*, which God gave to Moses on Mount Sinai. *This added Law* became *The Law of Moses*, which included *The Ten Commandments* written in stone, *the judgments* and *the statutes*.

## Slavery Brings A Positive Result

This Law placed Israel into slavery (bondage) in order to bring them to Christ. Once *the temple* was destroyed by Titus in 70 A.D., *this added Law of Moses* was ended. This is because Christ came and wrote God's *Ten Commandments* in your heart and mind. This was accomplished by a change in your very nature.

*The Law of Moses* was never intended for repentant people. John, The Baptist would not baptize The Pharisees and Sadducees because they would not repent or come to Christ. So, *The Added Law of Moses* was good, right and Holy because its purpose was to bring them to The Messiah. This Law is not required by true Christians because God writes His *Ten Commandments* in their hearts!

The Added Law is The Letter of *The Law*. Remember, all God wanted was for Israel to keep *The Ten Commandments* in their hearts, so He had *added nothing more* (Deuteronomy 5:22). However, *The Ten Commandments* were *added* to *The Law* because when Moses went up to The Mount, he also received *The Ten Commandments in stone*. *The Ten Commandments* were not written in The Israelites hearts, because they were hard-hearted and unrepentant. *The Torah (Law)* was what God told Moses to write in *The Book*. *This Book* was placed in the side of The Ark (Exodus 24:7). *This Book* or Law was for Israel.

As long as one's heart was like stone, God would not give mercy. *The Law* was only meant to bring a person to Christ (Hebrews 10:1) and it was placed in *the side of the ark*. This is *The Letter of The Law* or what was written in

***The Book or The Torah.* The whole *Law* was written for Israel because they were unrepentant and hard-hearted. They were required to do much homework in order to finally be able to turn to Christ (I Timothy 1:9). God told Moses to write down what sin was, because they could not tell *right* from *wrong*. They did not have a right heart or God's nature to know the difference between good and evil (II Peter 1:4).**

## Chapter 11

# THE SPIRIT VERSUS THE LETTER

Some Christians believe *The New Covenant* requires *The Law* to be kept only in The Spirit. Other Christians believe that one must keep *The Law* in The Letter and The Spirit. Still others believe a person must love others *only* and not keep any Law. Which is biblical?

That question can be answered when a person learns the basic difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*. Once this question has been resolved on a *biblical basis*, then *The Truth of The Bible* becomes clear and obvious to all.

### The Old Covenant

Originally, the only thing that God required for *Salvation* was for Israel to keep His *Ten Commandments* in their hearts (Deuteronomy 5:1-29). Then, Moses declared that God *added no more* (Deuteronomy 5:22). This fulfilled His requirement. There was nothing more to add. Jesus reinforced the same concept with the rich man in Matthew 19 when He showed that in order to have *Eternal Life*, one only needed to keep God's *Ten Commandments* in his heart. In God's *kingdom*, when *the saved* have a right to The Tree of Life, an individual must still keep God's *Ten Commandments* (Revelation 22:14). Therefore, you find that God *added The Law of Moses* to *The Ten Command-*

*ments* which became part of *the written Torah (The Law)*. *The Book of Galatians* declares that *this added law (Law of Moses)* was to last *only* until Christ came.

If one believed they were required to keep The Letter of *The Law of Moses*, then they were also to keep every part of *The Added Law of Moses*. If one part was transgressed, then a person became guilty of breaking the whole Law. Then, they came under the penalty or curse of *The Law*. Why did God *add The Law of Moses*? He *added The Law* because of transgressions (Acts 7:38-41). Since Israel did not have a converted heart, God spelled out (in great detail) what He wanted them to do. *The Law of Moses* was to put them into bondage (a form of slavery).

This religious slavery was to be such a burden that it would be like *a schoolmaster* who disciplines without remorse until one repents or seeks Christ (Galatians 3:24). *This added Law of Moses* was weak because human nature could not keep it in its entirety – no matter how hard they tried (Hebrews 8:6-10). God, lovingly, gave them *this schoolmaster (Law)* so they would repent in their hearts. God's *purpose* was to have *The Law* cause a change of heart. Jesus plainly said this was the job that Moses did (John 5:46). Moses was to bring The Israelites to Christ.

## Purpose Of The Old Covenant

*This covenant* was made for Israel. It was *not* the same as *the covenant* made with Abraham. Moses clearly states that *the covenant* made with the fathers (Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob) was different (Deuteronomy 5:3). Paul said that *the covenant* with the fathers was based on *a promise* and

***The Law of Moses*** (added law) was introduced because of sin (Galatians 3:16-19). ***These two covenants help interpret The Bible.*** The Abrahamic Covenant was based on a ***promise*** because Abraham had been ***faithful***. Therefore, it was counted to him as ***righteousness***. What made Abraham ***righteous*** was his ***faith*** (Hebrews 11). Even though ***The Law of Moses*** was not in force for another 430 years (Galatians 3:17), Abraham kept ***the whole*** Law according to God. He was considered righteous because of his ***faith*** (Genesis 26:5). This is just like Christians today who have ***agapè*** (God's Law in their heart). They are described by The Apostle Paul as having fulfilled (completed) the entire Law (Romans 13:10). ***This covenant made by God, through Moses, for Israel had an entirely different purpose.***

Galatians 3:19 clearly states how ***this added Law of Moses*** was given because Israel sinned and had an unrepentant heart (Deuteronomy 5:29). In fact, God wanted to kill them. However, Moses intervened and God instead gave them ***The Law of Moses***, which was administered by Moses. This administration was known as ***The Administration of The Letter***. Paul declares that ***this covenant, including The Law of Moses and The Ten Commandments, was written on two tables of stone*** (II Corinthians 3:3). Paul shows how this Law was written on stone (including judgments, ordinances, and statutes) to bring them to death, ***“For the letter kills, but the spirit gives life”*** (II Corinthians 3:6). Paul plainly states ***the purpose of the added Law of Moses, was to bring Israel to death.*** Why was this?

***The Law had many purposes. The Law told what righteousness was*** (Philippians 3:6). It was also a shadow (picturing the future) of things to come (Hebrews 10:1-2). It was to

bring you to Christ (Galatians 3:24). You may not have been aware that God gave *The Law* to fulfill His *many purposes*. It was Holy, just and good because it was given to make a person realize they could not keep it all. Therefore, they were under its curse which was death (Galatians 3:10-11).

*The Law of Moses* was given to bring a person to repentance. Here, you have *The Old Covenant biblically interpreting itself*. Because Israel had a carnal heart and kept sinning, *The Old Covenant* was given to make them understand that they could not become righteous by their *own human effort*. That was the only reason God allowed Israel to live. God gave them *The Law* to force them to have a change of heart (Romans 5:20). Every time they sinned, *The Law of Moses* required an array of bondage (Greek, ergon – “works,” “drudgery” or “deeds”) to perform. Everything in *the added Law of Moses* was designed to show how unrepentant and incapable they were of keeping *The Law*. Every detail of their life was *spelled out* to show what was *right* and what was *wrong*.

Finally, *The Law of Moses* was to bring them to Christ through *true repentance* (Romans 5:20). This Law was truly *a schoolmaster* to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24). As long as they *performed* everything *The Law* required, they received the blessings of a long life in the land that God had given them. In addition, they also gained prosperity (Deuteronomy 5:33).

## Fault With The Law?

Many do not realize that *The Old Covenant* (Law of Moses)

*never promised Eternal Life. Eternal Life* came through *the promise* made to Abraham. Why didn't *The Law* give them *Eternal Life*? Paul said the fault was with them (Hebrews 8:8). Israel had the wrong nature because of their human flesh which is a carnal heart. To have *Eternal Life*, you must have *The Ten Commandments* written in your heart (Matthew 19:16-22).

An unconverted person, on his own, cannot decide *right* from *wrong*. Rebellious Israel had to have every aspect of human living spelled out in detail. That is why *The Law* covered every part of human existence. *The Law* tells you what sin is (I John 3:4). On their own, the people could not discern *good* from *evil*. The difference between The Gentiles (pagans) and Israel is that The Gentiles did not know God (Romans 1:28). They were helplessly left to their own ideas of *right* and *wrong*. The outcome has produced a variety of religions and *all of them are wrong*.

However, God spelled out right and wrong for The Israelites in detail. Then Moses wrote it in a book. Otherwise, there was no difference between The Gentiles and The Israelites. Both of them were unrepentant and carnal. Israel knew God's way, but The Gentiles had no clue. However, neither of them were able to be righteous. The Gentiles did not know the difference, and Israel had a wrong heart. In both cases, they sinned (Romans 3:23) and earned only death.

## Enter The New Covenant

Now, to examine a better way which is *The New Covenant*. Some *biblical* statements are so obvious but because of



previous belief, a person may ignore instruction in *The Scriptures* that is very plain and straightforward. A person will read a verse and if it doesn't agree with their understanding, they often read right over it as if it doesn't exist. Then, they become blind to *the truth*.

In Luke 5:36-39, Jesus gave the parable about putting new wine into old bottles (wineskins). It does not work because the bottles would burst. You must put new wine into new bottles (wineskins) because they will stretch as the wine ferments. Then, in Verse 39, Jesus made *a spiritual statement*. Christ said, "*No man also having drunk old wine straightway desires new: for he said, the old is better.*" This is *a significant spiritual lesson*. It depicts your understanding of human nature. The old ways always seem better than the new. Christ said that *new spiritual truths* are harder to accept and most human beings prefer to keep the old! Traditions eventually become perceived as *the so-called truth*.

Paul said *The Law* made nothing perfect (Hebrews 7:19). It only revealed sin. Then, Paul continued and said, "*But the bringing in of a better hope did.*" Plain, simple and clear – *The Old Covenant* could only tell you that you were a sinner. It could not change a person or make anyone *perfect*. In Verse 22, Paul said, "*By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.*" In Chapter 8 Verse 6, Jesus, as Melchizedek, "*obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is a mediator of a better covenant.*" This was established upon *better promises*. *This New Testament* changed *The Law* and its *administration* (Hebrews 7:12). *This New Covenant* was *a better way* to approach God because it could make a person *perfect*.

What happened to *The Old Covenant*? “*In that he said, a new covenant, he has made the first old, Now that which decays and waxes old is ready to vanish away*” (Hebrews 8:13). It ended in 70 A.D. with the fall of *the temple*. The teaching could not be any clearer. *The Covenant*, under the administration of Moses (*Law of Moses*), was to vanish away. That is simple and plain. Remember what Christ said. He revealed that men prefer the old wine or *The Old Covenant*. It is hard for humanity to give up old ideas. When a person thinks they know what is true and then understands *a new truth*, it is very difficult to give up those old beliefs.

## The Difference

To understand the difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*, you must first understand that there is more than *one Law*. As you found in Chapter 10, ‘*What Is The Added Law?*’ there are *three Laws*. The first Law, *The Torah*, includes the entire *First Five Books of The Bible* and was written to disclose Christ as The Messiah (Hebrews 10:1). The two other laws, *The Torah* and The Oral Law, are also in *The Torah* or *The First Five Books of The Old Testament*. God added a Law to *The Torah* and *The Ten Commandments* for a different purpose than the rest of *The Torah* (Deuteronomy 5). *The Torah*, in Greek “*Nomas*,” was “*to reveal Christ as The Messiah and Savior of the world.*” *The added Law* had a specific limitation to it as well as a different purpose than the entire *Torah*. What was that difference?

*This added Law* was incorporated because of sin and it was only to *last* until Christ came (Galatians 3:19). This

Law was *a schoolmaster* that would bring a person to Jesus (Galatians 3:24). This Law *was added* for the benefit of unconverted people (I Timothy 1:9). *The Torah* showed the need for The Messiah and to restore paradise lost and The Tree of Life (Hebrews 10:1 and Matthew 18:11). *The added Law*, which is called *The Law of Moses* (commandments, statutes and ordinances), was to bring people to *repentance*. Later, it was supposed to cease or vanish (Galatians 3:23-25 and Hebrews 8:13). *This Law of Moses* will be re-instituted when Jesus *returns* (with *the temple*) to bring all *unrepentant* Israelites (and the *unrepentant* Gentiles) to Christ during The Millennium. Once everyone is repentant, *this Law will again cease* (Matthew 5:18).

From this point on, God's Law (*The Torah*) is written in your heart through "Christ – *In You*." Now, The Third Law is The Oral Law. Moses picks out a total of 70 from among *the elders* of Israel to be a Sanhedrin (court) (Exodus 18). They were to help him administer the smaller matters of *The Law*. This was because of its complexity and its large workload. Christ said this court existed in His day and they sat in Moses' seat (Matthew 23:1-3).

## Law Spelled Out

Remember, *The Law of Moses* spelled out what was *right* and what was *wrong* in God's eyes. The Israelites were *unrepentant* and, on their own, they could not discern *right* from *wrong*. God spelled out specifically what Israel was to do. The Gentiles came up with their own ideas regarding religion. When kept in its entirety, *The Law of Moses* was *their righteousness* (Deuteronomy 6:25). By keeping The Letter of *The Law of Moses*, you were ac-

ceptable to God. It allowed you to receive all the blessings in *the promised land* with a long life (Deuteronomy 6). However, keeping *The Law of Moses* by works or human effort only became *their righteousness* (by their own efforts) (Deuteronomy 6:25). It is the same problem that Job had until he repented *completely*. Remember, Job was the most righteous person during his time (Job 1:8).

Yet Job was not completely repentant until God brought him to that state of mind. Job finally realized that *only God can do everything* (Job 42:2). Job fully repented when he said, “*Wherefore I abhor myself and repent in dust and ashes*” (Job 42:6). The Apostle Paul learned the same lesson (Romans 7:13). Paul said that he kept *the righteousness in The Law* blamelessly (Philippians 3:6). Then, Paul said the knowledge of Christ was more excellent and counted his righteousness in *The Law* as useless (Philippians 3:8). Your righteousness, whether self-righteousness or otherwise, cannot please God (Romans 8:8).

Any attempt to be righteous in the flesh (by human works) *will not please God*. The best that your righteousness can do is give you a good life while on this earth. That is *The Old Covenant*. There is nothing else. *The Law of Moses* cannot make you righteous. No man can keep the whole Law or be justified (perfect and blameless). The intent of *The Law of Moses* is to make you realize that you are a sinner and need Christ (Galatians 3:24). God *added The Law of Moses* to *The Ten Commandments* because the people needed to come to repentance, just as Job did. Once that happened, a better way was needed. It was *a New Covenant* that does what *The Old Covenant* could not do, which was to give *Eternal Life*.

## The New Covenant

Paul told The Gentile Christians, “*Are you so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, are you now made perfect by the flesh?*” (Galatians 3:3). The Gentiles who repented and accepted Christ received God’s Holy Spirit without keeping of *The Law of Moses*. Why do they, now, believe they must keep *The Works of The Law*? Paul said they were foolish if they did so. Why is this?

Christ makes it plain. At the well Jesus spoke to the woman from Samaria, saying “*But the hour comes, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship The Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth*” (John 4:23-24). God is not pleased when you worship Him in The Letter (by human effort). God said you must only worship Him in *The Spirit*. If you want to obey God, then you can only worship Him *spiritually*. Why is this?

Paul states that if you are “*In Christ,*” then you do not need to follow The Letter written in stone (*Ten Commandments*) but only *The Law* written in your fleshly heart (II Corinthians 3:3). God wants you to worship Him in *The Spirit*. If you worship Christ in The Letter, by your human efforts, it will bring you *death* and not *life*.

No human can keep the whole Law perfectly except Christ. By keeping *The Old Covenant* with *The Law of Moses*, it will only bring you death. God warns you to worship Him in *The Spirit* because He wants you to have *Eternal Life*. No one can do anything by himself. Only God can change

you. Jesus said, “*But seek you first the kingdom of God and his righteousness and all these things shall be added to you*” (Matthew 6:33).

Christ plainly tells you that *righteousness* by *The Law of Moses* or any other way will not please God. It will *not save* you. The only way you can be *saved* is through His (God’s) *righteousness*. To achieve God’s *righteousness*, you must have “Christ – *In You*” which is given through God’s Holy Spirit (Colossians 1:27). Paul said the same thing (Romans 10:1-4). The difference between *The Letter* and *The Spirit* is like night and day. *The Spirit* is the process of God writing His Law (*Ten Commandments*) in your heart (Romans 2:14-15). *The Letter* is when you try to keep *The Law* by your own human effort. The Letter only kills. However, God’s Spirit “*In You*” gives you *life* by changing your nature. This is what God wanted from the beginning (Deuteronomy 5:29). He *added* nothing more.

You cannot keep *The Law of Moses* in *The Letter* and believe you will receive *life*. You can only receive *life* in *The Spirit* through *The New Covenant*. God is The One who writes His *Ten Commandments* in your heart which is His *righteousness* (Hebrews 10:16). This is *the biblical* difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*. Paul said, “*Let us hold fast the profession [New Covenant] of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised)*” (Hebrews 10:23).

## The Law Is Spiritual

Here is the crux of the problem. *The Law (Torah)* has many parts. They are for different purposes and time pe-

riods. Most of *The Torah* (*First Five Books of The Bible*) covers history. Very little of *The Torah*, recorded in *The Bible*, states the various laws where God tells you what to do or not to do.

Much of *The Torah* is history. *The Added Law* was put into *The Torah* because Israel sinned. Most of *The Torah* (*The Law*) requires you to have *faith* and *trust* in God rather than listing numerous dos and don'ts. The Apostle Paul states that *The Law* (*Torah*) is *spiritual* (Romans 7:14). Since *The Law* is *spiritual*, it cannot die. It must be *kept spiritually* and not in *The Letter*. *The Law* (*Torah*) *cannot be done away!* This leads to a great misunderstanding.

Knowing what *The Torah* was meant to accomplish will clear up the entire misunderstanding. Paul said *The Law* is Holy and *The Commandments* are Holy, just and good. If kept *spiritually*, *The Law* is *eternal* and good. This includes *The Ten Commandments*. Now what was God's intent with this Law? The English translation of "*Torah*" is "*The Law*." This does not do justice to *The First Five Books*. In Hebrew, the word "*law*" is "*The Torah*." "*Torah*" has a greater meaning than the English word "*law*." "*Torah*" is a precept (statute) (Strong's #3384) that means "*to shoot or point out*" and "*to teach or inform*." The root comes from "*to shoot an arrow*." It also applies to "*the way or direction*." So, *The Law* (*Torah*) is really a precept that shows you *a way* (direction) to something.

Jesus said that He is *The Way*, *The Truth* and *The Life* (John 14:6). Jesus is the way to *life*. Christ said that He came to restore what was lost (Matthew 18:11). Believing in Jesus Christ is *The Work of God* (John 6:29). Therefore,



**“Christ – *In You*” is God’s work. Once *The Law* brings you to Christ and you keep it *spiritually* (a change of nature), then *The Law* is *eternally* “*In You*.”**

## What Was Lost

**When Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden or paradise, they lost their chance to eat from The Tree of Life (Eternal Life). When God expelled them, two cherubim were placed at the entrance so they could not return to take fruit from The Tree of Life.**

**Genesis 3:15 gives a great promise. It shows, from the beginning, from the seed of Adam and Eve, a Savior would come to restore what had been lost. Satan would eventually be defeated. Paul said that *The Law* (“*Nomos*” – *Torah*) was a shadow (prophecy) about The Messiah and how He would restore The Tree of Life and paradise (Hebrews 10:1-2). *The Torah*, therefore, shows *the way* that Christ, The Messiah, would come through the promise made to Abraham from the seed of Jacob. God changed Jacob’s name to “*Israel*.” Jacob’s twelve children became known as The Nation of Israel. These Israelites were led by Moses from Egypt to The Promised Land. They were unrepentant and rebellious. This attitude began right after the first time He spoke to them directly.**

**So, God had to give them *The Old Covenant*, which was not the same as *the promise* made to Abraham. This Covenant had *The Added Law* or *The Law of Moses*. This was because they kept *sinning*. *This Law of Moses* was added to *The Ten Commandments* and *The Torah*. However, this was only temporary – in order to bring them to Christ.**



*The Law of Moses* was used only when God was dealing with unrepentant or unconverted people. Once they repented, they came under *The New Covenant*, which gave them God's Holy Spirit. Then, they would have a new nature in their heart and be able to keep God's *Ten Commandments*.

This is *the simple biblical* difference between *The Old* and *New Covenants*. *The Old Mosaic Covenant* brought you to Christ and then once repentant, *The New Covenant* would apply to Christians. All of *The Law (Torah)* is in force. *The Law of Moses* (still in force) applies but only to unconverted, unrepentant people. It was not for Christians. With *the temple* standing in The Millennium, *The Law* will, then, be *reinstated*. Once converted, you only worship God in *spirit* because God changes your heart through His Holy Spirit.

Your nature now tells you *right* from *wrong* because you are growing in God's love or *agàpè*. *The Old Covenant (Law of Moses)* is not needed even though it is in force for the unrepentant. It will be in force during The Millennium. Christ said that He did not come to destroy *The Law* but to fulfill it (Matthew 5:17-18). In fact, He said, "*one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.*" "*Ginomai*" means "*to cause to be*" (generate), "*be assembled*" and "*be brought to pass.*" This is the meaning of the word "*fulfill*" or "*be brought to pass.*" It all becomes simple and *biblically clear*.

## The Way To Christ

*The Torah* gives *the path* or *the way* to Christ. Christ came

to restore *life*. This compares with The Tree of Life and paradise. It relates to Adam and Eve and their children. In order to come to Christ, one needs to repent. When one doesn't repent, *The Law of Moses is added* (more homework from the *schoolmaster* until they get it right) to bring that person to Jesus. Once one is repentant, he/she no longer needs *The Law of Moses* to tell him what is *right* or *wrong*. *The New Covenant* writes God's Law (*Ten Commandments*) in your heart by changing your nature. Now, Christians come under a *higher standard* than *The Law of Moses*, which was written in *the letter* for those unrepentant people.

Jesus said in Matthew 5:20 "*a Christian must be more righteous than The Law of Moses demands in the letter*" (paraphrased). Since God places His love or agapè in your heart (*New Covenant*), you will keep *The Ten Commandments spiritually*. Hence, it will keep you from killing, coveting and idolizing. This is because you love God and your neighbor. This is a much higher level of *righteousness* than *The Law of Moses*. Never forget that, because of human nature, mankind can never keep *the whole Law of Moses*.

### Answer To Spirit And Letter

What is the answer to *the letter* and *the spirit*? It is simple! One cannot keep *the letter* and *the spirit*. *The letter* requires human effort, deeds and works. Since humans cannot keep *the entire Law of Moses*, mankind falls under the curse of *The Law* which is death. Keeping *The Law of Moses* by human effort denies Christ and your need for Him and The Holy Spirit. You can't have it both ways.

**You are either in *the letter* (unrepentant, without Christ) or "*In Christ*" (full of God's Holy Spirit). Jesus said that God only wants converted Christians who worship Him in Spirit (*The New Covenant*)! You cannot do both. You are either under *The Old Covenant* (the letter and unrepentant) or under *The New Covenant* (change of heart).**

**God gave Moses *The Law (Torah)* to give the history and the prophecies about The Messiah. Because of Israel's sin, God *added The Law of Moses* (dos and don'ts) with works and deeds to bring them to Christ. *This Law of Moses* acted as *a schoolmaster*.**

**The burden of administering *this added Law* required The 70 Elders (Sanhedrin) to help Moses. This became The Oral Law. This was *the five books* of *The Law* given to Moses. All of it was to bring a person to Jesus. From the beginning, God only wanted humanity to keep *The Ten Commandments* in their hearts, which was a change of nature (*agapè*). Consequently, God *added no more*.**

## Tale Of Two Houses

**Jesus plainly said that if you listen to His *sayings* then you are like a wise man (i.e. ten virgins) who built his house upon a rock (Christ) (Matthew 7:23-27). He also said that if you don't perform His *sayings*, then you are like a man who built his house on sand and the wind and rain destroyed that house. What are these two houses?**

**Paul said that Christians are partakers of a heavenly calling (Hebrews 3:1-6). What is your Christian calling? Paul said that Christ is The High Priest of everyone's heavenly**

calling and that Moses was faithful in his house. He then explained how Christ's *house* (the rock) had more *glory* than Moses' house.

In Hebrews 3:5, Moses tells the difference. The house which Moses built (*Old Covenant*) was only a *testimony* or a *witness* of things to come (Hebrews 10:1-2). *The Whole Law* (Hebrew, "*Torah*" and in Greek, "*Nomos*") was a *shadow* of things to come. Jesus said plainly that Moses spoke of Him (John 5:46). Everything in Moses' house was temporary – and not real. It was only a shadow of what was real (Christ, *the rock*). Read all of Hebrews 8. Everything that Moses built was just an example (shadow) of heavenly things. Notice how Moses' house was to cease and vanish away (Hebrews 8:13). This house was built on sand, did not stand and was destroyed by Titus in 70 A.D.

When *the temple* went down, *The Law* went, also. There was no way to keep *the whole Law* without *the temple*. The feast days and *The Law* was only a shadow of things to come (Colossians 2:16). *The Bible* plainly states how the whole Law (Hebrews 10:1-2) is only a shadow of Christ. Colossians 2:17 states that the body is of Christ. It is not *The Law* or *The Holy Days* because they are not real. They are the house that was destroyed (Hebrews 8:13). Now, what is the real house?

## The Real House

***"But Christ [the rock] as a son over his own house; whose house are we [those who listen and do Christ's sayings] if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm to the end"*** (Hebrews 3:6). Christians do not need *The*

**Law to tell them *right* from *wrong* because Christians have “Christ – *In Them*” (Colossians 1:27). The entire subject of *The Book of Colossians* is your *righteousness* through “Christ – *In You*” – which is God’s *righteousness* – rather than *the righteousness* of *The Law*, which you could not keep (Deuteronomy 6:25 and James 2:10). Instead, *Christ is building His house “In You.”* You are His *temple* and His *house*. That is why you are to *witness* “Christ – *In You*” which is His *house*. This is the tale of the two houses.**

**Moses’ *house* (*The Old Covenant* and *Law*) was only a *shadow* (not real) to bring you to Christ (Galatians 3:19-25). After *faith* came, you were no longer under *the schoolmaster*. *The Law* was temporary and not the real thing. Therefore, it ended in 70 A.D. *This house* of *The Old Covenant* will not be restored until The Millennium when *unrepentant* Israelites and Gentiles will have their chance to repent and come to Christ. They will be required to *observe The Holy Days*.**

## **The Household Of Christ**

**Christians who have “Christ – *In Them*” are part of The Household of God. Christ’s household keeps *the holy days* by *fulfilling what* they foreshadowed. You, as Christ’s *house*, are *the real thing*. Christ is your Passover (sacrificed lamb). Christ has *made you unleavened* (i.e. unleavened bread). He has given you God’s Holy Spirit (Pentecost), and therefore, Christ has made *atonement* for you (represented by The Day of Atonement – Yom Kippur).**

***The unconverted* must come to Christ and then live that shadow (observe *The Law*) during The Millennium. This**

begins with Christ's *return*. Christians, who are His *House* and His *Bride*, will help bring *the unconverted* to Christ! Now consider this. A believer in Christ, who thinks he/she must keep *The Law* (*The Torah*) along with *the dos* and *don'ts* of Moses' Administration, does not understand the difference between *The Old* and *New Covenants*.

*The Law*, written in the letter, tells you the difference between *right* and *wrong*. This defines sin (I John 3:4). If one believes they need to keep this Law, then they have *nothing to do* with *The New Covenant*. No human can keep *The Law* by human effort. Only Christ did that. That is the reason for *The New Covenant*. *A new heart* was needed. Since *The Law* is *spiritual* (Romans 7:14), it must be kept *spiritually*. Christians must obey a *higher Law* which is *The Law of Christ*. When you have God's Holy Spirit, *the spirit* teaches you *right* from *wrong* by changing your heart. God writes His *Ten Commandments* in your heart. You know *right* from *wrong* by a change of heart and do not need *any written Law* to tell you. *The Law* becomes *eternal* (spiritual) (I John 2:19-21, 27).

### A Higher Definition

Christians live according to a *higher definition* of sin, just as has been written in I John 5:17, which states, "*All unrighteousness is sin.*" In *The New Covenant*, when you desire someone else's goods, you are guilty of coveting. When you hate your brother, you are guilty of murder.

You see a *much higher standard* than that provided by *the written Law*. Therefore, you cannot be in *the spirit* (God's Law written in your heart) and in *the letter* at the

same time. *The letter* only requires a person not to sin physically. *True Christians* are those who know *right* from *wrong* because of their nature and heart. Therefore, they fulfill (complete) *The Law* by expressing love (Romans 13:10). There is one other difference concerning true believers. The word “*love*” in English is very misleading. There are those who believe Christianity is based on emotion or love. They say there is no need for God’s Law (*Ten Commandments*) because just loving God and their neighbor is sufficient. They believe Christianity is *a feeling* and many times associate it with *uncontrolled passion*.

God’s love (*agàpè*) is totally different. God has emotion and feelings, but this is based upon *righteousness*. When the rich man said he kept *the commandments* from his youth up, Christ said that Jesus *loved* (*agàpè*) him (Matthew 19). *Agàpè*, God’s love, is based upon morality and righteousness. God’s love is based upon *The Ten Commandments* being in your heart (I Timothy 1:5).

Christians, as true followers of Christ, *do not need to observe the written Law* (*The Torah*) when they keep *The Ten Commandments*. This is because they are on a higher level through a change of heart (which is love). At the same time, true Christians do not merely follow Christ through their feelings or emotions and keep on sinning. Rather, they have *a heart of love* that keeps them *from sinning*.

This is *The New Covenant*, which is more glorious and better than *The Old Covenant* with *The Law of Moses*. *The New Covenant* is “Christ – *In You*” (Colossians 1:27). *You are One with God as He reproduces “Himself – In You” and you become His Sons*.



## Chapter 12

### SATAN – GOD’S HELPER

Why is there a Lake of Fire? What is its purpose? In short, why would a loving God create a Lake of Fire? You need to understand why God placed a Lake of Fire in His plan. Is there a better way to give the faithful Eternal Life while the unconverted burn in The Lake of Fire? To understand this you must first experience how God thinks.

Why did God choose to do things this way? That is a broad question. Since God is perfect, good, righteous, merciful and full of love, couldn't He have found a better way to accomplish His *plan*? Why use Satan? Why would God need a devil to carry out His *plan*? You need to look at The Mind of God and how He *thinks*. Only then, will you begin to understand why Satan plays such an integral part in God's perfect *plan*.

Philippians 2:1-5 <sup>1</sup>If *there be* therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies, <sup>2</sup>Fulfil you my joy, that you be like-minded, having the same love, *being* of one accord, of one mind. <sup>3</sup>Let nothing *be done* through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. <sup>4</sup>Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. <sup>5</sup>Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus.



Paul describes feelings that are *so deep* they become part of *the body* and *spirit*. To fulfill this joy, one must become like Paul's description of a Christian (Philippians 2).

As a Christian, how should one behave? To start with, don't be so concerned with yourself. Christ was never self-centered. He always thought about others. Christ has a mind that thinks only about the welfare of God's *creation*.

Hebrews 1:3 Who being the brightness of his glory and the express image of his person and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.

## Image Of Character

Christ looks exactly like The Father. The word for "*image*" in Greek is "*charakter*" or "*character*." God, The Father, only thinks about the good that can be done for others. So, understand that Christ is just like The Father.

Psalms 40:1-5 <sup>1</sup>I waited patiently for the LORD; and he inclined to me and heard my cry. <sup>2</sup>He brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay and set my feet upon a rock and established my goings. <sup>3</sup>And he has put a new song in my mouth, even praise to our God: many shall see it and fear and shall trust in the LORD. <sup>4</sup>Blessed is that man that makes the LORD his trust and respects not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies. <sup>5</sup>Many, O LORD my God, are your wonderful works which you have done and your thoughts which

are to us-ward: they cannot be reckoned up in order to you: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered.

Here is an algebraic equation regarding God’s character. Instead of using  $A + B$ , or  $A + X = B$ , use righteousness + love + character + goodness + perfection = GOD’S MIND. David talked about how God thinks. David said, “*I waited patiently for the LORD; and he inclined to me and heard my cry. He brought me up also out of a horrible pit [Lake of Fire], out of the miry clay and set my feet upon a rock [which was Christ] and established my goings.*” Christ made *a way*. It is established, firm and safe. These are His wonderful *works* and His *plan*.

When God created His *Plan for Salvation* (to reproduce Himself), His intent was to *save everyone*. So, The Lake of Fire was designed to purify sinners. The only choice one has is to repent! In some cases, it will only take a short period of time. But, for the stubborn ones, it may take longer. Don’t be concerned because God gives everyone all the time they need to repent.

I Corinthians 13:6-9 <sup>6</sup>Rejoice not in iniquity, but rejoice in the truth; <sup>7</sup>Bear all things, believe all things, hope all things, endure all things. <sup>8</sup>Charity never fails: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. <sup>9</sup>For we know in part and we prophesy in part.

One of God’s traits is love or *agàpè*. “*Charity* [agàpè love] *never fails.*” Agàpè love is always there. You can always

depend upon it. It is like a rock. This is because, “*we know in part and we prophesy in part.*”

I Corinthians 13:5 [Charity] Does not behave itself unseemly, seek not her own, is not easily provoked, think no evil.

## How Love Behaves

Love does not behave indecently. This is because “*God is love*” (I John 4:8). God is *agàpè*. It is wonderful to know this God who has free choice has everything, never needs anything. He always was, is today and always will be. God wants to share His love with His *creation*. He can do whatever He wants. This is because He is *love (agàpè)* and He is *righteous* by His very nature. The largest sacrifice that God could give is Himself. Yet, God created a problem for Himself. It is summed up by the question, “*How do you clone yourself?*” Atheists ask if there is a God. They wonder why He allows humans to endure a lifetime of imperfections and problems. Why didn't He make you perfect in the beginning? You read, “*Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect*” (Matthew 5:48). If God made everyone perfect in the beginning, He would *not* have needed to bring forth a reproduction (a Son). Rather, God would have created a robot. When God decided to reproduce Himself, He created an incredibly difficult job for Himself. He had to make the reproduction of Himself come directly from Himself. The entire puzzle of *The Bible* is about becoming *One with God*.

James 1:25 But whoso looks into the perfect law of

liberty and continues therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

The *sacrifice* that Jesus Christ made was tremendous. This is because a man can have no greater love than to lay down His *life* for his friends. God sacrificed Himself for your good. That is *The Plan* and He designed it to accomplish *His Purpose*. James talks about a *Royal Law*. A Royal Law is a *Kingly Law* or a Law from God.

James 2:8 If you fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, You shall love your neighbour as yourself, you do well.

## The Royal Law

The Royal Law of God gives you liberty and true freedom (not bondage or slavery). God’s *plan* was to give His *creation Eternal Life*. His creation was not placed into bondage or slavery. Individuals must have total free choice. Since God is reproducing Himself, these beings are required to have unlimited free choice. This is because anything less would not be from God.

Now, it seems that God created another problem for Himself. If He created human beings with total free choice to decide what is right and wrong and they had *Eternal Life*, then what would be the result? Would it be confusion? Everyone would have a different way of doing things. Yet God’s creation had to be free to choose (within a limited time frame) before embracing *Eternal Life*. There was no other way. Remember, God made man in His own image.

However, God did not give man *the perfection* that He has. Therefore, God could not allow mankind to live forever after they made the choice to sin. God couldn't make you perfect in the beginning because there was no guarantee that you would choose to be sinless.

If everyone did what was *right*, but only according to each individual, earthly societies would end up in mayhem. It would be another Sodom and Gomorrah. So God created *a more perfect plan* where everyone would ultimately become perfect by their own choice.

John 14:5-6 <sup>5</sup>Thomas said to him, Lord, we know not whither you go; and how can we know the way? <sup>6</sup>Jesus said to him, I am the way, the truth and the life: no man comes to the Father, but by me.

Jesus Christ is talking just before He left earth to be with The Father. This is just before His crucifixion. Jesus was leaving instructions to The Apostles along with some interesting thoughts.

## Doubting Thomas

There is an account of a doubting Thomas (John 14). What is the meaning of this story? It shows you that God has a system. Satan also has a system. Satan wants you to follow *his way*. This is a totally different system, living carnally. And Satan's system will lead you into pain and misery. God's system is designed to train you to become *righteous, merciful, loving and perfect*. This guarantees you *Life Everlasting!* Christ said, "*I am the way, the truth and the life*" (John 14:6). Christ tells you the truth of God

(Hebrews 1). **Only He knows the true facts. He is *the light*, which will give you *life*. However, humanity always wants to do things another way. These are two completely opposing systems. Read the proof about *the whole plan of God* (Psalm 40).**

Ephesians 3:14-15 <sup>14</sup>For this cause I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.

Understand that *the purpose* of human life is for you to become *a Son of God*. God is reproducing Himself through a family. Hence, there must be a father, a mother and children. If God wants to give His children everything, then it means that they will receive *an inheritance*. Through *an inheritance*, God is passing on everything that He is (and all that He has) to His children. Everything He possesses (including *eternal life*) is contained in Him. This is what The Sabbath represents. He portrays everything that is good and plentiful (complete blessings). There is no pain, suffering, debt or death.

## Children And Inheritance

Children don’t always understand what *an inheritance* is. It is *a right*, but it is only *a right* because the giver has decided to make it *a right*. Mankind does not respect *The Law of Inheritance*. The Government wants to tax it. The Government’s intent is to make everything and everyone equal. God doesn’t want to make everything equal. He wants to decide what each individual in His family will receive according to their *spiritual growth*. He tells you that His first begotten Son, Jesus Christ, receives everything

and then the remainder of the children will receive their *individual inheritance* according to their good works.

God could not have created *a better Plan of Salvation*. Indeed, God wants to give *an inheritance* to His heirs. Mankind and the government want to steal most of the *inheritance* or, worse yet, dissipate it. Does God give *that inheritance*? Christ said that He is *The Way* and *The Truth*. *He wants to give you life* (John 14). Anything outside of that system is wrong. God made *a promise* to Abraham and He passed all those blessings on to *the seed* of Abraham. The children of Israel were to receive *the inheritance*, but they were rebellious. So instead, God gave them *a Law*. He had to give them *a Law* because they were *unconverted*. *The Law of God* was given to Moses so that The Children of Israel would realize they were carnal. *The Law* did not make them *righteous* like God. God has made it all so clear, yet Christians argue whether they should keep *The Law* or not. Carnal individuals are sinners who *do whatever they want*. *The Law* was instituted so they could realize they were sinners. *The Law* was intended to bring them to Christ so they could repent (Galatians 3:24). God never loses and never makes mistakes. In the end, He will win and you will eventually get Eternal Life.

## God's Plan

God had to devise *a plan* so that His creation would never get lost. God is *perfect* and He carries out what He *wills* (Ephesians 1:10-11). He always succeeds! So God came up with a system whereby no one can be lost. God does not abort. He will bring every human life to *Salvation!* That was why Christ came to this earth (I John 4:14).

Matthew 13:36-38 <sup>36</sup>Then Jesus sent the multitude away and went into the house: and his disciples came to him, saying, Declare to us the parable of the tares of the field. <sup>37</sup>He answered and said to them, He that sows the good seed is the Son of man; <sup>38</sup>The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

God’s system guarantees *Salvation* for everyone. This will be accomplished through His Son, Jesus Christ. *This plan* will come to a successful conclusion (John 6:29). If you do not understand how God thinks, then you cannot understand the following statement from Matthew 13, “<sup>36</sup>*Then Jesus sent the multitude away.*” This was for a very good reason.

Remember that John 14:6 says, “*I am the way.*” In that same context, you read, “<sup>37</sup>*He that sows the good seed is the Son of man; <sup>38</sup>The field is the world [God’s Plan of Salvation] the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares [weeds thrown into this field] are the children of the wicked one.*” Satan bears children just like God bears children.

In a contest between God and Satan, who would win? On one side, you find that Satan is developing his children. On the other side, God is developing His children. Do you remember the story of the tortoise and the hare? You will find that God and His children are like the turtle and the children of Satan are like the hare.

Galatians 4:19-27 <sup>19</sup>My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you. <sup>20</sup>I desire



to be present with you now and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you. <sup>21</sup>Tell me, you that desire to be under the law, do you not hear the law? <sup>22</sup>For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. <sup>23</sup>But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. <sup>24</sup>Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which genders to bondage, which is Agar. <sup>25</sup>For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children. <sup>26</sup>But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. <sup>27</sup>For it is written, Rejoice, you barren that bears not; break forth and cry, you that travails not: for the desolate has many more children than she which has a husband.

The Apostle Paul explained that if anyone preached *another gospel* (reread Chapter 7, '*The True Gospel*'), then *The Law of Moses* could never save mankind.

*“<sup>19</sup>My little children, of whom I travail in birth [talking about a family with children] again until Christ be formed in you. [God’s purpose is to reproduce “Himself – In You”]. <sup>20</sup>I desire to be present with you now and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you”* (Galatians 4:19-20).

## Bond And Free

Paul continues, *“<sup>22</sup>For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. <sup>23</sup>But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh.”* The bondwoman, also, produced children. This

was done after the flesh. Sarah was childless, so she convinced her husband Abraham to have children through the bondwoman.

This is *free choice*, which ended in sorrow for everyone. Sarah told Abraham to take her handmaid Hagar and produce a baby. There are two types of marriages.

- 1) In God’s marriage, through bone of bone and flesh of flesh, you become *one*. What God has joined together, let no One put asunder (you become *One* with God).
- 2) The other type of marriage is Satanic. It was allowed in *The Law of Moses*. It was according to the teaching of Baal. This Baal was *the god of fertility* or the lord who owned the virgins among the women and who considered them property. So that was the choice which Eve made when she took from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. She incurred all the penalties of Satan’s system.

Satan does not believe in marriage the way God does. Satan views women as property. Abraham was not sinning when he took Hagar because Hagar was his property. This was allowed in *The Law of Moses*. Sarah thought this was the only solution. Later it caused Abraham a great deal of grief. Paul explains this scenario, “<sup>24</sup>*Which things are an allegory for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, [speaking of The Law of Moses] which genders to bondage, which is by Agar.*” *The Law of Moses* had to be given to *unconverted* people (I Timothy 1:9-10).

## Mount Sinai

*The Law never made anyone righteous or perfect. The Law of Moses only informs sinners that they are sinning. <sup>25</sup>For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children. <sup>26</sup>But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.* Christ is the sower of the seed (the children of God) as opposed to the tares (the children of Satan). Hagar and Ishmael were cast out because they *could not* be part of *the inheritance*. Remember, God is reproducing Himself through The Principle of Inheritance. The desolate were plainly told that they, *“have many more children than she which has a husband.”* Hagar was not properly married to Abraham. Sarah was married to Abraham. They were *bone of bone* and *flesh of flesh* and no one was to tear them apart. That is quite plain and simple. Satan knows his system is going to produce more children in the short-term than God's system. However, short-term gain is *long-term loss*. Satan does not require marriage. He promotes the concept of just living together. You can have one-night stands and produce as many children as you want. God says, *“For many are called, but few are chosen”* (Matthew 22:14). So, they end up going into The Lake of Fire.

Ezekiel 28:1-2 <sup>1</sup>The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, <sup>2</sup>Son of man, say to the prince of Tyrus, Thus said the Lord God; Because your heart is lifted up and you have said, I am a God, I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas; yet you are a man and not God, though you set your heart as the heart of God.

How did Satan come up with this plan? Ezekiel 28 tells the story about The Prince of Tyre who ruled over The Island of Tyre (history books call it Phoenicia).

## Phonecia

Phonecia was a merchant giant. Archaeologically, people are discovering Phoenician writings in far away places such as The United States and South America. This trading giant was perhaps the first form of globalization. The Prince of Tyre was full of pride. He was a tycoon. His ships were sailing and trading all over the world. This is about the time of Solomon and David. This prince was using Satan’s system to gain wealth. Satan may have been directing him, influencing him and literally possessing his very being. *“<sup>1</sup>The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, <sup>2</sup>Son of man, say to the prince of Tyrus, Thus said the Lord God; Because your heart is lifted up.”* This shows that the heart of proud men may become highly exalted. Yet God, *the most powerful being* in existence, has a humble heart. Although it is difficult to think of God as being humble, He is. He never thinks of Himself. He is not worried about self-esteem. Why should He? His thoughts are always about doing what is good. He is *the perfect example*. David was the same way. David was a sinner because he did things that were terribly wrong. He murdered, committed adultery and did many other sinful things. But, he always repented and his heart was humble. God said that David had a heart like His own.

## Prince Of Tyre

On the other hand, The Prince of Tyre was completely dif-

ferent. God said, “*2Because your heart is lifted up and you have said, I am a God* [referring not only to The Prince of Tyre, but to Satan, also] *I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas.*” This is Satan’s world. Satan never doubts that God is God. Satan *knows* God is The True God. Satan never even thought of being God himself. Satan just wanted to be *like God*.

Ezekiel 28:11-13 <sup>11</sup>Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, <sup>12</sup>Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus and say to him, Thus said the LORD God; You seal up the sum, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. <sup>13</sup>You have been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering, the sardius, topaz and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald and the carbuncle and gold: the workmanship of your tabrets and of your pipes was prepared in you in the day that you were created.

These texts are not talking about a man. Notice the words, “<sup>13</sup>*You have been in Eden the garden of God.*” When we think of Satan in The Garden, we imagine a snake wrapped around the tree with its head exposed. However, that is not what Eve saw. Here is what she saw, “*You have been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering, the sardius, topaz and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald and the carbuncle and gold.*”

This is what Satan really looked like. Amazing isn’t it? He was like a serpent. Although Satan was deceptive, he was good looking and sure of himself, much like today’s

con men. “*And the carbuncle and gold: the workmanship of your tabrets and of your pipes was prepared in you in the day that you were created.*”

## Tool To Deceive

God intentionally made *The Bible* into a puzzle. He purposely wanted people to understand *The Bible* and be converted at different times (when they are ready). All people are not destined to know *the truth* at the same time. So, Satan was God’s *tool* to deceive God’s creation. God gave Satan that authority.

John 8:43-47 <sup>43</sup>Why do you not understand my speech? Even because you cannot hear my word. <sup>44</sup>You are of your father the devil and the lusts of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar and the father of it. <sup>45</sup>And because I tell you the truth, you believe me not. <sup>46</sup>Which of you convinced me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do you not believe me? <sup>47</sup>He that is of God heareth God’s words: you therefore hear them not, because you are not of God.

When talking to The Pharisees and Sadducees, Jesus Christ said that they were of their father, The Devil. This is quite clear. They are *The Diabolos*. Satan’s children are liars. If all humanity understood God’s *truth* at the same time, they would feel guilty. They would feel responsible for what they do. They would know they are sinning. As long as Satan deceives, these people are misled and think

they are doing okay. It is very hard to help anyone who is doing something very wrong. It is tough for people to admit they are wrong. Not many can be like the person in *the temple* who said, "*God forgive me. I am a sinner.*"

## God Uses Satan

God *uses* Satan to help *fulfill* His plan. When Satan rebelled and was tossed to earth, he became God's tool. Remember, God says, "*I create evil*" (Isaiah 45:7). However, God cannot *be* evil. God cannot sin. If He sinned, He would not be God. God could not have been *The One* to keep anyone from understanding Him.

Your Savior not only had to give His life for you, but He, also, had to be able to *judge righteously*. He never could have judged *righteously* if He was a violator of *The Law*. Remember, when The Pharisees and The Levites brought an adulteress to Jesus, according to *The Law of Moses*, she had to be stoned. It states that Christ may have written their sins in the sand. The original scriptures do not have this scenario. No one knows. When they all left, Christ said, "*Neither do I condemn you.*" They really had no right to condemn her because they, themselves, were sinners.

Why doesn't God do the judging? Until you have walked in the person's shoes, you cannot judge them. Did you ever hear of being *judged* by twelve of your own peers? Hebrews states, "*Christ was tempted in every way like as we, yet without sin.*"

God couldn't judge you because He never sinned. God

never experienced carnal nature. So, He sent His Son to become a human being. He was required to live sinlessly as a human being, so He could be *a righteous judge*. This demonstrates again what *a perfect plan* God created. No one but God could have created anything like it.

Ezekiel 28:14-16 <sup>12</sup>Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus and say to him, Thus said the Lord God; You seal up the sum, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. <sup>13</sup>You have been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering, the sardius, topaz and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald and the carbuncle and gold: the workmanship of your tabrets and of your pipes was prepared in you in the day that you were created. <sup>14</sup>You are the anointed cherub that covers; and I have set you so: you were upon the holy mountain of God; you have walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. <sup>15</sup>You were perfect in your ways from the day that you were created, till iniquity was found in you. <sup>16</sup>By the multitude of your merchandise they have filled the midst of you with violence and you have sinned: therefore I will cast you as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.

## What God Needed

God used someone who could be a liar and without feelings or sympathy for what human beings endure. God needed someone who was good-looking, pompous and had a huge ego.



Satan was, “<sup>12</sup>*full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.* <sup>14</sup>*You are the anointed cherub that covers.*” Satan was one of three cherubs (Michael, Gabriel and Heylel).

The word “*Lucifer*” is not in *The Bible*. A Catholic, named Saint Jerome (345-420 A.D.) translated “*Heylel*” into “*Lucifer*.” The Hebrew “*Heylel*” means “*one who proclaims.*” Satan knew the whole story. He knew God’s whole plan. However he didn’t like it. In this context, you read, “<sup>14</sup>*You are the anointed cherub that covers; and I have set you so; you were upon the holy mountain of God; you have walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.* <sup>15</sup>*You were perfect in your ways from the day that you were created, till iniquity was found in you.*” How did all this happen? It was by, “<sup>16</sup>*the multitude of thy merchandise.*” This brings you back to The Prince of Tyre.

God said that “*I will cast you as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.*” Christians say that Satan is going into the fire. It is obvious he will get thrown into The Lake of Fire. All this will become clear later.

Genesis 3:1-7 <sup>1</sup>Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, Yea, has God said, You shall not eat of every tree of the garden? <sup>2</sup>And the woman said to the serpent. We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: <sup>3</sup>But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, You shall not eat of it, neither shall you touch it, lest you die. <sup>4</sup>And the serpent said to the woman, You shall not surely die: <sup>5</sup>For God does know that in the day you eat

thereof, then your eyes shall be opened and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. <sup>6</sup>And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was pleasant to the eyes and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also to her husband with her; and he did eat. <sup>7</sup>And the eyes of them both were opened and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons.

Satan was in The Garden of Eden but he was not like a snake slithering around. He was this awesome cherub, beautiful with the aura of glistening jewels. He acted like a deceptive snake and he may have frightened Adam.

### Satan’s Great Deception

Satan tells Eve what he thinks and believes, “<sup>4</sup>*And the serpent said to the woman, You shall not surely die.*” Satan was correct in this assessment but he was deceptive at the same time. He didn’t tell Eve that she would die once (perhaps twice) between then and the time of receiving *Salvation*. Satan is tricky. His system is directly opposite from God’s system of honesty, “<sup>5</sup>*For God does know that in the day you eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened.*”

Most Christians think that Satan lied to Eve, but he did not. She ate and gave the fruit to her husband. He ate it with her and they hid themselves from God by trying to clothe themselves. Now, for the first time, they understood about sex and passion. When they ate the fruit, they knew they were naked. Clearly, Satan told her *the truth* long before she was ready to handle it. Satan never tells

the whole truth but just enough to suit *his purpose*. “<sup>6</sup>*And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was pleasant to the eyes and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also to her husband with her; and he did eat. <sup>7</sup>And the eyes of them both were opened.*”

So the message was the truth, but it was very deceptive. Remember that the best liars are those who believe their own lies. Realize that Adam always talked directly to the angel of God. But he also listened to his wife. This was a stupid decision. Hence, they received the penalty for their disobedience.

### Adam Lost The Easy Life

Adam lost an easy life. He became responsible for Eve, who became his property. Initially, it was hard for Adam to refuse her. How can you refuse your own flesh? Because he disobeyed, Adam lost *Eternal Life*. Eve became his property and he ruled over her. She entered Satan's system. She gave herself to Satan. Adam and Eve became Satan's instruments and they were worshipping Baal.

Jeremiah 7:1-7 <sup>1</sup>The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, <sup>2</sup>Stand in the gate of the LORD's house and proclaim there this word and say, Hear the word of the LORD, all you of Judah, that enter in at these gates to worship the LORD. <sup>3</sup>Thus said the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, Amend your ways and your doings and I will cause you to dwell in this place. <sup>4</sup>Trust you not in lying words, saying, The temple of the LORD, The temple of the LORD, The temple of

the LORD, are these. <sup>5</sup>For if you thoroughly amend your ways and your doings; if you thoroughly execute judgment between a man and his neighbour; <sup>6</sup>If you oppress not the stranger, the fatherless and the widow and shed not innocent blood in this place, neither walk after other gods to your hurt: <sup>7</sup>Then will I cause you to dwell in this place, in the land that I gave to your fathers, for ever and ever.

When you study The Aztecs, you learn that they practiced *the shedding of innocent blood* by burning their children as a sacrifice to their pagan god, Moleck. The account above is about Judah (The Jews), one of The Tribes of Israel. In the story, Judah goes and worships in God’s temple. God says, “*4Trust you not in lying words.*” What were they following? They were seeking protection in *the temple*. They were calling out for deliverance.

Jeremiah 7: 17-18 <sup>17</sup>See you not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? <sup>18</sup>The children gather wood and the fathers kindle the fire and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven and to pour out drink offerings to other gods, that they may provoke me to anger.

### Stealing From God’s Temple

They were coming to God’s temple and stealing, “*See you do not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? The children gather wood and the fathers kindle the fire and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven.*” This is the tradition of Ashtar (Easter) in Babylon. This proclamation says that

**this woman would never be a widow. Yet, these *drink offerings* made God angry.**

**Jeremiah 7:20** Therefore thus said the Lord God; Behold mine anger and my fury shall be poured out on this place, on man and on beast and on the trees of the field and on the fruit of the ground; and it shall burn and shall not be quenched.

**Jeremiah 7:29-32** <sup>29</sup>Cut off your hair, O Jerusalem and cast it away and take up a lamentation on high places; for the LORD has rejected and forsaken the generation of his wrath. <sup>30</sup>For the children of Judah, have done evil in my sight, said the LORD: they have set their abominations in the house which is called by my name, to pollute it. <sup>31</sup>And they have built the high places of Tophet, which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it to my heart. <sup>32</sup>Therefore, behold, the days come, said the LORD, that it shall no more be called Tophet, nor the valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter: for they shall bury in Tophet, till there be no place.

**Notice how the anger, fury and fire are all related to God's attitude regarding this ruinous conduct, "*it shall burn and shall not be quenched* [The Lake of Fire]. <sup>29</sup>*Cut off your hair, O Jerusalem.*"**

**When a woman became a harlot, she lost her covering (her hair). Hair signifies the angels protecting the woman. What were they doing to offend in *the temple*?**

The answer is, “<sup>31</sup>*And they have built the high places in Tophet [Tophet is a village where they did their cremations], in the valley of the son of Hinnom [The Hebrew word “Hinnom” is “Gehenna” in Greek and relates to “The Lake of Fire”], to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my heart.* <sup>32</sup>*Therefore, behold, the days come said the LORD, that it shall no more be called Tophet, nor the valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter.*” They were killing infants.

### Children Offered To Baal

They were offering their children as a sacrifice to the god Baal. Why would Satan want beautiful little children to be burned? It is because Satan knows that he will, also, be burned. Repentance requires one to become like a little child.

So, through pagan religions all over the world, Satan convinced people to throw their own flesh and blood (their own children) into the fire. Satan convinced them that this would appease their pagan gods. Satan knew he was supposed to be like a little child, but he never changed his attitude. If the followers of Satan had obeyed *the true God* and became like little children (and repented), then God would have *saved* them.

Matthew 8:28-29 <sup>28</sup>And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. <sup>29</sup>And, behold they cried out, saying, What have

we to do with you, Jesus, you Son of God? Are you come hither to torment us before the time?

These demons knew what awaited them, “<sup>29</sup>*And, behold, they cried out, saying, what have we to do with you, Jesus, you Son of God? Are you come hither to torment us before the time?*”

Satan knows he will be going into The Lake of Fire. He and one-third of the angels who rebelled and became demons know that they will be going into The Lake of Fire.

### Chains Of Darkness

Christ said, “*They are cast with chains in darkness, all in torment, constantly, fearing the Lake of Fire.*” So, these demons seek refuge in humans, who have given themselves over to Satan. Humans can be *saved* from The Fire, but only through Christ. When Christ cast the demons out of the raving, ranting, possessed person, the demons said, “*Cast us into the pigs. It's better to be in the pigs, than to roam around, in stress and torment.*” There is a time when Satan comes before God. God asked Satan if he had ever seen a man as upright and perfect as Job. Job was a man who hated evil so deeply. Satan's answer was that Job obeyed God and listened to Him because God had blessed Job's life. With Satan's remark, God used Satan to prove a point (Job 1). Remember that God asked Satan the question. God knew He had to use Satan. God creates evil, but does not perpetrate it. A proud, ego-driven angel fought against God. The angel lost and the earth was given as his kingdom to deceive as many as he could. This angel became Satan. God knew the inner workings

of Satan’s mind so God will use him to eventually *save everyone*.

Isaiah 14:4 That you shall take up this proverb against the king of Babylon and say, How has the oppressor ceased! The golden city ceased!

Satan works by trafficking merchandise (Ezekiel 48). This is globalization. It is not by *inheritance* as God intended. Rather, it strives to obtain as much economic control as possible over the whole world. You can clearly see the form of government that Satan believes in. So you must separate the two: 1) Ezekiel 28 has to do with economics and 2) Isaiah 14 concerns government.

### God’s Way Versus Satan’s Way

God’s way is for you to become *One* with God. Satan’s way is just a form of possession. Satan’s form of government is a dictatorship. Satan promotes the attitude of not giving and not loving – just taking. That is the difference between Satan’s way and God’s way, “*That you shall take up this proverb against the king of Babylon and say, How has the oppressor ceased! The golden city ceased.*”

Isaiah 14: 10-12 <sup>10</sup>All they shall speak and say to you, Are you also become weak as we? Are you become like to us? <sup>11</sup>Your pomp is brought down to the grave and the noise of your viols: the worm is spread under you and the worms cover you. <sup>12</sup>How are you fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How are you cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations!



**Whose pomp is this? Remember that Nebuchadnezzar (Babylon) had to wander around as a wild man for seven years. This lasted until Nebuchadnezzar learned there was a God in heaven who ruled the affairs of man. “<sup>11</sup>*The noise of your viols [harps] the worm is spread under you [this is The Lake of Fire] and the worms cover you. <sup>12</sup>How are you fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How are you cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations!*”** Read about Satan ruling Babylon (Isaiah 14). This is an oppressive, violent dictatorship. Then you see that he controlled all the economics of the world through globalization (Ezekiel 28).

**Revelation 18:2-3 <sup>2</sup>And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen and is become the habitation of devils and the hold of every foul spirit and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. <sup>3</sup>For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.**

**These texts examine the woes of Babylon (Isaiah 14). Notice the similarities. The leaders of the earth are promoting globalization for the masses. Yet the masses will be impoverished because of this. Those who participate will be made *rich*. So, you see that Revelation 18 ties in with Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28. (Study them carefully).**

**Revelations 18:7-8 <sup>7</sup>How much she has glorified herself and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she said in her heart, I sit a queen**

and am no widow and shall see no sorrow. <sup>8</sup>Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death and mourning and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judges her.

Who is this great woman? Obviously, it is a magnificent commercial power. She is a queen. Do you remember The Queen of Heaven? You find that she claims, “*I am no widow.*” Of course she is not a widow because she never married! Although she claims she will “*see no sorrow,*” in one day, it all comes to an end. Christ *returns* and Satan is imprisoned for a thousand years.

### Satan’s System Of Marriage

The main point being made concerns Satan’s system of marriage. This deals with the right of ownership, payment, prostitution and harlotry (sealing it all). This is a totally opposite system from Christ’s, which is, “*I am the way and the truth and the life.*” Satan’s system is totally different from God’s way. What does Christ find before He *returns* (Matthew 24)? If Satan did not deceive mankind, then man would have been held totally responsible. Satan plays a very *important* role in God’s *plan*. Because of Satan’s nature, he has a vital purpose to fulfill. He may know that God is using him. He also knows that, in the end, he will be placed in The Lake of Fire. Satan’s system tries to break up families, eliminate *inheritance* and turn the son against the father and the daughter against the mother. He does everything he can to destroy God’s system.

Another example of Satan’s method is the way he uses

homosexuality. Children cannot be born through homosexuality. This life-style is one of Satan's methods to con men and women. Before The Return of Christ, The Wrath of God is poured out upon Satan and Babylon. God proclaims that it takes *two witnesses* to pronounce someone guilty of adultery. Before Babylon falls, there are two witnesses who find her guilty. God uses the Satanic system so mankind will not be held responsible until their opportunity for *Salvation* comes along (The Lake of Fire).

## Two Witnesses

Where are *the two witnesses* who could testify against adultery? God's Law requires two or more witnesses. Perhaps, the two witnesses of Revelation 11 are *two churches*, which are called *candlesticks* (two candlesticks). In the beginning of *The Book of Revelation*, God says there are *seven candlesticks*.

After you are resurrected and become God's child (remember there can be no sin in the presence of God), then He will wipe away your tears and you will not remember them any more. All the painful things will be forgotten. You will come to the place of wanting to obey God. Most likely you will remember living on this earth. It seems logical that the lessons you have learned will not be forgotten. For example, when I was in the Navy, I disliked it so much that each day I'd put an "X" on my calendar until I was discharged. After being discharged and after a period of time, all I could do was talk about the fun times I had in the service. But I never forgot how I disliked it. God may have you remember the experience but not the pain and sufferings.

Another example is childbirth. After the child is born, the mother starts to forget the pain and suffering. When you are born into The Kingdom of God, you are happy because you will be *a Spirit being*. Mothers often go through a painful experience, but are left with such joy that there are no bad memories. I remember all the times that I was spanked by my father and my mother. Yet, I never held anything against them. My Dad would spank me hard. I would go into my bedroom and he would make me stay there. I would say, “*I’m going to run away when I grow up.*” Today that means nothing. I don’t remember the pain. But I know that I was spanked. Yet, I still loved my parents. And, after all is said and done, it helped me know what I should do and what I shouldn’t do. Christ does not do any judging until the time of The Jubilee. His role changes from Savior to Judge. He becomes The Judge of all Judges. He must *release* everyone during The Time of Jubilee. The Jubilee marks the end of Satan being used by God. Remember that *the purpose* of The Lake of Fire is to purge sin, so that everyone can repent through the death of the flesh. Only *the spirit* will survive and *live eternally* (I Corinthians 5:5)!

## Chapter 13

### GOD'S ETERNAL FIRE

Many pagans believe The Lake of Fire is an eternal fire. Some believe that once you are thrown in, you are tormented forever and are eternally toasted and roasted. Others believe that when you are thrown in, you will be completely incinerated. Actually, both of these beliefs are somewhat correct. As a Christian who wants to obey God, Satan will look for ways to confuse you. He does not need to tell you a straight-out lie, he just will not tell you The Whole Truth.

The best liar is one who believes his own lies (John 8:44). Satan was able to fool Eve. Since then, his prime targets are Christians, although he has, also, deceived many agnostics and atheists. Satan continually tries to fool you by twisting and camouflaging *the truth*. The whole world follows him (II Corinthians 4:4 and Revelation 12:9). Why did a loving God create a Lake of Fire? If all have sinned and the wages of sin is death, why resurrect anyone? Those who repent and want to change should be the only ones who are *resurrected to life*. Isn't this right? The unrepentant should remain dead. Doesn't that make sense?

Why would God resurrect people when He knows they will burn? This question should bother you because it doesn't sound like a loving God. What is *the real purpose* of The Lake of Fire? When you understand the reason for it, you will understand God and His *masterful plan*.

## Christ Returns

Revelation 19:20-21 <sup>20</sup>And the beast was taken and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. <sup>21</sup>And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

When Jesus Christ returns to the earth, He will subdue all the enemies of righteousness (Revelation 19). This takes place at The Great Battle of Armageddon. Christ becomes King of Kings and Lord of Lords. At that time, the political system will be headed by a person known as *the beast*. A false religious system known as The False Prophet will, also, exist. Christ will defeat all the hostile armies as He comes into Jerusalem.

The beast is part of the false political system (a Gentile creation) known as Babylon. Both the false religious system and the false political system are subdued at the end. *“These both were cast alive into a lake of fire.”* Notice the letter “a” in the phrase “a Lake of Fire.” It is not “the” Lake of Fire. This fire is “burning with brimstone.” (The Greek word for “brimstone” is “*theion*.” “*Theion*” can also mean “divine” as in something from God and “*theos*,” the root word, means “God”). When lightning struck the earth, the areas were called “*theia*” and a sulfurous smell wafted through the air. This is God’s Lake of Fire, a divine fire, a fire that purifies. *“And the remnant were slain with*

*the sword of him that sat upon the horse* [this is Christ].” Now, you can proceed to another phase of this prophesied condition.

Revelation 20:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. <sup>2</sup>And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil and Satan and bound him a thousand years <sup>3</sup>And cast him into the bottomless pit and shut him up and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. <sup>4</sup>And I saw thrones and they sat upon them and judgment was given to them; and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus and for the word of God and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. <sup>5</sup>But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. <sup>6</sup>Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection: on such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ and shall reign with him a thousand years.

Peter tells you *this “hell,”* which is called “*Tartaroo,*” is a “*place of restraint.*” This hell is reserved for Satan only. There is an angel with *the key to the bottomless pit* who has a great chain in his hand to bind Satan. Satan is bound in “*Tartaroo*” (a place of restraint). This will last for a thousand years. The false prophet and the beast are thrown

into a Lake of Fire. For 1,000 years, the beast and false prophet will be kept in a Lake of Fire where they have been cast. Now what happens? “*4And I saw thrones and they sat upon them and judgment was given to them.*” A resurrection takes place. Christ gives Judgment, but *the resurrected* (Christians) will, also, be judges. It is important to realize that the souls who are beheaded are those who bore witness of Jesus. This also includes those Christians who existed before *the resurrection*.

### A Thousand Years

The Lake of Fire will burn for at least a thousand years, but after those thousand years, this Lake of Fire will remain. “*5But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.*” These are those who are reigning with Christ. Those who are in the first resurrection will reign with Christ and help perform judgment during the thousand-year period. “*Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection: on such the second death has no power.*” The second death has no power. So, there must be *two deaths*. How can there be two deaths?

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed to men once to die, but after this the judgment.

The Greek word for “*appointed*” means “*reserve*” or “*set aside.*” This is appointed when you reserve something such as “*to men once to die.*” Is this a contradiction? In *Revelation* there are two deaths. Paul very clearly says that “*it is appointed [reserved] to men once to die.*” It is only appointed for you to die once. When you sin and



then die, your sins are paid in full. This is because “*the wages of sin is death.*” That is the end result. Why, then, will you be resurrected and thrown into The Fire to die again? “*But after this the judgment.*” There is something about this *second death* that you need to understand.

## Two Resurrections

Revelation 20:6 Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection: on such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ and shall reign with him a thousand years.

Here, the second death means something more than just being destroyed or dying. You need to understand that these individuals will be “*priests of God* [they will be the ones who will rule with Christ] *and of Christ and shall reign with him a thousand years.*”

John 5:25-29 <sup>25</sup>Verily, verily, I say to you, The hour is coming and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. <sup>26</sup>For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself; <sup>27</sup>And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. <sup>28</sup>Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup>And shall come forth; they that have done good, to the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, to the resurrection of damnation.

This critical text ties in with Revelation 20 and The First Resurrection. This is The First Resurrection and *the sec-*

*and death has no power, “<sup>26</sup>For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself; <sup>27</sup>And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.”* (Reread Chapter 8 – ‘*Marriage, The Great Mystery*’). **Marriage pertains to The Jubilee Year. God is making Christians *One* with Him through marriage. You will be *redeemed* by your Savior *before The Jubilee*. When does everyone else get *resurrected*? It is at *The Jubilee*. There is a big difference.**

**If you are *redeemed*, it means that you are removed from slavery (ahead of time). During The Jubilee Year, the remainder will be set at liberty (released). When Jesus Christ first came, He said that He *judges* no man. He said that His Father has given all *judgment* to Him. These are two different responsibilities. When Christ came as The Messiah, He came as The Groom for His Bride (The Jews) or, in The Judgment, as Judge.**

**John, The Baptizer prepared *the way* fulfilling the role of the best man (John 3). But The Israelites (The Jews), who were fulfilling the role of The Bride, *rejected* Him. They said “*No*” to the marriage. Christ, then, went to The Gentile world, calling them to become Christians or His Bride. Since The Israelites (The Jews) rejected Christ, The Gentiles had their opportunity to be ahead of The Israelites. At that time, Christ started to build His Church. Christ *redeemed* The Church by buying Her with His life. As Savior and Redeemer, He was purchasing Her before The Jubilee Year or Year of Release (Leviticus 25). When He becomes Judge and judgment is given to Him, there is no time to buy anyone back. The fifty years are up. It will, then, be *The Time of The Release*.**

## Time Of Judgment

Pagans think The Day of Judgment is a horrible time. However, The Day of Judgment is a wonderful occasion. The word “*damnation*” is an English translation referring to The Lake of Fire. By translating the word “*damnation*,” in Greek, people believe they go into The Lake of Fire and burn forever. The word for “*judgment*” is “*krisis*,” which, in Greek, means “*critical*” or “*crises*.” Its root means a “*turning point*” or a “*change*.” When Christ comes as Redeemer and Savior before the end of The Jubilee (or end-time), He will *redeem* you (Job 19:26). Christ, as Redeemer, must buy you ahead of time with His very *life*.

Once The Jubilee Year (The Marriage Feast) is complete and *The Time of Redemption* is over, Christ then becomes The Judge. He decides who is punished and for how long. Do you remember the parable of the penny and the laborers? In Jesus' parable, the householder hired laborers, some in the early morning and some at the eleventh hour. But He gave them all just one penny. Some individuals became angry. Some didn't like the fact that a few worked so much longer and received the same amount of money as those who worked for a shorter period of time (Matthew 20). There is a big difference in Christ's responsibilities as Redeemer, Savior and Judge. “*Krisis*” or “*turning point*” is a significant time for The Jubilee Release of all others. All are *saved* or *released* (I John 4:14), which is *the real purpose* of The Lake of Fire.

Now, for the next *resurrection*, “<sup>28</sup>*Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves*

*shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup>And shall come forth; they that have done good to the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, to the resurrection of damnation”* (John 5). This is The Judgment. It is “*krisis*,” which is the same Greek word you just read. They are not damned, but rather, it is their *turning point*.

How many resurrections exist in The Second Resurrection? There is only one. Some people believe there are two resurrections. Some people believe that The Resurrection of Life is *one resurrection* followed by a 100-year time period. Some feel this was followed by *a third resurrection*. However, this is not so. There are *not* three resurrections. Notice these words specified earlier, “<sup>28</sup>*Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all* [not two more resurrections] *that are in the graves shall hear his voice.*” So, there are only *two resurrections*. The first one takes place before The Millennium and the second one happens after The Millennium. The Second Resurrection has two divisions. There is a *resurrection* of those who are *resurrected to receive life*. Then, the rest are thrown into The Lake of Fire.

## The First Resurrection

In *The First Resurrection*, The Church is *redeemed and saved*. The Second Resurrection comes 1,000 years later. This is *The 11<sup>th</sup> Hour Redemption*. There is no redemption for anyone else. Now, it is time to learn about these events from another perspective. This comes through continued study.

Revelation 20:7-15 <sup>7</sup>And when the thousand years are

expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison. <sup>8</sup>And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. <sup>9</sup>And they went up on the breadth of the earth and compassed the camp of the saints about and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them. <sup>10</sup>And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. <sup>11</sup>And I saw a great white throne and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. <sup>12</sup>And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. <sup>13</sup>And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. <sup>14</sup>And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. <sup>15</sup>And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

## The Second Death

How many deaths are appointed to individuals? There is only one (Hebrews 9:27). One death is physical. This would mean that the *second death* must be a different type of death. The text in Revelation 20:7 shows that, “<sup>7</sup>when the thousand years are expired, Satan will be loosed out

*of his prison [Tartaroo, Satan's Hell]. <sup>8</sup>And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth."*

Then, these armies of Gog and Magog surround New Jerusalem. But God destroys Jerusalem's enemies, "<sup>9</sup>*And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them.*" Then, "<sup>10</sup>*And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone [“brimstone” has a great meaning] where the beast and the false prophet are and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.*" The words “forever and ever” in Greek really mean “ages and ages.”

It does not mean eternity, just *a continuation* during an *age* or period. Then, the rebellious ones are tormented. No one knows how long this will take, but you do know that the beast and false prophet are thrown into The Lake of Fire. So 1,000 years go by and this Lake of Fire is still around. Does that mean they will burn for 1,000 years? *The Bible* does not reveal that but they probably will not. Why throw Satan into The Lake of Fire if he is a spirit and cannot die?

Read what is revealed to John, "<sup>12</sup>*And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.*" Did you know that God has a report card for every human being He has ever created? What is the reason for counting every little thing? If a person is no good, then he is no good. He is

good or he is bad. He is either a sheep or a goat. So all that is needed is to throw the bad ones into The Lake of Fire. Isn't that what Christ said? Those who refuse to repent or *grow spiritually* will go directly into The Fire. Isn't that right? <sup>13</sup>*And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.*" This shows that there is only *one resurrection*.

Christ said, "*Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice*" (John 5:28). Do you find that each person is in a resurrection (Revelation 20:12-13)? Look at this, <sup>14</sup>*And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire.*" Hell is "*hades*" or the "*grave*" and "*death*" is the *absence* of life.

## The Torture Of Death

The dead are thrown into The Lake of Fire. Is God going to torture death and the grave? How does God torture death? There are two types of deaths, but only one death, the physical death is *guaranteed*. *The second death cannot be a death*. Are the pagans right or are they wrong? Do people burn forever and ever? How can the second death be death if it is only reserved (appointed) for men to die once? Look at that text again, <sup>14</sup>*And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.* <sup>15</sup>*And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.*"

*The Book of Life* is a marriage registry. *The Lamb's Book of Life* is nothing more than the story of Jesus becoming worthy to be The Groom and Savior. He brings His Wife

(the church) and makes her ready. He prepares her for **The Wedding** (along with The Guests). “<sup>15</sup>*And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into The Lake of Fire.*” The people who go to The Wedding Feast are the ones who are written in *The Book of Life*. Christ is The Groom and The Husband, The Bride is *The Church* and The Guests are attendants. The last verse states that many are called but few are chosen. So, where do the majority go? A minister once gave a message entitled, “*Who Is Going to be Saved?*” He said that he was sorry to tell everyone that the majority will not be *saved*. Many churches believe that the only ones who will be *saved* are those written in *The Book of Life*. The majority will get thrown into The Lake of Fire.

In studying *The Scriptures*, the churches can logically come to this conclusion and agree with the old pagan teaching that *most* will be burned up. A number is given (Daniel 7). That number is approximately 100,000,000 individuals. If only 100,000,000 people are saved, then billions of others will be lost. Yet you read that human beings will only die once (Hebrews 9:27).

## Punishment of Stripes

Luke 12:42-48 <sup>42</sup>And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? <sup>43</sup>Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing. <sup>44</sup>Of a truth I say to you, that he will make him ruler over all that he has. <sup>45</sup>But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delays his coming; and shall begin to beat the



menservants and maidens and to eat and drink and to be drunken; <sup>46</sup>The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looks not for him and at an hour when he is not aware and will cut him in sunder and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. <sup>47</sup>And that servant, which knew his lord's will and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. <sup>48</sup>But he that knew not and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For to whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

The Lord will appoint a ruler who has *life* and will give them their portion (Verse 42). The word "*portion*" in Greek is "*meros*." It can also be translated as "*part*." These individuals will receive their *portion* or *their part* of the meat in due season.

The result is, "<sup>43</sup>*Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing.* [Now, the main point] <sup>44</sup>*Of a truth I say to you, that he will make him ruler over all that he has.*" This is The First Resurrection. This is the good result. Now, you are informed about a different type of result, "<sup>45</sup>*But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delays his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens...* [this is about those who do not have God's Law written in their hearts. This means] <sup>46</sup>*The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looks not for him.*"

## Parable Of Virgins

The parable of *the virgins* fits in here. Five were wise and

five were not. So, the door was closed on the five who were not wise. Realize that all this happens “*at an hour when he is not aware and will cut him in sunder and will appoint him [meros] his portion [his part] with [whom?] the unbelievers.*” The word for “unbelievers” in Greek is “*apistos.*” The exact Greek meaning, also, indicates “*what portion they receive.*” “<sup>47</sup>*And that servant, which knew his lord's will and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.* [You learn some will be beaten with many stripes and will get a portion with the unbelievers]. <sup>48</sup>*But he that knew not and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes.*” This is the time when everyone who does not know Christ will receive their stripes. They will be in direct proportion to how much they understood and followed God's teaching. Either that or it will be to the degree to which they had sinned. Those who never knew God and died as babies will only see or feel a small amount of the heat of *the fire*. They will change quickly.

II Peter 3:8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day.

Some churches believe The Judgment Period is 100 years long and some believe it lasts for a 1,000 years, as the verse indicates. This is the *krisis* or *the turning point*.

Luke 12:48 But he that knew not and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For to whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

Those who did not know Christ at all will receive a small penalty. Much will be expected of those with more Godly knowledge, teaching and understanding. Less will be expected of those with little ability or little knowledge of Christ. Depending upon the amount of *truth* you have along with your level of Christianity, you are responsible to follow those *truths*.

### Christians And Non-Christians

Humans, who are not Christians, will die and be *resurrected*. They will still pay but with fewer stripes. If, however, you know a great deal of *biblical truth* and you do nothing with it, then you will pay with many more stripes. This divides The Christians from the unbelievers. In other words, *a heavier judgment* will be placed upon The Christians than upon *the unbelievers*. The sobering thought is that what you, as a Christian, leave as *a witness* before you die determines how many stripes you will eventually obtain. Christians who refuse to *grow spiritually* will receive more punishment which means more stripes.

Revelation 21:7-8 <sup>7</sup>He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.  
<sup>8</sup>But the fearful and unbelieving and the abominable and murderers and whoremongers and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

*The unbelievers* had better beware. The word for “*unbeliever*” in Greek is “*apistos*” (in Luke 12). They are grouped with “*the abominable and murderers and whoremongers*”

*and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, shall have* [*“meros”* or their *portion*] *their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.”* The stripes are reserved for those who burn. This is so they can be purified like gold (I Corinthians 3:13-15). Most will have to go into The Lake of Fire, but the hardest judgment will be for Christians who refused to grow. When more knowledge is given and understood, more is expected. Only a few guests are allowed to attend The Wedding (Matthew 22:14). So why does God have The Lake of Fire and what is its *purpose*?

## Purpose Of The Lake Of Fire

Matthew 3:7-11 <sup>7</sup>But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said to them, O generation of vipers, who has warned you to flee from the wrath to come? <sup>8</sup>Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: <sup>9</sup>And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say to you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children to Abraham. <sup>10</sup>And now also the axe is laid to the root of the trees: therefore every tree which brings not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire. <sup>11</sup>I indeed baptize you with water to repentance: but he that comes after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire.

Follow each step carefully. Do not miss one point or you will miss a good portion of the puzzle, *“<sup>7</sup>But when he* [John, The Baptizer] *saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said to them, O generation of vipers*

[Satan is a serpent, viper, snake] *who has warned you to flee from the wrath to come?*"

There are many people who believe they are *true Christians* because they follow *The Law of Moses*. The Sadducees and Pharisees were *the seed of Abraham* and were circumcised. They were part of *the promise*. Both groups thought they were doing just fine in God's sight, but God did not perceive them in that *light*. Remember that *The Law* was only to bring them to Christ (repentance). After that, *The Works of The Law* were *no longer needed*.

The purpose for The Lake of Fire is now revealed, "<sup>10</sup>*And now also the axe is laid to the root of the trees.*" This is not just chopping trees down but demolishing *the root*, which is the very *life* and the very *flesh*. *The fire* changes their hearts. This equates to a *true repentance*. It is a change in *The Spirit in man*, down to the root.

## Acting Sweet And Doing Good

Acting sweet and doing good doesn't necessarily make you a Christian. There must be a change in your nature, "<sup>10</sup>*therefore every tree which brings not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire.*" There are two hells here: 1) Hell (grave) and 2) Gehenna (The Lake of Fire). The Greek word for "*fire*" in Verse 10 is "*pur*," "*pore*" or "*pure*." The English word "*pure*" or "*purify*" comes from the Greek word for "*fire*." So, "*every tree which brings not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire.*" This is purification. John talks about his form of baptism compared to the form of The One who will follow him. John says, "*he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost*

[Spirit] *and with fire.*” The Lake of Fire is also a baptism. Remember, there are *three baptisms*: 1) A baptism by water, 2) The baptism of the Holy Spirit and 3) A baptism by fire. What is *the purpose* of baptism?

Acts 2:38 Then Peter said to them, Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Peter gave this sermon on The Day of Pentecost. This was the time of The Jubilee and all were speaking in tongues (interpreting in the different languages) so that each nationality could understand Peter's teachings. Peter told them to repent and be baptized. This was an urgent message. *The purpose of baptism* is to repent of sins.

- 1) Baptism by water represents the death of your sins which are being washed away.
- 2) Baptism by The Holy Spirit cleanses your sins which leads to truth.
- 3) Baptism by fire causes repentance and purification of sins, “*and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost* [Spirit].”

## Dead Works

Hebrews 6:1 Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on to perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God.

Paul explains the basic doctrines of Christianity, “<sup>1</sup>*not laying again the foundation [doctrine] of repentance from dead works.*” God identifies any human effort to make yourself righteous, as *dead works*. Being right with God requires *repentance* and not doing dead works. Religious works do not change you or anyone else. You must become like a little child. Repentance is asking God to change you. “*Repentance*” in Greek means “*a change of mind.*” The Apostle Paul said he was blameless in keeping *The Law* but counted it all as “*dung*” (Philippians 3:8).

There is nothing you or anyone can do on a religious basis that will change you. Repentance from dead works is just a beginning principle or the first step on *the ladder* to Christ. This is not *strong meat*. Strong meat comes later. After repentance from dead works, three baptisms can take place: 1) Water, 2) Holy Spirit and 3) Fire. Water washes away your sins, but it can never change you. When The Israelites left Egypt (a picture of sin), they had a *water baptism* by going through *the sea*. That was their symbolic baptism and repentance was not required (although circumcision was necessary). They had their sins overlooked so that when they reached Sinai, God could be their God. Here is another example. At the time of Noah, the world was so evil that every thought was nothing but evil. Then, God baptized (by flooding) the whole world. In this way, He cleansed the world from sin (read Genesis 6). However, there was *no repentance*. In a similar manner, when Israel went through the wilderness, the whole generation rebelled against God and ended up dying in that wilderness. A new generation came up and they were, also, baptized when they crossed The Jordan River. They went into *the promised land*, but there was

still *no repentance*. The message was purified when John, The Baptist came and said, “*Repent.*” Remember, he was preparing *the way* for Christ. You must have a change of mind before you can receive The Holy Spirit. This is in addition to the water washing away your sins.

## Baptism Of Holy Spirit

Acts 2:1-3 <sup>1</sup>And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. <sup>2</sup>And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind and it filled all the house where they were sitting. <sup>3</sup>And there appeared to them cloven tongues like as of fire and it sat upon each of them.

You can be baptized, but it will not and cannot make you perfect. You cannot make yourself *righteous*. It will never happen. No religious works can change you. No matter how much you may try, you cannot change what you are. The Apostles had to wait until The Day of Pentecost. Then, God gave them The Gift of The Holy Spirit. *The Scriptures* explain The Holy Spirit. Remember, the word in Greek for “*fire*” is “*pur*” meaning “*pure*” or “*purify.*” The *purpose* of The Holy Spirit is to purify.

The result was that the baptism of The Holy Spirit “<sup>3</sup>*sat upon each of them.*” The participants spoke in foreign tongues because God gave them that ability as a *gift* to His *church* so they could explain Christ’s teachings to *the unbelievers* in their language. They discovered *the truth* in their own native tongue. There was no need to speak in tongues for the believers who already understood the language (I Corinthians 14).



Hebrews 4:12 For the word of God is quick and powerful and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit and of the joints and marrow and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

A person is burned and purified down to his/her individual *spirit*. The Holy Spirit is like a fire which cleanses all that it touches.

John 14: 16-17 <sup>16</sup>And I will pray the Father and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; <sup>17</sup>Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees him not, neither knows him: but you know him; for he dwells with you and shall be in you.

### Fire Purifier

Christ had to give you that *gift*. Christ told The Disciples that He was going to leave this earth to be with His Father. However, He was going to send another Comforter. The Holy Spirit is a fire purifier and is *the truth*. God's Spirit "*In You*" reveals *the truth* through God's *word*, which is sharper than a two-edged sword. It cuts right through to the soul and spirit. Read the whole story about The Lake of Fire in I Corinthians 15 and Hebrews 12. It is imperative that you study these accounts.

Matthew 5:27-30 <sup>27</sup>You have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not commit adultery: <sup>28</sup>But I say to you, That whosoever looks on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in

his heart. <sup>29</sup>And if your right eye offend you, pluck it out and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish and not that your whole body should be cast into hell. <sup>30</sup>And if your right hand offend you, cut it off and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish and not that your whole body should be cast into hell.

Jesus Christ explains a little more about The Lake of Fire. You now know the type of *righteousness* that Christians must have. You are not dealing with *The Law of Moses* here but with The Royal Law. *The Law* you are now under is The Royal Law. *The Law of Moses* gives an opportunity for *unconverted people* to come to Christ (Galatians 3:10-13 and I Timothy 1:9).

Notice the words “*the right eye.*” Christ is explaining human nature in this example. He uses *an eye* as a metaphor for *sin*. Christ is talking about the different parts of sin within your nature. It needs to be *plucked out*. This must happen in order to prevent you from being cast into Gehenna. When you become *a witness* of Christ as His Ambassador, it means that you are willing to give up your life and put to death anything that is in your human nature.

This is not martyrdom. Paul said, “*though I give my body to be burned and have not charity [agàpè] it profits me nothing*” (I Corinthians 13:3). You need a change of nature. God is asking if you are willing to give up your way of doing things, even when you think you are doing what is right. When you *repent*, you have a change of heart and you put your human nature to death.

**I Corinthians 3:1-5** <sup>1</sup>And I, brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual, but as to carnal, even as to babes in Christ. <sup>2</sup>I have fed you with milk and not with meat: for hitherto you were not able to bear it, neither yet now are you able. <sup>3</sup>For you are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying and strife and divisions, are you not carnal and walk as men? <sup>4</sup>For while one said, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are you not carnal? <sup>5</sup>Who then is Paul and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom you believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

**You can be *babes* “*In Christ*” and still retain your carnal nature. What is revealed when people still have a carnal nature? They are still fed with milk and not meat.**

**I Corinthians 3:6-15** <sup>6</sup>I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. <sup>7</sup>So then neither is he that plants any thing, neither he that waters; but God that gives the increase. <sup>8</sup>Now he that plants and he that waters are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour. <sup>9</sup>For we are labourers together with God: you are God's husbandry, you are God's building. <sup>10</sup>According to the grace of God which is given to me, as a wise master builder, I have laid the foundation and another builds thereon. But let every man take heed how he builds thereupon. <sup>11</sup>For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. <sup>12</sup>Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; <sup>13</sup>Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every

man's work of what sort it is. <sup>14</sup>If any man's work abide which he has built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. <sup>15</sup>If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.

Paul was first on the scene and he planted. Apollos came along later and helped to tend to the growing plants. But only God gave the increase. No one but God can change you. This addresses ministers and everyone else. Paul told you he was more diligent than all the others. He was like a wise master-builder. God revealed more to him as he dealt with *the church* and with The Gentiles. Peter, on the other hand, spent his time with The Israelites. Paul said, "*I have laid the foundation and another builds thereon. But let every man take heed how he builds thereupon.*" It is scary when you think of what ministers preach and when you contemplate how you live your *Christian life*.

### Pluck Out An Eye?

They now had the foundation but were still carnal. They were just babes "*In Christ.*" They weren't willing to pluck out *the eye*. They weren't willing to cut off *the arm*. They weren't willing to kill their carnal nature. A preacher should worry about what he preaches. A person who claims to be a Christian should be concerned about what he believes and the way he lives his life. This is because, "*the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire.*"

If only *an eye* has caused you to sin, you might burn for a short time. If, in your lifetime, you have given more of

your body over to sin, then you will burn longer, which means more stripes since, *“the fire shall try every man’s work of what sort it is.”* Is your nature changing? Are you growing *spiritually* or not? You must have a goal (read Matthew 5:48). You must strive to become *perfect* during *your lifetime*. *“<sup>15</sup>If any man’s work abide which he has built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.* [The church gets the role of performing as Judge and Ruler]. *If any man’s work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss [an eye or an arm might have to go] but he himself shall be saved.”* The Baptism of Fire saves the person.

I Corinthians 5:4-5 <sup>4</sup>In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>5</sup>To deliver such an one to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus (Judgment).

Paul chastised the people during The Days of Unleavened Bread for allowing a fornicator to be in their company (I Corinthians 5). He told them they should keep The Feast by observing what the day means sincerely and truthfully (by not sinning). Paul commanded *the church* to expel this man and deliver him to Satan. Satan helps God whether he wants to or not. Paul is saying to give this sinner *“to Satan for the destruction of the flesh.”* Everything in the flesh (human nature) and all that is corruptible must burn. You either do it willingly by accepting *the gift of purification* by *The Holy Spirit* through God or you are going *to burn*. The reason for this is, *“that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus”* (I Corinthians 5:5). The flesh and its works will be destroyed while *the spirit* will

be *saved*. This means the second death will be something else, as you shall shortly see.

## The Second Death

**Jude 6-13** <sup>6</sup>And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness to the judgment of the great day. <sup>7</sup>Even as Sodom and Gomorrha and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire. <sup>8</sup>Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion and speak evil of dignities. <sup>9</sup>Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke you. <sup>10</sup>But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves. <sup>11</sup>Woe to them! For they have gone in the way of Cain and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward and perished in the gainsaying of Core. <sup>12</sup>These are spots in your feasts of charity when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withers, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; <sup>13</sup>Raging waves of the sea, foaming out of their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

**Jude is describing the people who must go into The Lake of Fire. He is warning them with these fearsome words,**

*“the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, [these angels didn't follow God but followed Satan instead. This is why] he has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness to the judgment of the great day.”*

## Sodom And Gomorrah

Sodom and Gomorrah are used as extreme negative examples of human nature. *The purpose of the fire is to purify.* Christ says that The Judgment will be more tolerable for those of Sodom and Gomorrah (who will be *saved*) than for The Sadducees and Pharisees. Sodom and Gomorrah is an example of The Lake of Fire. You must respect authority. This applies to the rulers of this world. Even though they may not be good, God allows them to be in charge. That is a part of being a Christian. *“Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke you.”* Demons are more powerful than you, so you must ask God, in the name of Jesus Christ, to protect you. Remember, Satan is more powerful than Michael, The Archangel.

Analyze the examples of Cain and Balaam. Cain was a murderer and Balaam took a bribe. He was paid to curse Israel. It was a bribe because he took money for telling *the truth*. God looks upon ministers who take money from their flock in the same way. Korah, who told Moses and Aaron that they were taking too much authority upon themselves, ended up being burned.

Jude says, *“<sup>12</sup>These are spots in your feasts of charity when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds*

*they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots.” This is exactly what John said Christ would do. These are, “<sup>13</sup>Raging waves of the sea, foaming out of their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.” There are two deaths. This involves the whole root. Everything will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Spirit beings will also feel the torment of the fire.*

I Corinthians 15:1-13 <sup>1</sup>Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you have received and wherein you stand; <sup>2</sup>By which also you are saved, if you keep in memory what I preached to you, unless you have believed in vain. <sup>3</sup>For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; <sup>4</sup>And that he was buried and he rose again the third day according to the scriptures; <sup>5</sup>And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: <sup>6</sup>After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain to this present, but some are fallen asleep. <sup>7</sup>After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles. <sup>8</sup>And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. <sup>9</sup>For I am the least of the apostles that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. <sup>10</sup>But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. <sup>11</sup>Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so you believed. <sup>12</sup>Now if Christ be preached that



he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead? <sup>13</sup>But if there be no resurrection of dead, then is Christ not risen.

When Paul said he worked more fervently than the other Apostles, he said, “*yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. <sup>11</sup>Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach and so you believed.*”

## No Resurrection?

Now, to the main point, “<sup>12</sup>*Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?* [The subject from here forward is The Resurrection of The Dead. The lead-in is] <sup>13</sup>*But if there be no resurrection of dead, then is Christ not risen.*”

I Corinthians 15:19-26 <sup>19</sup>If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. <sup>20</sup>But now is Christ risen from the dead and become the first fruits of them that slept. <sup>21</sup>For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. <sup>22</sup>For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. <sup>23</sup>But every man in his own order: Christ the first fruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. <sup>24</sup>Then comes the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. <sup>25</sup>For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet. <sup>26</sup>The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

Paul compares death to being asleep. However, this is not

a permanent sleep (I Corinthians 15:19-20). “<sup>21</sup>*For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.*” So, if you died in Adam (the flesh), you have life “*In Christ.*”

The key point is, “<sup>22</sup>*For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.*” Everyone shall eventually receive *Eternal Life*. How clear do you want it to be? Paul said the same thing (I Timothy 2:3-4). Peter also said that God is, “*not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance*” (II Peter 3:9).

The text says, “*For as in Adam all die* [every human being has an appointed time], *even so in Christ shall all be made alive.* [So everyone will be made alive. The second death cannot be death. This is not *death* as you know it]. <sup>23</sup>*But every man in his own order* [You must get the sequence! It follows with]: *Christ the first fruits.*” First, Jesus was resurrected as The Son of God, then, “*afterward they that are Christ's at His coming.*” This continues with John 5:25 and Revelation 20:6, “*blessed are those who are in the first resurrection because upon them there is no second death.*”

The final part is now introduced, “<sup>24</sup>*Then comes the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.*” What is it that He must put down? The answer is, “<sup>25</sup>*For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet.* <sup>26</sup>*The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.*” So death will no longer exist. Christ's last job, before He turns *the kingdom* over to God, is to *abolish death*. In order for death to be abolished, no one can be dead.

Isaiah 59:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Behold, the LORD's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: <sup>2</sup>But your iniquities have separated between you and your God and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

**God does not sin. God cannot sin and He cannot be around sin. Satan can come before God's throne even though he is a sinner. Why is this? Because Satan is a *spirit being*, he can appear before God. "*Behold, the LORD's hand is not shortened* [is God a liar?] *But your iniquities have separated between you and your God and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.*" It is the conduct of the individual that causes the separation.**

## Why God Hides His Face

**God hides His face from you because of your sins. Everyone has sinned (Romans 3:21). No one will see God until there is no sin in anyone. Christ confirms that you have, "*never heard or seen The Father.*" That also means at Mount Sinai Moses *did not see God*. Stephen states that it was an angel in the burning bush (Acts 7). God comes to *the new earth and the new heaven* after sin and death are abolished by Christ (I Corinthians 15:26 and Revelation 21:22).**

I Corinthians 13:11-12 <sup>11</sup>When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. <sup>12</sup>For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

**That can happen only when you are without sin. You will see God face-to-face when you have no sin. No minister or Christian has all *the truth*. If a minister says he has all *the truth*, then he is a liar. The best anyone can do is know “*in part*.”**

**I Corinthians 15:26-28** <sup>26</sup>The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. <sup>27</sup>For he has put all things under his feet. But when he said all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him. <sup>28</sup>And when all things shall be subdued to him, then shall the Son also himself be subject to him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

**Death is the last thing to be subdued under Christ. If death is removed, then sin is also gone. *So, everyone will live*. One of the laws of physics is *The Law of Diminishing Returns*. All things must die. Everything is corruptible. Not only do humans die but the stars in the heavens die, too. When some stars die, they are called black holes. Finally, they burn out.**

**God does not live in this universe. God is *not going to return* until Christ puts sin to death. When Christ puts all corruption to death, then God will come. At that time, you will be able to see Him face-to-face. God's *kingdom* is a *spiritual kingdom* and *not a corruptible kingdom*, which can burn.**

**I Corinthians 15:32-37** <sup>32</sup>If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantage it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and

drink: for tomorrow we die. <sup>33</sup>Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners. <sup>34</sup>Awake to righteousness and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak *this* to your shame. <sup>35</sup>But some *man* will say, How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come? <sup>36</sup>You fool, that which you sow is not quickened, except it die: <sup>37</sup>And that which you sow, you sow not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other *grain*.

Now, what happens in The Lake of Fire? Paul talks about what The Apostles go through. He said, “<sup>32</sup>*I fought with beasts at Ephesus...* <sup>33</sup>*Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.* <sup>34</sup>*Awake to righteousness and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.*”

## To Be Quickened

Remember, in the beginning the people were carnal in nature (I Corinthians 3). To be “*quickened*” is to be “*energized*” or “*made alive*.” That is a more understandable definition for the word “*quickened*.” Heavenly things have a *different glory* than the things which are earthly.

I Corinthians 15:47-53 <sup>47</sup>The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. <sup>48</sup>As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. <sup>49</sup>And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. <sup>50</sup>Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit

The Kingdom of God; neither does corruption inherit incorruption. <sup>51</sup>Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, <sup>52</sup>In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound and the dead shall be raised incorruptible and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup>For this corruptible must put on incorruption and this mortal must put on immortality.

Do you remember what Christ said about *the eye*? If your eye offends you, then spiritually pluck it out (get rid of it)! You must get rid of whatever is fleshly and of a carnal nature. Only *the spiritual* can remain.

## The Mystery

Paul said, “<sup>51</sup>*Behold I show you a mystery.*” If these individuals go into The Lake of Fire, will they have to be resurrected? The answer is, “*We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed.*” So this is not a *resurrection*. There is no need for another *resurrection*. Something happens in The Lake of Fire that does not require a *resurrection*. There will be another Resurrection of The Church (I Thessalonians 4). Those who are alive when Christ *returns* will be *resurrected* to meet Him in the clouds. This includes those who are dead. The event is described as, “<sup>52</sup>*In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump* [this applies to the church] *for the trumpet shall sound and the dead shall be raised incorruptible and we shall be changed.*”

There is *no resurrection* because, “<sup>53</sup>*For this corruptible* [this human body] *must put on incorruption* [a spiritual body].” What does this mean? Scientists, such as Ste-

phen Hawking, are working on other universe theories with other dimensions where The Laws of Physics do not apply like they do here on earth. God says there are *three heavens* and *He resides in the third heaven* (the first heaven is the atmosphere, the second is the universe and the third is another universe). It is a non-Euclidean universe, meaning that the universe is not static (some scientists think ours is). There are no deaths in the third universe. Nothing in that universe can die. It is an incorruptible universe. Scientifically, it is another dimension. It is *spiritual* and not carbon-based.

I Corinthians 15:54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written. Death is swallowed up in victory.

This is another period of time when the question of death is answered. This text is *not* talking about *the first resurrection*. The conclusion is, "*Death is swallowed up in victory.*" Christ finally destroys death.

## How Does Christ End Death?

How does Christ bring an end to death? He changes everything that is corruptible into being incorruptible. That is the reason there is no resurrection. The resurrection that happens in The Lake of Fire is not a resurrection per se because it is a change *from corruptible to being incorruptible*.

Hebrews 12:1-21 <sup>1</sup>Wherefore seeing we also are

compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight and the sin which does so easily beset us and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, <sup>2</sup>Looking to Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. <sup>3</sup>For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest you be wearied and faint in your minds. <sup>4</sup>You have not yet resisted to blood, striving against sin. <sup>5</sup>And you have forgotten the exhortation which speaks to you as to children, My son, despise not you the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when you are rebuked of him: <sup>6</sup>For whom the Lord loves he chastens and scourges every son whom he receives. <sup>7</sup>If you endure chastening, God deals with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chastened not? <sup>8</sup>But if you be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are you bastards and not sons. <sup>9</sup>Further more we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection to the Father of spirits and live? <sup>10</sup>For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. <sup>11</sup>Now no chastening for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness to them which are exercised thereby. <sup>12</sup>Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down and the feeble knees; <sup>13</sup>And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. <sup>14</sup>Follow peace with all men and holiness, without



which no man shall see the Lord: <sup>15</sup>Looking diligently less any man fail of the grace of God; less any root of bitterness springing up trouble you and thereby many be defiled; <sup>16</sup>Less there be any fornicator or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright. <sup>17</sup>For you know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears. <sup>18</sup>For you are not come to the mount that might be touched and that burned with fire, nor to blackness and darkness and tempest <sup>19</sup>And the sound of a trumpet and the voice of words; which voice they that heard entreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more: <sup>20</sup>(For they could not endure that which was commanded And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned or thrust through with a dart: <sup>21</sup>And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:).

The two main chapters on this subject are Hebrews 12 and I Corinthians 15. God reveals an amazing message to you. There must be a Lake of Fire because it is a baptism. It purges sin and when there is no sin, there is no death. All the children of God have to endure this. *“<sup>1</sup>Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight.”* This is encouraging because whatever happens in your Christian lives (no matter how much pain, sorrow or torture), you must lay it aside as, *“the sin which does so easily beset us and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, <sup>2</sup>Looking to Jesus the author and finisher of our faith.”* Christ is *“the finisher”* because He was victorious over death. He is *“the beginner”* and *“the finisher.”* He did it all. Much

is accomplished through adversity, *“<sup>5</sup>you have forgotten the exhortation which speaks to you as to children, My son, despise not you the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when you are rebuked of him: <sup>6</sup>For whom the Lord loves he chastens and scourges.”*

### Length Of Stay In The Lake Of Fire

How long do individuals remain in The Lake of Fire? It will be only long enough to insure the right result. There must be enough time to get the job done. This is to guarantee success. This applies to *“every son whom he receives.* [If you don't go into fire, you are not one of His]. *<sup>7</sup>If you endure chastening, God deals with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chastens not? <sup>8</sup>But if you be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are you bastards and not sons [there is no inheritance]. <sup>11</sup>Now no chastening for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness to them which are exercised thereby.”* What does God's Holy Spirit do? Christ ascended and is able to give you The Holy Spirit as a Comforter.

After you are changed by The Word of God and scourged, then you receive the peaceful fruit of *righteousness*, which is your Comforter. *“<sup>12</sup>Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down and the feeble knees; <sup>13</sup>And make straight paths for your feet, less that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. <sup>14</sup>Follow peace with all men and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: <sup>15</sup>Looking diligently less any man fail of the grace of God; less any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled.”* *“<sup>18</sup>For you are not come to the*

*mount that might be touched and that burned with fire, nor to blackness and darkness and tempest, <sup>19</sup>And the sound of a trumpet and the voice of words; which voice they that heard intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more: <sup>20</sup>For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart: <sup>21</sup>And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake.”*

## Mountain Of Fire

**There is a particular mountain that was burned by fire. This story is about The Children of Israel at Mount Sinai (Exodus 24). When Israel approached God the angel spoke to them in place of God (Acts 7). Moses asked, “*Who shall I say sent me?*” when he was to go to The Pharaoh. The angel said “*Tell them ‘I AM’ sent you.*”**

**There is an angel of God who speaks as *a messenger* or as an ambassador from God. The angels were created to be messengers. No man has seen The Father or heard His voice. However, through the angels, you receive The Word of God. The flames of fire were so glorious that Moses was quaking. *The Scriptures* tell you that there was a consuming fire at that time. That is why the children of Israel did not want to come near God or His messengers. They knew they would be completely consumed.**

**There is another example where Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego were thrown into the fiery furnace, but it didn't burn any of them (Daniel 3). There was a fourth being (a messenger or an angel) with them for their protection. They**

did not burn because they had no sin. They were sinless. They didn't need to burn. Their *faith saved* them!

## God Is Like A Lake Of Fire

Hebrews 12:29 For our God is a consuming fire.

God cannot show Himself to humans. He would burn all who are not *spirit*. When He descends, His *glory* (a consuming fire) scourges every Son He loves.

Isaiah 30:33 For Tophet is ordained of old; yea, for the king it is prepared; he has made it deep and large: the pile thereof is fire and much wood; the breath of the LORD, like a stream of brimstone, does kindle it.

If God showed Himself, then everything would be consumed. It works according to the corruptible laws of physics. Tophet is a little village in The Valley of Hinnom, also called The Valley of Fire. This is where they burned their children for Balaam and Molech.

In contrast, God makes brimstone in The Lake of Fire.

Revelation 21:8 But the fearful and unbelieving and the abominable and murderers and whoremongers and sorcerers and idolators and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

The Greek root for "*brimstone*" is "*Godly*" or "*divine*." "*Brimstone*" is "*Holy Fire*." God's breath created this Godly brimstone (Isaiah 30). Sulfur has always been rec-

ognized as *holy* in much of *the pagan world*. The Lake of Fire came from God and it was created to do what? God was to bring an end to death.

Revelation 20:14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

*The second death will be the end of death. The purpose for The Lake of Fire is to end death. Everyone who is burned is completely purged and goes through a baptism. All come to repentance, as with Lazarus and the rich man (Luke 16:19-31). Fire cleanses and purifies all. What remains is pure spirit, which is the purpose of The Lake of Fire. God, as your Father, chastises everyone so that all can be saved. God truly is love. That is why Christ came into the world (I John 4:14). Christ came to save the world and to end sin and death. Christ will come again, so everyone can be saved! He will either redeem (buy back) or release (or judge) you, showing God's wonderful love and mercy. God allows no one to die. God, by His grace and mercy, saves everyone through His Son, Jesus Christ.*

## Chapter 14

### GOD'S KINGDOM

*The True Gospel is The Good News of The Kingdom of God. This is a spiritual kingdom and the flesh and blood cannot inherit this realm (I Corinthians 15). It is composed of Spirit beings who live in a different universe and in a different dimension. What better goal is there than learning The Good News, becoming a Son of God and being able to live with Him?*

**You will be given a fantastic opportunity to create beyond man's comprehension. You will never need to worry about death. You will not experience pain or suffering. You might ask, "What are Spirit beings going to do in God's kingdom and what is the purpose of The Kingdom of God?" Too many times Christians concentrate on just being saved. No one wants to be thrown into The Lake of Fire. No one wants to burn. When you are concerned about wanting to be saved, you tend not to think about what The Kingdom of God will be like. God is reproducing Himself. He is creating Sons. He is building a family and creating a Godly family government.**

#### Commerce And Prosperity?

**Will there be commerce? Will everyone be prosperous? Will you eat quality foods, live in wondrous homes and work in beautiful offices? Or, will you just play games like you did as a child? What will be the most important**

goal that God sets before you?

Genesis 22:15-18 <sup>15</sup>And the angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of heaven the second time <sup>16</sup>And said, By myself have I sworn, said the LORD, for because you have done this thing and have not withheld your son, your only son: <sup>17</sup>That in blessing I will bless you and in multiplying I will multiply your seed as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; <sup>18</sup>And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice.

Abraham and The Abrahamic Covenant form the underlying basis of The Gospel (The Good News of The Kingdom of God). Through an angel, God told Abraham, specifically, what would take place in His *kingdom*. Abraham offered his son, Isaac, as a sacrifice but God intervened and stopped it. An animal was sacrificed in Isaac's place. Here is the account, "<sup>15</sup>*And the angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of heaven the second time.*" The Bible shows you that no one has really talked to God. "Elohim," God Almighty who is The Universal God, talked to Abraham (Genesis 12). But it was really an angel who said, "<sup>16</sup>*By myself have I sworn, said the LORD, for because you have done this thing and have not withheld your son, your only son.*" This angel is speaking in the place of God, as instructed by God. He speaks in God's name and on God's behalf.

It is important for you to remember the concept of duality in *The Bible*. First, you have the physical aspect which is shown through Isaac being offered physically as a type of

Christ. This points to the time when Christ would sacrifice Himself. First, there is the physical *Law of Moses* and then, afterward, The Spiritual Law which will be written in your hearts, “<sup>17</sup>*That in blessing I will bless you and in multiplying I will multiply your seed.*” The sacrifice was made. Now, look at what follows. How many stars are there? How many galaxies are there? It continues with the words, “*as the stars of the heaven, as the sand.*” This is how much God will multiply Abraham's seed.

Has anyone counted all the grains of sand bit by bit? This is the sand “*which is upon the sea shore.*” These are all the seashores of the earth. That promise is followed by “*and your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; <sup>18</sup>And in your seed [speaking of Christ] shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice.*” Until this happens, *The Good News of The Gospel* will not come to pass. When you examine The Lake of Fire, you will find that most people will be thrown into it. This is because of their sins. Until all nations are blessed, the realization of *The Gospel Message* will not be complete. It is very plain. Finally, the mystery or God's puzzle will be revealed in God's *kingdom* (Revelation 10:7).

Ephesians 1:9-10 <sup>9</sup>Having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: <sup>10</sup>That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him.

The process starts to unfold. Regarding The Church at Ephesus, Paul says, “<sup>9</sup>*Having made known to us the mys-*



*tery of his will* [it is God's *will* to *save everyone*] *according to his good pleasure* [God will save everyone and this gives Him pleasure] *which he has purposed in himself.*" This is The Word of God, "*In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God and The Word was God*" (John 1:1). He purposed it in Himself. It was all in His *mind*. It was His pleasure to bless all nations. There are so many individuals that you would have to count all the little grains of sand or count all the stars in the heavens.

## Relativity And Time

In His *kingdom* and for His family, there will be no end. This is why it reads, "<sup>10</sup>*in the dispensation of the fullness of times.*" With God, there is no time. In *The New Testament* you read of "*dispensation.*" Another word would be "*ages,*" "*eons*" or even "*time period.*" Realize that *time* is just a series of events. Without events, there is no "*time.*" There must be an event in order to measure from a beginning to an end. When these events transpire, God may gather them together into one. Now, consider that *everyone* is *saved!* This result is part of The Abrahamic Covenant. All nations must be blessed through Christ, "*of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ both which are* [where?] *in heaven and which are on earth; even in him*" (Ephesians 1:10). Christ and God will dwell in Christians through His Spirit.

Paul said the same thing. Until this actually happens and people are thrown into The Lake of Fire, this text leads you to only one conclusion. It is that most people must *grow* in order to be able to enter The Kingdom of God (I Corinthians 15:22-23). When the dispensation of the times

are completed, then God will gather everything together into *One* “*In Christ.*” All of mankind must finally come to the place where they are *growing spiritually*. This is God's *purpose*, His pleasure and His *will*. Indeed, it was His *plan* from the beginning.

I Corinthians 15:22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

You must understand this text in the light of God's *kingdom*; otherwise, you are going to sit there twirling your thumbs and look at each other for eternity.

## More Than Abundance

The Kingdom of God is not just about abundance. That is only one aspect of being *saved*. God reproduces children for a reason. They must become Holy like God, “*For as in Adam all die*” (I Corinthians 15:22). Consequently, all physical human beings will die.

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed to men once to die, but after this the judgment.

The second death is the end of death. That is *the purpose* of The Lake of Fire. It is *the termination of death*, “*death is swallowed up in victory*” (I Corinthians 15:54). There is more, “*Even so in Christ shall all be made alive*” (I Corinthians 15:22). In Ephesians 1 and Genesis 22, The Abrahamic Covenant tells you this is so, “*In your seed* [Christ] *shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.*” You would need to count the sands on the seashore and the stars in heaven to grasp how many children there will be. The

tally is just too numerous to contemplate. Therefore, what is preventing *the Salvation of the world* (I John 4:14)?

Isaiah 59:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: <sup>2</sup>But your iniquities have separated between you and your God and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

What is going to happen in God's *kingdom*? Whenever you say that God is not going to *save* someone, you are falsely thinking that God cannot *save* that person or any other person. Notice, "*the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it [he] cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear.*" *So God can absolutely save everyone under any condition.*

### An Offended Woman

Once, a woman became upset when she heard the reason why people must go into The Lake of Fire. The reason is because everyone must come to *repentance*. This notion offended her because she felt that her free choice was taken away. You still have free choice, but this is *The Time of Judgement*. As long as you have an option, you have free choice. God will bring you to *repentance in spite of yourself*. God never takes away your free choice. You will stay in The Lake of Fire until you have had enough. The amount of *time* it takes is up to you. Consider the process of breaking a wild horse. Some horses must have their independent spirit broken but they still have a choice (Matthew 5:25-26). So, you will endure the heat.

A child hears his mother tell him not to touch the hot

stove, but he forgets and touches it. The child, suddenly, has to pay a penalty. Quickly, he stops touching it. Like the child touching the hot stove, you make the choice as to how long you want to stay in *the fire*. Those thrown into The Lake of Fire will have the choice to repent or else continue to burn. Eventually, on an individual basis, in your own time and in your own way, you will say "*it is enough.*" It will depend upon how *hard* your heart is. Your entire carnal nature is found in the flesh and it must be burned up (Matthew 5:30).

What about the people, today, who ruin their lives with drugs, alcohol or smoking? They become addicted. When do they quit? Usually, they quit when it hurts too much. It is called *bottoming out*. They almost overdose. If they drink too much, they may kill someone while driving. If they smoke, they get an illness such as throat or lung cancer.

## Revelation 21

You can learn about *the new heaven* and *new earth* by focusing on Jerusalem (Revelation 21). However, you won't learn much about the rest of the world. The focus is completely upon New Jerusalem. The rest of *the new earth* must be healed (Revelation 22:2). There must be something special about New Jerusalem in reference to the time of *the new heaven* and *the new earth*. It is very significant to the remainder of the world. New Jerusalem is where God chose to place His name. He, Himself, will reside there at the time of *the new heaven*. It is all about Jerusalem. Take the little puzzle pieces from *The Old Testament* and the little pieces from *The New Testament* and

put them together to understand New Jerusalem. Only those who are written in *The Lamb's Book of Life* will live in New Jerusalem in The Kingdom of God.

Who is in *The Lamb's Book of Life*? It contains only those who are part of The Wedding and The Guests. No one else is in there (Revelation 21:24). All the other nations are scattered throughout the rest of the earth. All are *Spirit beings* at this time, as they have been changed (I Corinthians 15:54-55).

### Size Of Future Jerusalem

New Jerusalem is 1,500 miles in each direction which is an approximate distance from Dallas to New York City. It is also four square. Can you imagine a city that is 1,500 miles in each direction? When you first study The Kingdom of God, you will have a totally different view of *the new heaven and new earth*.

A view from The Hubble Telescope reveals the magnificence and beauty of the colors displayed in the universe. Today, when astronauts go into space and look down, they are awed at the beauty of this planet. This view is nothing but a shadow of the wondrous beauty that God has in store for you. Read Revelation 19 through 22 for a greater understanding of New Jerusalem.

Isaiah 60:1-3 <sup>1</sup>Arise, shine; for your light is come and the glory of the LORD is risen upon you. <sup>2</sup>For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon you and his glory shall be seen upon you. <sup>3</sup>And the Gentiles shall

come to your light and kings to the brightness of your rising.

God's *purpose and pleasure is to bring everyone to Christ*. He says, "<sup>1</sup>*Arise, shine; for your light is come and the glory of the LORD is risen upon you.*" "*Arise and shine*" refers to "*The Resurrection.*" What is The Glory of The LORD? The Israelites knew that God's *presence* was in The Holy Place until 70 A.D. when Titus came and destroyed everything.

### Glory Departed The Temple

The Glory of God had already departed. Since *the temple* was going to be destroyed, God was not actually present. The Israelites knew The Shekinah was *not a being* but rather The Essence of God (The Shekinah will be discussed in more detail later on). They knew it was God's *Spirit, energy and glory*. (Reread Chapter 3 'Who Is God?').

You know God is made of *light*. When light energy is in motion, the photons are in a constant state of self-perpetuation. As light energy moves, it creates the color spectrum (a rainbow). Looking at God – face-to-face – is not possible. Why not? Because you would burn up! His face is as white as the sun and His body glows down to the burnished brass of His feet. Remember, God actually glows! All this essence is The Glory of God.

God has Seven Spirits before His *throne*. When God projects Himself, He is *All and In All*. Everything that is, today and in the future, will be God. When *The Bible* declares the, "<sup>1</sup>*glory of the LORD is risen upon you,*" it is a reference about *The Shekinah*. This *glory* is magnifying itself

with all its presence. God has eyes, ears, arms and legs within this energy and light. You look like God because He made you like Him. The essence and being of God is going to cover the whole *new earth*. So, no sun or moon is needed because God's *glory* is there. His Son is an exact duplicate.

*“<sup>2</sup>For behold, the darkness shall cover the earth and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon you and his glory shall be seen upon you. <sup>3</sup>And the Gentiles [here is The Abrahamic Covenant] shall come to your light and kings to the brightness of your rising.”* The light and brightness is for all the world. This *light* brings *the truth of Salvation*. Light makes it possible for people to see Christ, *The Light* and *The Truth Bringer*.

## The End Of Violence

Isaiah 60:18 Violence shall no more be heard in your land, wasting nor destruction within your borders; but you shall call your walls Salvation and your gates Praise.

From Isaiah 58 all the way to the end of *Isaiah*, there is an intermittent story-flow between *the new heaven* and *new earth*. This is shown in the context of The Millennium. Do not confuse the two. In some instances, God declares that He will make a *new heaven* and *new earth* and then, suddenly, He changes the subject. He does the same in *Revelation*. Don't get confused by this. At times, God talks about *the resurrection*. He says, *“I am making a new heaven and new earth.”* Then He tells you the process which reveals His *plan*. Many times Christians confuse

the process. Now in New Jerusalem, when speaking about the wall He says, "*but you shall call your walls Salvation and your gates Praise.*"

It is very important to know who will be permitted to go through *the gates*. In this "*world tomorrow*," which is The Kingdom of God, what is *the purpose of the gates*? You might ask, "*What is the purpose of the walls of this city?*"

Isaiah 62:1-4 <sup>1</sup>For Zion's sake will I not hold my peace and for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, until the righteousness thereof go forth as brightness and the salvation thereof as a lamp that burns. <sup>2</sup>And the Gentiles shall see your righteousness and all kings your glory: and you shall be called by a new name, which the mouth of the LORD shall name. <sup>3</sup>You shall also be a crown of glory in the hand of the LORD and a royal diadem in the hand of your God. <sup>4</sup>You shall no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall your land any more be termed Desolate: but you shall be called Hephzibah and your land Beulah; for the LORD delights in you and your land shall be married.

This is the beginning of the discourse about Jerusalem. The process of *Salvation* continues. There is the *brightness*. The *purpose* of New Jerusalem is to be a *light for Salvation*. It will continue until *righteousness* goes forth. New Jerusalem's *righteousness* is *Zion's righteousness*.

"<sup>2</sup>*And all kings [will see] your glory: and you shall be called by a new name, which the mouth of the LORD shall name.*" When there is a *new heaven* and *new earth*, they will receive a new name (Revelation 22).



This "*Crown of Glory*" means "*God's presence.*" This text refers to the responsibility that everyone will have. This will be during God's *kingdom* when it becomes a *new heaven* and a *new earth*. It will be a city of delight "*and your land shall be married.*" Hephzibah and Beulah will be *one* (Isaiah 62:4). The land, New Jerusalem and the people will be *One*. They will be married as *One* with God through His *glory, essence* and *presence*. These little pieces of the puzzle are important. If you don't follow carefully, then you will misunderstand what *The Bible* is revealing to you.

## Reward Of The Seven Churches

Revelation 1:3 Blessed is he that reads and they that hear the words of this prophecy and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

Who will tell you these things? You will be blessed if you read and observe the statements made in this prophecy. All nations are blessed (Genesis 22). Through an angel, Christ revealed to John things that would come to pass. This letter was written to The Seven Churches (Revelation 1 through Revelation 22).

Revelation 2:1-4 <sup>1</sup>To the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things said he that holds the seven stars in his right hand, who walks in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; <sup>2</sup>I know your works and your labour and your patience and how you can not bear them which are evil: and you have tried them which say they are apostles and are not and have found them liars: <sup>3</sup>And have borne and have patience and for my

name's sake have laboured and have not fainted.  
<sup>4</sup>Nevertheless I have somewhat against you, because you have left your first love.

What does John tell The Seven Churches? The seven golden candlesticks are The Seven Churches. The stars are the seven angels over The Seven Churches. He knows how they are doing in the process of overcoming. These people are not yet perfected. The big problem is that they have "*left their first love.*" Jesus Christ was their first Love.

### Ephesians And Christology

The Ephesian Church lost sight of The Messiah in the end and turned to paganism (in Christ's name). They argued Christology. They started to develop *the trinity* and, by 400 A.D., *the churches* of the world all believed there were three gods. It was not just one, but three gods! They lost their first love, which was Jesus. They argued whether Christ was a Son of God or God as a second Godly being. They lost *the truth*.

Revelation 2:7 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said to the churches; To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

You are being told about the *new heaven* and *new earth*. When you are *saved*, in God's *kingdom*, everyone will eat of The Tree of Life. Why do you need The Tree of Life if you already have *Salvation*? If you are already *Spirit* and are *saved*, why is The Tree of Life there? As a *Spirit being*, you will eat from The Tree of Life, "*which is in the midst of*

***the paradise of God.***” This is The Kingdom of God in New Jerusalem. Is New Jerusalem *paradise* or *The Garden of Eden*? New Jerusalem is The New Garden of Eden. In fact, it is a duplicate of God's *temple*. You are going to be Priests and Kings or The Bride where you will dwell with your Husband.

## Court Of Israel

Now, try to understand The Court of Israel. Outside this *court*, there is The Court of The Gentiles. The Groom is there along with The Bride and The Gentiles. The Israelites are there in New Jerusalem. Unless they are written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*, they cannot come into the city or *The Temple of God*. In order to enter New Jerusalem, one must experience a change of nature. God's *Ten Commandments* must be written in their hearts. Repentance will not be enough (Revelation 22:14).

I Corinthians 13:12 For now we see through a glass,  
darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but  
then shall I know even as also I am known.

**You are in New Jerusalem. God, The Father is there with your Husband, Jesus Christ. At that time you will be able to see God face-to-face. You are now putting another piece of the puzzle together.**

Revelation 2:10 Fear none of those things which you  
shall suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you  
into prison, that you may be tried; and you shall have  
tribulation ten days: be you faithful to death and I  
will give you a crown of life.

**They have a right to eat from The Tree of Life and to live in New Jerusalem. The Church in Smyrna is a *church* that has gone through persecution and has been tried. The only promise given is that they will have life and they will be *royalty*. The seed of Satan is there (Revelation 2:12-13). They are told that they are making a religion out of Christianity instead of living it (a way of life).**

**Revelation 2:14 But I have a few things against you, because you have there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed to idols and to commit fornication.**

**All of this was over money! Remember the wild ass that spoke? This is a group of people trying to make a business out of God's *church* (John 2:16).**

**Revelation 2:17-18 <sup>17</sup>He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said to the churches; To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the hidden manna and will give him a white stone and in the stone a new name written, which no man knows saving he that receives it. <sup>18</sup>And to the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things said the Son of God, who has his eyes like to a flame of fire and his feet are like fine brass.**

## **Hidden Manna**

**The hidden *manna* refers to the fact that Christ said you must eat His *body*. The white stone relates to you being a building block in New Jerusalem. *The Book of Revelation* is symbolic. In reality, New Jerusalem does not have**

a literal wall but is composed of The Apostles of God and Christians (Isaiah 26:1). The *wall is Salvation*. God has no need for *walls*. Jerusalem will be rebuilt during the time of Christ's thousand-year reign. It will have no walls. God is *the protector and the defender*.

These *walls* are only symbolic. This is purely a *spiritual message*. The *wall is The Bride* who offers *Salvation* to her children. She is *The Mother* (Ephesians 2:20-21 and Galatians 3:26). God talks about His *Seven Churches* and the people following the ways of Jezebel (Easter and Christmas). He still calls them His *church*. Through the ages, many in God's *churches* have been sinning and following Satan's pagan ways. However, they will pay the penalty with many stripes.

Revelation 2:26-28 <sup>26</sup>And he that overcomes and keeps my works to the end, to him will I give power over the nations: <sup>27</sup>And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. <sup>28</sup>And I will give him the morning star.

So, you will be *a ruler* over these other nations. "*The Morning Star*" is Jesus Christ (Revelation 22).

Revelation 3:1 And to the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things said he that has the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars; I know your works, that you have a name that you lived and art dead.

Revelation 3:4-5 <sup>4</sup>You have a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall

walk with me in white: for they are worthy. <sup>5</sup>He that overcomes, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father and before his angels.

Sardis isn't very diligent. You shouldn't run around deciding which church is The Church of God. Those who have God's *spirit* are in His *church* and only He knows who they are.

## Tree Of Life

Only a few will become The Bride of Christ. Christ is The Tree of Life (John 15:1-8). Those in Sardis, who remain *faithful* and overcome, will be in New Jerusalem. They are in *The Book of Life* as Christ's Bride or The Guests.

Revelation 3:7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things said he that is holy, he that is true, he that has the key of David, he that opens and no man shuts; and shuts and no man opens.

Revelation 3:12 Him that overcomes will I make a pillar in the temple of my God and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

Now, you see the advantage of diligence, “<sup>12</sup>Him that overcomes will I make a pillar [support] in the temple of my God.” There is no *temple* in New Jerusalem. God and

**Christ, His Son, are *the temple*. The Philadelphians who come into *the kingdom* support that “*temple*” (which is God and Christ). That is why they are likened to pillars. The next step is, “*he shall go no more out* [that is where He will live] *and I will write upon him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God which is new Jerusalem which comes down out of heaven from my God.*”**

So, those in The Philadelphia Elect are going to be supports for *the temple*. They are not only “*the wall*” (leaders), but they are, literally, *the support for the temple*. They have a great responsibility.

## Purpose Of The Wall

Remember, *the purpose of the wall is Salvation. Spiritual growth continues in God's kingdom. That is the point.*

Revelation 3:18 I counsel you to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that you may be rich; and white raiment, that you may be clothed and that the shame of your nakedness do not appear; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that you may see.

The Laodiceans are the ones who say that they, *only*, have *the truth*. Here is what Christ tells them, “<sup>18</sup>*I counsel you to buy of me [what?] gold tried in the fire.*” They will have to go into The Lake of Fire. Anyone who runs around thinking they have all of *the truth*, will burn. This is a major warning to everyone. No one has all of *the truth* of God. Everyone needs to continue to grow. For those claiming to be the ones who have *The Only Truth* of God, Christ says, “*buy of me gold tried in the fire.*”

## Streets Of Gold

The streets of New Jerusalem are made of *gold*. Remember, *gold* can be refined. If you go into *the fire*, your *life* is refined. You come out like *gold – eternal, tried and tested*. “<sup>18</sup>*That you may be rich; and white raiment, that you may be clothed and that the shame of your nakedness do not appear; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that you may see*” (I Corinthians 3).

Now, put this together. New Jerusalem is the most critical area in The New Heaven and New Earth. It is the place where God will dwell. His *elect* will be The Bride who is going to marry His Son, and they are going to be busy *growing spiritually* and giving *Salvation*. Everyone will spend *eternity* discovering the riches in Christ and God. You will see God as He is. *God is a Creator and He will continue to create eternally*. You, too, will create when you are *saved*. This occurs as you continue to grow in the riches of Christ and God. The *righteous* who are *saved* continue to produce *The Fruit of Righteousness*.

Proverbs 11:30 The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that wins souls is wise.

The Tree of Life produces fruit every month. What fruit is it? The answer is, “<sup>30</sup>*The fruit of the righteous [what?] is a tree of life.*” So the fruit that is produced by The Tree of Life is *righteousness*. “*And he that wins souls is wise.*” The Tree of Life is in New Jerusalem. You will then have the Godly creative power of *righteousness*.

I Corinthians 15:50 Now this I say, brethren, that



flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God;  
neither does corruption inherit incorruption.

Only *Spirit beings* can be in God's *kingdom*. So, those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire are changed into *Spirit beings*. They are not required to know *the whole truth*. Those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire are those who refused to repent and follow God in their lifetime.

### Fruits Of Restricted Growth

Christians, who grew to a certain place and then were afraid, too lazy or too satisfied to continue to grow, will have to go into The Lake of Fire. If you say, "*I have all the truth that I need or I like what I am doing now,*" then you will burn (Luke 12:47).

I Corinthians 15:54-56 <sup>54</sup>So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. <sup>55</sup>O death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory? <sup>56</sup>The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.

Since The LORD's hand is not short, what keeps God from saving more people? Sin keeps God from *hearing* your prayers and *saving* you. When these people become ashes, are they resurrected? They will not be resurrected, rather, they will just change into *Spirit*. This is because it says, "*shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.*"

Why is this? It is because there is no more death, “<sup>55</sup>*O death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory?* <sup>56</sup>*The sting of death is sin* [sin was what held God back from saving you. But now, it is gone. This leaves the thought that] *the strength of sin is the law.*” That is very plain and simple. The strength of sin is *The Law*. Also, you could say that *The Law* is the strength of sin. *The Law* is the gauge that tells you how bad or how sinful you are.

This should make you repent and when you do, God's *Spirit* can write His Laws in your heart and mind. At this juncture, no one sins since death no longer exists. *The Law* no longer applies, so sin dies and everyone is *saved*.

Matthew 5:18 For verily I say to you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

*The Law* remains as a way to reveal sin to those who are still unrepentant, “<sup>18</sup>*one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till* [when? *heaven and earth pass*] *all be fulfilled.*” Why does *The Law* stop? If everyone has repented, then there is no need for *The Law*. From this point on, *The Law* is *written in your heart*.

## The Missing Ingredient

There is one thing missing in this paradise – The Garden of Eden. There is no Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. There is no Satan and no more testing. The time of trial is over. God makes *all* things new.

Revelation 19:7 Let us be glad and rejoice and give

honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come and his wife has made herself ready.

Revelation 19:9 And he said to me, Write, Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he said to me, These are the true sayings of God.

*The Fruit of Righteousness is The Tree of Life. “<sup>7</sup>Let us be glad and rejoice and give honour to him [this honor is not to Christ, but to God, The Father] for the marriage of the Lamb is come and his wife has made herself ready.”* This is The Apostle John's letter to The Seven Churches. John was an elderly man when he received this revelation. It was when nearly all *the churches* were following Rome and *the churches* in Greece were following Constantinople.

Here is the message, “<sup>9</sup>*And he said to me, Write, Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he said to me, These are the true sayings of God.*” You will not go into The Lake of Fire. You will live in New Jerusalem.

Revelation 21:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. <sup>3</sup>And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men and he will dwell with them and they shall be his people and God himself shall be with them and be their God. <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes;

and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. <sup>5</sup>And he that sat on the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said to me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. <sup>6</sup>And he said to me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give to him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

Read Revelation 21 carefully because it can get tricky. This statement about *the new heaven* refers to God's *kingdom* and The Abrahamic Covenant. There will be no more oceans. Can you imagine the single landmass? The city will be 1,500 miles in every direction with no oceans. Five-sixths of the earth today is filled with water while only one sixth is land. Now reverse the ratio. There are no oceans. One city is 1,500 miles square. This *new earth* will be huge, “<sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.”

New Jerusalem is The Bride with Jesus as a Groom and her Husband. Then a great voice said, “Behold, the *tabernacle of God is with men and he will dwell with them and they shall be his people and God himself shall be with them and be their God.* <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.” He will be there to straighten everything out. “*There shall be no more death* [why is death gone? It is because there is no Law, no sin and consequently, no death. You now are made of *light and spirit*] *for the former things are passed away.*” The whole universe, according to the laws of physics, no longer exists.

## Living in A New Dimension

*You will be living in a new dimension. It will be in a new age and a new universe. The latest astronomers and scientists say there is a fifth dimension and perhaps a sixth, seventh and eighth dimension! In that light – read, “<sup>5</sup>And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new.”* Things keep getting newer and better as growth continues unabated.

The Lake of Fire will be an ending. The Garden of Eden will be a new beginning. The process of *making all things new* is a new beginning. In *Isaiah*, New Jerusalem is called *Paradise* or *The Garden of Eden*. You will start off in God's *kingdom* where Adam and Eve began. Now, the children who are outside The Garden of God (New Jerusalem) can grow *spiritually*. Alpha and Omega is the beginning and end. Christ *saved* all who were lost from The Garden of Eden (Matthew 18:11). “*I will give to him that is athirst of the fountain of water of life freely.*”

*Spiritual growth* will take place in The New Heaven and New Earth. God's original Sabbath *rest* comes to pass (Hebrews 4:9). God says, “*I make all things new.*” This is God's *rest*. This is The Sabbath *rest* that was lost.

## Back To Genesis

*The new heaven and new earth* is the genesis of when Adam and Eve sinned. This is a new beginning. It begins when Adam and Eve are shown the exit from The Garden (Revelation 22). It was a perfect plan of creation that has not happened. Adam is the husband and the first type of

Christ. Eve, his Bride, could have had their progeny in *Paradise*, as well.

The second Adam was Christ (I Corinthians 15). Under Adam, everybody ended up *dying*. With Christ everyone will end up *living*. What will you do in The Kingdom of God? You are to *create Salvation*. *Spiritual growth* continues *eternally*. Everyone keeps *growing*. *You will help people grow spiritually*. How many people need to *grow spiritually*? There are billions and billions of individuals. Only a few, The Bride and The Guests, are *saved* prior to the masses, who are *saved* later (Matthew 7:13-14).

When you read, "*the fountain of the water of life*," do you wonder who should be *saved*? If there is a *new heaven* and a *new earth*, then who needs a Tree of Life or The Waters of Life? All *Spirit beings* will continue to grow, so they will want and need The Waters of Life. In *Proverbs*, it states that *righteousness* is like The Tree of Life. The only people who will be allowed to eat from The Tree of Life will be those who go into New Jerusalem. Only those who live in New Jerusalem will be permitted to go in through the gates to partake of The Tree of Life. Once Christians become The Bride of Christ, they will rule The Nations of The World. Then, what remains to be done?

## Infinite Growth

You must keep growing in *righteousness*. You must have *agapè* (God's nature). God will also keep growing and creating. There will be infinite growth. God keeps being *All and In All*. God keeps creating and so will you. When God first began implementing His *plan*, nothing else existed

but God. Since then, God has been reproducing Himself. Why is this? It is because that is the most precious gift He can ever give to you! So, if He is reproducing Himself, then He is going to be *All and In All*. God is giving of Himself and keeps growing and expanding.

Deuteronomy 21:15-17 <sup>15</sup>If a man have two wives, one beloved and another hated and they have born him children, both the beloved and the hated; and if the firstborn son be hers that was hated: <sup>16</sup>Then it shall be, when he makes his sons to inherit that which he has, that he may not make the son of the beloved firstborn before the son of the hated, which is indeed the firstborn: <sup>17</sup>But he shall acknowledge the son of the hated for the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that he has: for he is the beginning of his strength; the right of the firstborn is his.

The firstborn son is discussed here. He must be accepted as firstborn – even though he is from the wife who is not loved. Why was it proper for him to have two wives? He did own them. This is Satan's system of marriage. Christ came to *redeem* you from Satan's system. How much are you supposed to give to the firstborn? He receives twice as much as the rest of the family, "*of all that he has: for he is the beginning of his strength.*"

## Right Of The Firstborn

Why is The Word of God so important? Why is Jesus Christ so vital? It is because He is The Firstborn Son of God and the beginning of all His strength, "*the right of the firstborn is his.*" Through Christ, you will inherit all

things. When God reproduces Himself through His Son, He is passing on His strength. Christ, who inherited all things, passes it on to His Bride, His *church*. God is growing. Christ is growing. The Bride is growing. The Guests are growing. Who is left? The ones that remain are the ones who are thrown into The Lake of Fire!

Revelation 21:7 He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God and he shall be my son.

It is very important to have *a right* to The Tree of Life so you can keep growing in *righteousness*. When you overcome, you become God's Son. God keeps reproducing Himself because it is all about family. Is it any wonder that Satan's biggest desire is to get rid of families?

Revelation 21:9-15 <sup>9</sup>And there came to me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will show you the Bride, the Lamb's wife. <sup>10</sup>And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God. <sup>11</sup>Having the glory of God: and her light was like to a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; <sup>12</sup>And had a wall great and high and had twelve gates and at the gates twelve angels and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: <sup>13</sup>On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. <sup>14</sup>And the wall of the city had twelve foundations and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. <sup>15</sup>And he



that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city and the gates thereof and the wall thereof.

A great mountain will be found near this great city. Perhaps, it will be seven mountains (just like in Jerusalem)! *The City is The Lamb's Wife*. Christ said that He would go to prepare a place for you. Everyone will love their homes because Christ will be the architect and decorator, “<sup>11</sup>*Having the glory of God.*” Do you understand what that *glory* is? The entire essence, beauty and power of what God is can be found within the city itself. Movies have been made depicting this city. The Emerald City in ‘*The Wizard Of Oz*’ is one example.

Revelation 21:11 *Having the glory of God: and her light was like to a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone.*

Jasper is a yellow-red color, so The Bride and her garment exudes this light yellow-red aura. Everyone will look different but have the same DNA. There will be a family resemblance with the same *essence*.

You will be composed of *The Glory of God*. However, all of you will have different arrangements from the various illuminating, precious stones.

## God's Jewels

Malachi 3:17 *And they shall be mine, said the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spares his own son that serves him.*

God says He will “<sup>17</sup>*make up my jewels,*” just as you feel your new baby is a precious jewel. In a similiar manner, God sees you as His precious jewel. When *the creation* becomes *righteous* with *glory*, everyone will be beautiful but different. Now, regarding the other elements of the city, “<sup>11</sup>*clear as crystal; <sup>12</sup>And had a wall great and high and had twelve gates and at the gates twelve angels and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.*”

## Through The Gates

The only way you can enter God's *kingdom* is through *the gates* which are called “*praise.*” Israel will now be *praised*. Israel was to be a *witness* so that other nations would see God's *glory*. They almost achieved it in *Solomon's time* but, ultimately, failed. Israel will complete that job in the future. They will be *The Praise of The Kingdom*. Then there is the matter of the orientation of *the gates*, “<sup>13</sup>*On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. <sup>14</sup>And the wall of the city had twelve foundations and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.*” First, Christ is *The Chief Cornerstone*. Next, the foundation is composed of *The Twelve Apostles*. Then, there is *The Wall of Salvation*. Measurement comes next with, “<sup>15</sup>*he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city.*” The *Bride* (the church) is compared to *The Walls of Salvation*. This is *The Mother of Everyone* (Eve).

Revelation 21:18 And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like clear glass.

When Christ is on His *throne*, He looks like jasper. Then, The Bride looks like Christ, her Husband. When some people are married for years and years, they start to look like each other. This is no exception. So, the wall is composed of jasper. When you first see the walls, they all look the same. They are The Bride. *The Bride is Salvation* and her job will be to give *Salvation*.

Galatians 4:22-26 <sup>22</sup>For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a free woman. <sup>23</sup>But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the free woman was by promise. <sup>24</sup>Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which genders to bondage, which is Agar. <sup>25</sup>For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children. <sup>26</sup>But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

This text is about a human attempting to have a child. However, there is a problem, “<sup>23</sup>*of the free woman was by promise* [The Abrahamic Promise]. <sup>24</sup>*Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants.*” The Two Covenants are *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*. This is the written *Law of Moses*.

## Spirit Of The Law

The Spirit of *The Law* is written in your hearts, “*the one from the mount Sinai, which genders to bondage.*” During Israel's time in slavery, whenever they sinned, they had to make offerings. The subject now shifts to Hagar, “<sup>25</sup>*For*

*this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabi, and answers to Jerusalem which now is [Paul's time] and is in bondage with her children."*

The text culminates in the statement, "<sup>26</sup>*But Jerusalem which is above [New Jerusalem] is free, which is the mother of us all.*" Eve was The Mother of all living. New Jerusalem, or that which comes down, is The Church (your Salvation). New Jerusalem is The Mother of *everyone*. In The Kingdom of God, The Marriage takes place. This is The Feast or the so-called Jubilee Year. Then, everyone will be *released!* Those thrown into The Lake of Fire are released from death and sin. There is no more Law. When *The Law* is gone, there is no sin. Everyone will grow because they have *the right heart*. So now, The Husband, The Bride and The Guests have the job of bringing *Salvation* to all the others. Salvation will just be the beginning.

## Life In The Garden

What ended in *The Garden*, will then continue. Everyone in *The Garden* will be dressing it and keeping it as God directs. The children of Cain need to *grow spiritually*. They will have repented in The Lake of Fire but need God's Law to be in their hearts (Revelation 22:14). They are outside of The Garden and Eden. They are in The Land of Nod, just like Cain. The Kingdom of God is in the process of *saving everyone*. It is a new beginning. It is called The New Garden of Eden. It is The New Paradise.

Revelation 21:19-21 <sup>19</sup>And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stone. The first foundation was jasper; the

second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; <sup>20</sup>The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst. <sup>21</sup>And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

The Twelve Apostles are *the foundation*. Each stone has its own qualities. It could be said that “*the wall*” is “*The Church*” and “*the foundation*” is “*The Apostles*.”

## 12 Foundation Colors

The stones each have their own color, “*The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire [blue]; the third, a chalcedony [sky blue like the heavens]; the fourth, an emerald [green]; <sup>20</sup>The fifth, sardonyx [ruby red]; the sixth, sardius [a lighter red]; the seventh, chrysolite [a yellow gold]; the eighth, beryl [ocean green]; the ninth, a topaz [as a light green spring grass]; the tenth, a chrysoprasus [violet]; the eleventh, a jacinth [light red]; the twelfth, an amethyst [purple].*” Each Apostle is part of the foundation and each has its own color. This means that each and every one of you will look different. You will be made of the same substance as God, which is *spirit* and *fire*, and radiates a great *light*. However, each will have separate garments and a distinctive appearance.

Now to, “<sup>21</sup>*And the twelve gates [Israel is the witness.] were twelve pearls.*” (So The Israelites will look distinctly different). Israel is God's eternal witness of praise, “*every*

*several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold [tested], as it were transparent glass”* (Revelation 21:21). Then, *“he showed me a pure river of water of life”* (Revelation 22:1). What is this “river” and why is it called The Water of Life?

**John 7:37-39** <sup>37</sup>In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come to me and drink. <sup>38</sup>He that believes on me, as the scripture has said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. <sup>39</sup>(But this spoke he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified).

**The Eighth Day is the greatest day of all and is called The Jubilee. This is God's rest** (The New Heaven and The New Earth). This is when God sets out to make sure that *He saves everyone*. Each person must be saved in his/her own order. Today, no one can come to The Father except through The Son. This text is about The Water of Life which is God's Holy Spirit going out to all the nations.

**Revelation 21:24** And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

**What is this announcement all about? It concerns *spiritual growth*. Note that *the nations will be saved*. The leaders (kings) of those nations will bring an offering to The Lord.**

**Revelation 22:1-2** <sup>1</sup>And he showed me a pure river

of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. <sup>2</sup>In the midst of the street of it and on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

The message of the pure flowing waters relates to God's *Spirit* coming directly from Him. The Firstborn represents the beginning of *God's strength*. Then, "<sup>2</sup>*In the midst of the street of it and on either side of the river was there the Tree of Life.*" Do you need a Tree of Life if you have *Eternal Life*? The Tree of Life helps you continue to grow in *righteousness* (Revelation 22:14).

So, everyone will keep eating from The Tree of Life. Christ explains that any person who overcomes has a right to eat of The Tree of Life. However, there will be those who cannot eat from this Tree of Life, because they cannot come into the city. They cannot obtain access to The Tree of Life in the city until they *spiritually grow to maturity*.

## Last Great Day

During The Last Great Day, everyone who wants to drink should come to this, "<sup>2</sup>*In the midst of the street of it and on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits.*" The number 12 indicates *divine government*. This passage is about *righteousness for God's government*. A new *Fruit of Righteousness* will be available *each of the twelve months*. The people in the city have a right to go through *the gates* because their names are in *The Book of Life*. They are the ones who eat from

**The Tree of Life.** Now, The River of The Waters is God's Holy Spirit which goes out into all nations. The last few chapters of *Ezekiel* tell you about this great river coming out of Jerusalem. When it first starts, it goes up to your ankles, then your knees, then to your thighs, then to your hips and, pretty soon, it reaches your head. It gets so deep that it covers the whole earth. This passage is about God's *Spirit*.

John 15:1-4 <sup>1</sup>I am the true vine and my Father is the husbandman. <sup>2</sup>Every branch in me that bears not fruit he takes away: and every branch that bears fruit, he purges it, that it may bring forth more fruit. <sup>3</sup>Now you are clean through the word which I have spoken to you. <sup>4</sup>Abide in me and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can you, except you abide in me.

Christ said He was The True Vine. So what is The Tree of Life? It is Christ, who has "*fruit of itself.*" Then, He declares that they must abide in Him. They abide "*In Christ.*" The Bride, The Husband and The Father keep producing fruit.

## Identifying The Tree

Remember, Christ says, "*You shall know a tree by its fruit.*" Good fruit cannot come from a bad tree. Bad fruit only comes from a bad tree. The Tree of Life is Christ. The water coming out of it is God's *Spirit* which renews the whole earth.

Revelation 22:2-6 <sup>2</sup>In the midst of the street of it and



on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. <sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: <sup>4</sup>And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. <sup>5</sup>And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. <sup>6</sup>And he said to me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to show his servants the things which must shortly be done.

The fruit comes forth each and every month. This is important because it shows that time is measured in months. There is a certain continuity from the former world. Then, “*the leaves of the tree were for the healing* [restoring] *of the nations.*” The nations, who are already *saved* (or *repentant*), are restoring those who went through The Lake of Fire. The *leaves* indicate that there is *sprouting* and the green leaves keep growing. These are not old dried leaves. The leaves are a symbol of new growth going to the nations through The River of Waters or God's *Spirit*, “<sup>3</sup>*And there shall be no more curse.*” They cannot be cursed anymore because they have repented. Death has vanquished. The fire did the trick. Now, they must *grow spiritually*.

## New Jerusalem

New Jerusalem is married. She is The Mother of *everyone*. Eve was *The Mother of All*. Now, all nations will be

blessed and multiplied as the sands of the sea and the stars of heaven (Genesis 22, The Abrahamic Covenant). Now, to an exciting time when, *“the Lord God gives them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.”* This is a *Rulership of Salvation* that makes all things better. No one hurts anyone. Everyone performs good acts for everyone else, *“<sup>6</sup>And he said to me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to show to his servants the things which must shortly be done.”* These warnings are given to The Seven Churches.

Revelation 22:7-12 <sup>7</sup>Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keeps the sayings of the prophecy of this book. <sup>8</sup>And I John saw these things and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which showed me these things. <sup>9</sup>Then said he to me, See you do it not: for I am your fellow servant and of your brethren the prophets and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God. <sup>10</sup>And he said to me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand. <sup>11</sup>He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. <sup>12</sup>And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

This is the time of *The Return* of Christ. Do not hide the words of this prophecy but, rather, proclaim them. This is within John's *time frame*. Of course, there will be problems, *“<sup>11</sup>He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still* [Salvation has nothing

to do with The Holy Days. They were just a shadow of things to come. So here is the major statement] *<sup>12</sup>And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.*"

**Everyone concentrates on how to avoid The Lake of Fire. They only want to be *saved*. They do not realize that they need to be like God. You must become an example of Christ because it will determine what you will be doing in *the kingdom*. Salvation is *free*. The Gift of Life is *free* but you have to earn what you will be doing in The Kingdom of God. It will be according to the reward you earned by doing good works in this life (the poor, the widows and orphans). It's all up to you.**

Revelation 22:13-17 <sup>13</sup>I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. <sup>14</sup>Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life and may enter in through the gates into the city. <sup>15</sup>For without are dogs and sorcerers and whoremongers and murderers and idolaters and whosoever loves and makes a lie. <sup>16</sup>I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David and the bright and morning star. <sup>17</sup>And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

## **“Doing” The Commandments**

**How do you *keep His commandments*? You keep them by having His Laws written in your heart! You *do The***

*Commandments* better than those written on stone. This is God's righteousness, not yours. You will not covet anything. You won't even think of coveting anything because it would, literally, be against your nature. You would never think about stealing because you wouldn't want to harm your neighbor. You could not kill because you love your neighbor. Are you keeping *The Commandments*?

What were *the two requirements* that Christ mandated for Eternal Life? Remember what happened when *the rich man* came and said, "What must I do?" Christ said, "keep *the commandments*." The rich man answered that he always kept *The Commandments*. Then he asked, "what do I lack?" Jesus said, "Give your riches to the poor." Sacrifice yourself. The rich man lacked *agàpè love*.

Later, at the home of one of the chief tax collectors, the same question was asked. The tax collector, also, answered that he kept *The Commandments* and gave half of everything he earned to the poor. Christ told him that *Salvation* had come to his house. There are no Holy Days, no taking unleavened bread out of the house, no keeping Christmas, Easter or Halloween. When you keep *The Commandments* of God by nature, you have a *right* to The Tree of Life and you may enter in through *the gates* to the city. How do the people who are thrown into The Lake of Fire get into the city? They are healed by having God's Laws written in their hearts and their minds – just like what a true Christian experiences.

### In Or Out Of The City?

So, they cannot go into the city if they are *left out* or *with-*

*out.* Either way, they are *completely out of the city.* These beings cannot enter the city *until they grow spiritually.* They are still like Cain in the land of wandering (The Land of Nod). It is all about who can go into the city.

So, whether they are *left out of the city or without the city,* the meaning is the same. *They are not in the city.* The passage is about who has and who doesn't have, a right to The Tree of Life, "<sup>15</sup>*For without are dogs and sorcerers and whoremongers and murderers and idolaters and whosoever loves and makes a lie.*" These are the children of Cain (or Satan) who have never repented. Then, there is a shift to the *here and now,* "<sup>16</sup>*I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David and the bright and morning star.*" Notice, Verse 17 jumps ahead and Christ is not mentioned, "<sup>17</sup>*And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst come.* [Christ said to drink freely on The Last Great Day]. *And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.*" In other words, it is a *call* to the people who *repented* in The Lake of Fire. Now they must start at square one and *grow spiritually.*

*The Ten Commandments* must be written in their hearts. The Bride of Christ along with God's Holy Spirit will help these people (with The River of Waters which will bring Salvation). This is what God will have Christians do in His kingdom.

Colossians 2:1-3 <sup>1</sup>For I would that you knew what great conflict I have for you and for them at Laodicea and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh;  
<sup>2</sup>That their hearts might be comforted, being knit

together in love and to all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God and of the Father and of Christ; <sup>3</sup>In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

So, for *eternity*, you will be busy learning more and more about what God has planned for you. Revelation 22 shows the beginning of *The Kingdom*. God is making all things *new*! There may be many more dimensions of the universe. You, along with others in The Kingdom of God will finish what Adam and Eve *never started* (let alone finished). The pieces are all coming together now. At this time, Eve's children must enter Paradise. God's puzzle is solved with the simplest and most *profound gift* anyone can receive. It is *the gift* which God, Himself, planned for you to receive. What unlocks all the doors and opens your heart to The Glory of God? *Love is the key*. Everyone must have *God's love*. The more God reveals His riches to you, the more it will impact everyone. As your love for Him and His love for you *grow*, you will experience a life rich with God's *glory*. Then, eventually, *everyone* in the world will be *saved*. They will grow in *spiritual abundance* and discover *the riches "In Christ."* This is according to God's everlasting love for each and every one of you.

This is the story of The Magnificent Glory of God and His *gift* to you. Love makes the world go round. God's love is the power and the answer to *the puzzle of life*. His power will be pure and *In All* but only when everyone's heart is open to His simple, yet most majestic *gift of love*. This gift is for you to be in The Kingdom of God and have Eternal Life.

# **GOD'S PUZZLE COMPLETED**

**World History**

**Part 2**

**By**

**ART MOKAROW**

***God's Puzzle Completed* is Part 2 of *The God's Puzzle Solved Collection*.**

**These 5 books comprise Vol I and are meant to be read together. This will give you a step-by-step *Bible* study focusing on God's *plan*.**

<b><i>God's Puzzle Solved</i></b>	<b>Part 1</b>
<b><i>God's Puzzle Completed</i></b>	<b>Part 2</b>
<b><i>The Mystery of God</i></b>	<b>Part 3</b>
<b><i>Prophecy Is Cyclical</i></b>	<b>Part 4</b>
<b><i>God's Mystery Fulfilled</i></b>	<b>Part 5</b>

**Written by Art Mokarow**

**Copyright TXu 1-727-282 – *God's Puzzle Completed***

**All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.**



# CONTENTS

<i>Preface</i>	<i>v</i>
<i>Introduction</i>	<i>vii</i>
<b>TRUTH IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>GOD KNOWS YOUR HEART</b>	<b>7</b>
<b>SPIRIT AND FLESH</b>	<b>11</b>
<b>SEEK THE LORD GOD</b>	<b>15</b>
<b>GOD DIVIDES THE NATIONS</b>	<b>21</b>
<b>A WORLD IN WICKEDNESS</b>	<b>27</b>
<b>BABYLON, THE GREAT</b>	<b>33</b>
<b>THE WISE AND UNWISE</b>	<b>39</b>
<b>CONSTANTINE AND THE WORLD</b>	<b>43</b>
<b>THE IMAGE PREVAILS</b>	<b>49</b>
<b>ONLY GOD GIVES KNOWLEDGE</b>	<b>55</b>
<b>IS GOD’S WORD INSPIRED?</b>	<b>59</b>
<b>WHAT IS THE HOLY SPIRIT?</b>	<b>63</b>
<b>GOD’S SCHOOL</b>	<b>67</b>
<b>GOD’S DOCTORATE</b>	<b>73</b>

## PREFACE

My first book, *God's Puzzle Solved* is now in its fifth printing. During the years after its first printing, I have gone on to write 54 more books. As it turns out, four newly written books dovetail, scripturally, with *God's Puzzle Solved*. If possible, read the following books in this order. These five books are part of Vol. I

<i>God's Puzzle Solved</i>	Part I
<i>God's Puzzle Completed</i>	Part II
<i>The Mystery of God</i>	Part III
<i>Prophecy Is Cyclical</i>	Part IV
<i>God's Mystery Fulfilled</i>	Part V

Readers have discovered *The Bible* is written as a mystery. That mystery is called The Mystery of God. Solving this puzzle requires you to study and pray. Only then will you have the opportunity to enter The Kingdom of God. God's Kingdom of Paradise should be your final destination. This added portion, *God's Puzzle Completed*, covers the process and purpose of human existence. Within its pages are answers to help you achieve The Rest of God or The Kingdom of God. This second book (Part II) discloses more pieces of the puzzle. All books are free and no money is accepted. Comments and criticisms are welcomed. We are not a church and are non-denominational.

address: Art Mokarow, P.O. Box 1197, Montgomery, TX 77356

email: [art@mokarow.com](mailto:art@mokarow.com) (Questions and Comments)

websites: [www.God'sPuzzleSolved.com](http://www.God'sPuzzleSolved.com) (Books)

[www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net](http://www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net) (Articles)

## INTRODUCTION

*The Bible* is divided into seven sections and depicts the road to God's *rest*. This journey requires coming out of Babylon. The Mystery of God must be solved by those who intensely desire God's *will*. To comprehend *The Bible*, you must discover all *the clues* or *doctrines*. You need to separate *fact* from *fiction*. *The Bible* is a *non-fiction book*. It is God's predestinated *will* and *desire*. *The Bible* is God's Plan for Salvation.

### An Inspired Book

*The Bible* is *inspired*. You will learn that *certain conditions* must be achieved in order to find the clues with their true meaning. But, there is a hidden secret you must begin to understand. *The Bible* is inspired only for individuals who receive God's Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit gives you *the power* to understand. In time, you will receive *a sound mind* (II Timothy 1:7).

### II Timothy 3:16

*The Scriptures* can make you *wise* (to *Salvation*), "*All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness*" (II Timothy 3:16). You can actually grow into Godly wisdom. God's wisdom gives you *understanding* and will *inspire* you. His Holy Spirit will reveal *the truth* to you so you can follow His path to The Kingdom of God.

Before you begin to think like God, you must grow *spiritually* (God is a spirit) (John 4). You must pray to have God allow you to receive His *mind* and *heart*. You

have been warned. You must *search* for God while He may, still, be found (Isaiah 55:6). God does not force anyone to come to Him but everyone has an invitation. (Read the book, *Is The Bible Inspired*).

## What Is Knowledge?

*The Bible asks, “Whom shall he teach knowledge? And whom shall he make to understand doctrine?”* (Isaiah 28:9). *Knowledge is truth or fact. Doctrine is a teaching and is only a part of the truth or part of a clue. God, alone, knows the truth and what is good or evil (knowledge). Doctrine is “a partial truth” and will lead to a greater reality if you continue to study the scriptures. Doctrines are clues so you can learn the scriptures step-by-step.*

It is similar to learning arithmetic, algebra, geometry, trigonometry and calculus. As you reach each level, you achieve higher mathematical knowledge. It will solve the whole *Mystery of God*. Never forget, *doctrine* is taking one step at a time to, eventually, learn *the whole*. You must remain as little babes while you learn and not become *a know-it-all* along the way (Isaiah 28:9). No person or group has *the complete truth* or *the whole knowledge* of God. The only ones who have complete understanding is God, The Father and Christ. As babes, you must want to be taught so you can grasp God’s *mind* and *thoughts*. Then, as you gain *knowledge*, you will become like God in His image (Genesis 1:26).

## Rightly Dividing Truth

Paul told Timothy, “*Wherefore I put you in remem-*

*brance that you stir up the gift of God, which is in you by the putting on of my hands” (II Timothy 1:6). What gift? “And the angel answered and said to her [Mary] The Holy Ghost [Spirit] shall come upon you and the power of the Highest shall over-shadow you: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God” (Luke 1:35).*

Christ received The Holy Spirit at birth. It was a gift from God. Paul told Timothy that God’s Holy Spirit needed to be *stirred* up so Timothy could continue *growing* in Him. It, also, needs to be stirred in each Christian. If not, you will stop growing. You don’t want to lose God’s *Holy powers*. That is *The Parable of The Ten Virgins* (Matthew 25:1-13).

Paul told Timothy, “*Study to show yourself approved to God, a workman [laboring] that needs not be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth [knowledge]” (II Timothy 2:15). Timothy, The Evangelist, did not understand or have all of God’s truth. He had to grow in God’s Holy Spirit to, rightly, divide The Word of God.*

## Two Way Street

Paul teaches that Christians know *in part* (I Corinthians 13:9-12). Prophecy can only be known *in part*. Beware and do not make the mistake of attempting to know too much, too soon. You are to be “*Babes – In Christ*” as you study *doctrine*. No group, church or denomination has *the whole truth*. The Apostle warns that only when you are *perfect*, will you know *the whole picture*. Don’t let God’s *truth* and *knowledge* go to your head. Don’t be *another Job*. You have two choices. You must stay humble *as babes* to keep learning and growing.

Otherwise, you will become *dogmatic* (insistent) and stop growing *spiritually*. *Doctrines* and *teachings* are only part of *the truth*. *Doctrine* does not give *the entire picture*. Even *The Prophets* did not completely understand what they were preaching. Peter, The Apostle wrote, “*Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come to you: Searching what or what manner of time The Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow*” (I Peter 1:10-11). The Prophets of God, themselves, did not know everything. They only knew what God intended to reveal.

Spiritual growth is an individual matter. It is revealed to you by God. God knows your heart. “*When I was a child [babe], I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, but when I became a man, [Christ] I put away childish things*” (I Corinthians 13:11). Paul concludes by describing a Christian looking into a smoky mirror. There are dark shadows fogging the mirror so no one can see everything clearly. You will never know everything, but you will learn little by little, like fitting each piece into *a puzzle*.

However, you must be careful and not begin to guess. Guessing may lead you to many *wrong conclusions*. When you become perfect (complete), you will begin to comprehend *the truth*. Until then, you must remain *teachable* with great *humility*. You must always be eager to learn. You have two choices: 1) be *ego driven* or 2) *allow* God, through His Holy Spirit, *to teach you*. God is your Master Teacher and Rabbi through Christ.

## Divisional Thinking

The Corinthian Church is described as *carnal* or “*Babes – In Christ*” (I Corinthians 3:1-2). Why? They caused divisions in the church by choosing *a minister they agreed with or preferred*. Every denomination is *one body* and should *never* disagree with one another. God will correct every preacher in Christ’s body. Through fire, *the truth* will be revealed. Your *only creed* should be “*Christ – In You*” and it should be *your foundation* so you can continue to grow. It is The Temple of God. It is The Church of God. You are not to be divided, arguing or always debating. Instead, you should be respectful of each other. Then, God will continue to teach you.

## CHAPTER 1

### TRUTH IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS

Christians sin, “*All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not to death*” (I John 5:17). Having no *unrighteousness* is to be *perfect* like God. Notice, there are *sins* which do not produce death. This seems contradictory. What did Paul mean?

#### What Is Sin?

In Hebrew and Greek, “*sin*” basically means “*to miss the mark.*” When you *sin*, you do not hit *the target of life*. You will miss *the goal* of Eternal Life in Paradise. There are many ways to *sin*. Sinning comes easy when you do not strive to be *Holy* and *perfect* like Jesus and God.

If you *transgress The Law*, you have sinned by *missing the mark* (to enter God’s property) (I John 3:4). Also, whatsoever is *not of faith* is *sin*. These are different types of sinning. One is breaking God’s *legal law*. The other is *a lack of trust* in God. Abraham kept both of God’s demands (Genesis 26:5). He obeyed God’s *voice by faith* and kept God’s *commandments, statutes* and *The Torah* (the way to life – The Tree of Life).

*The Torah* is not *The Law of God* which was added four hundred and thirty years after Abraham. *The*



*Law of Moses* was added for The Twelve Tribes of Israel (Deuteronomy 5:3). It was added because they kept *sinning*.

*The Torah*, before *The Added Law*, was a way of life based upon *faith* (Abraham had this type of faith). (Read *The Book of Deuteronomy*). Before Moses and *The Old Covenant*, Israel was to keep *The Commandments* and *statutes* by *faith*. *The Torah* had many *covenants*. *The Torah* was *The Way to Life Eternal* for them.

Sin has a broad biblical definition. God reveals *sin* in many diverse ways according to the different purposes. In the beginning, Adam and Eve sinned by making a *wrong choice* between the two trees. By eating from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil, they *sinned* and missed the mark. If only they had eaten from The Tree of Life. The Tree of Life was *the right path to Salvation* in order to receive *The Gift of Eternity*. That is *The Torah*, the first five books of *The Bible*.

### Satan's New Sin

Satan asked Eve if she could eat from every tree of The Garden. Eve answered saying she couldn't eat from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil because she would die (Genesis 3). Satan didn't deny what she said but questioned *what God had told them*. He did not reply to her concern about The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. He told her about his question of eating from *all the trees* in The Garden. He told her that God knew she would become like God to

know good and evil when she ate of The Trees in The Garden, including The Tree of Life. What a con! He deceived her. Satan told her *the truth*, but he told it in *an untruthful way*. That was a sin. *It missed the mark of Eternal Life*. Satan gets the world to *sin* by disguising the truth in *an unrighteous way*. When Jesus was tested in the wilderness for forty days, Satan used the same method. Satan told Jesus to jump down from The Temple because the angels would protect Him. This statement was right out of *The Bible* (Psalm 91). Satan used *exact scripture* to try to trick Jesus. Satan took *the truth* and twisted it in *an unrighteous way*. Satan continues to commit *sin* by missing *the mark*.

Jesus replied, “*You shall not tempt the Lord your God*” (Matthew 4:7). That is why Christ said, “*everyone is to eat or digest every Word of God*” (Matthew 4:4) (Paraphrased). *Doctrinal truth*, when misapplied, leads to sin because it does not allow you to seek *The Path to Salvation*. You are about to see how The Devil deceives *the whole world* by using *the truth unrighteously*. It is called Satan’s Babylonian Mystery.

### Sin And The Tower Of Babel

After the flood, mankind congregated in one place and it was named Babylon, The Tower of Babel. Paul explained he was a debtor to *the wise* and *the unwise*. The Greeks were considered wise while The Barbarians were considered the unwise (Romans 1:14). The Greeks were educated. The Barbarians were *uneducated* (the pagans). They were *the country dwellers* and lived in the wilderness.

The Greeks, being wise, knew *the truth* but there was *a problem*. The Greeks misunderstood or were misinformed. “*Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools*” (Romans 1:22). Here is Paul’s answer, “*For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness*” (Romans 1:18).

This is *the method of deception* Satan used from the beginning in The Garden of Eden up to the time of Christ. *Satan always applies The Truth of God in a manner that deceives others*. By so doing, sin is not far away. It is *the way human reasoning works*. Man, on his own, can’t figure out what is *good* or *evil*. Too often, mankind attempts to understand through their human imagination. In other words, they only make a guess.

Through the human experience of *trial and error*, they come to *a hypothesis, a theory* and, finally, *a conclusion*. Science is the mathematical probability uncovered by the testing of conclusions. Mankind is *forever learning* and never *seeing the truth*. They take *the truth* and *hold it in unrighteousness*. It is *sin* and is *missing the mark to Life Eternal*.

That is why God divided the nations when He changed their language at The Tower of Babel. Now, *the possibilities for truth* are multiplied and some could turn to God for the answers regarding *good* and *evil*. God purposely divided them to see who would *seek* Him and His *ways*. However, too many chose their own ways. God knew they could come up with whatever

they *imagined*. In time, *nothing* would be *restrained* from them (Genesis 11:6-7). What sin did they commit at The Tower of Babel? They “*changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man and to birds and four-footed beasts and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie and worshipped and served the creature more than The Creator, who is blessed for ever. A-men*” (Romans 1:23-25). At The Tower of Babel, they knew the truth but applied it in an *unrighteous way*. The word “*doctrine*” is defined in Hebrew and Greek as “*a teaching*.” You may know *the truth of a teaching* but hold it in *unrighteousness*. You could be using it differently than what God intended. It is *the sin of missing the mark* to Life Eternal.

*God’s Puzzle Completed* demands you live by *every Word* of God. You are not to live by *any part of a doctrine*. It can lead you into *unrighteousness*.

## CHAPTER 2

# GOD KNOWS YOUR HEART

Why is the condition of your heart so important to God? He is The One who knows what makes you tick. After all, He created you and you are to become like Him. What do you lack?

### Lower Than Angels

God created you a little lower than the angels (Psalm 8). Angels are made entirely of *spirit*. Mankind is flesh. You were given *life* when God breathed “*The Spirit of Life – In You.*” The only similarity is that both angels and humans possess God’s *living spirit*. The human body is what differs. Angels are clothed in varying degrees of God’s *glory*. They have a *rank of righteousness* given to them from The Seraphim, who sit by The Throne of God as angelic messengers (Hebrews 1:14).

Humans have temporary bodies. It changes from a babe’s body to an adolescent, to a young adult and, finally, an elderly person who wears out and dies. Your bodies are like *garments* which can be changed. Clothes wear out and are discarded. The clothes become useless. Angels, being spirit, change their clothes through their *glory* just like God. They have a *radiance* like *the stars*. They can change their gar-

ments whenever they choose according to their *righteousness*. They also have the same *free choice* that humans have. God, *a spirit being*, is *clothed in glory* forever. God is composed in *eternal goodness*. God's desires are always for *the good* of His creation (Exodus 33 and I John 4:8). There is *no darkness* (unknowing) in God (I John 1:5). God is *light* and sees and knows *all things*. He is never confused about what is *right* or *wrong*. God has *all wisdom*. God's *loving desire* was to *predestine you* to be *Sons of God*. What do you lack? *You have the wrong clothes*. You lack God's *glory and goodness*.

### Human Weakness

Humans exist and have *life* but only *temporarily*. That is the difference between angels and mankind. Knowing you have temporary life, you *struggle to survive* at all costs. All physical creation struggles to survive. You are just like the animals. What animal do you emulate? Are you *a lion* who devours to *survive* or *a lamb* who is gentle and willing to be slaughtered? *The flesh is not eternal*. Your *mind* and *thoughts* are what make you *alive*. As Descartes said, "*I think therefore I am*." *Life is in a person's conscience*. When you die, your *spirit* goes back to God who gave it to you. Then, you must be put *on hold* and wait for the resurrection (Ecclesiastics 12:7).

### Idolatry

The enemy is not your *flesh* (being temporary), it is your *spirit, thoughts* and *mind*. God's *mind* and *thoughts* are

perfect. He is *goodness* motivated by *love* and *wisdom*. You need to be like God, who is *perfect*. You need to become a Son of God (Isaiah 55:6-12). First and foremost, you must desire *eternity*. Your *spirit* and your *mind* have *life*. In order to exist, you need “*to live*” or “*to be*.” “*Not to be*” is *death* or *nothingness*. *Life is sought* as long as it has *purpose* and *ability*.

To exist in solitary confinement would drive you insane. You, as a human, demand *productivity* or *profitability* so you can know *paradise* and *eternal joy*. The question concerns *your heart in this temporary flesh*. What is your heart? “*Through desire a man, having separated himself, seeks and intermeddles with all wisdom. A fool has no delight in understanding, but that his heart may discover itself*” (Proverbs 18:1-2). That is being *self-right* rather than learning right – *the truth from the word*.

The real enemy is you, yourself. It is exactly what Job’s problem was. He was *self-righteous*. Self-righteousness is insisting upon being *right*. *The Spirit of Life within you* is always desiring to be *right*. You *desperately* want to be *right*. It is your *desire* above all else. (Read the book, *What Is Idolatry*). You must discover what *is right*.

Your *life* comes from your blood pulsating within your veins. *The heart* pumps your *blood* throughout your *flesh* and *gives life to every cell*. Without a *heart*, you *die*. It is in opposition to your struggle to survive. Your heart indicates what your desires are. *What must you have and what is most important to you?* Whatever

you *desire* in your *life* is your *idol*. It can be a short-term desire or it can be a lifetime idol. Your *heart's desire* can be your *enemy*. Satan looks for any avenue to trick you. What you deeply desire is your real human enemy (a false god). When anything in *this life* becomes first and foremost, it may become a *god* to you. Wanting always to be *right* may become an *idol*. Your *false gods* do nothing. You can dream *dreams*, but only God can give you Eternal Life.

Your *false desires* hinder your ability to have *wisdom*. Godly *wisdom* comes from having God's *mind* and *heart*. Only then, will you receive *The Gift of Life* (Salvation). Your heart's desire is all you can think of. But always remember, God knows your *heart*. You must *love God first* and *foremost*.



## CHAPTER 3

### SPIRIT AND FLESH

How did those at The Tower of Babel in Shinar begin to change *the truth into unrighteousness*? They worshipped *the creation* and ignored The Creator (Romans 1:25). That's how! God created everything, but humans turned almost everything into idols. Mankind always wants to see or feel the idols they worship.

#### Christ's Answer

Nicodemus asked Jesus, “*Can a man be born in a woman's womb a second time?*” (Paraphrased). Jesus replied, “*Verily, verily, I say to you, Except a man, be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God*” (John 3:5). To be a Son of God, you have to be *baptized in water*. Then, you will receive God's Holy Spirit. There is *no other way* to become a Son of God. Baptism by *water* is your *contract* with *God*. By your *free choice*, you want *God* to make you like Him. He gives you His Holy Spirit to do so, like Christ (Luke 1:35).

Those in The Land of Shinar knew *the truth* about Adam and Eve being in God's Garden (God's House of Rest). Because of their human imaginations, everyone in The Garden was considered Holy. Jesus told Nico-

demus plainly, “*That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit*” (John 3:6). Humans are not *divine* and cannot be considered a *god*. Only those who are *entirely spirit* are Holy. Only when you are Holy, can you be a Son of God. No human can make anyone a god. In Shinar, they held The Truth of God *unrighteously*. You are to *worship* God, The Father only. *The angels are not gods*. Angels are just a little higher than man. Angels do not inherently have *life* within them. They were given *life* when they were created, but they are not gods. Only God, Almighty can make you Holy and make you a Son of God. Only The Father can build all things (Hebrews 3:4). Jesus said, “*the spirit is like the wind*.” It is invisible to the human eye. Some winds are *mild*, while others are more intense, much like *a tornado*. *The wind* can be felt but not seen. *Spirit* cannot be seen.

Ironically, the word in Greek for “*wind*” is “*pneuma*.” The meaning for “*pneuma*” is the same for “*spirit*.” They both have the same meaning. Christ was only trying to make a comparison for Nicodemus. By comparing the physical to the spiritual, humans can perceive the difference (John 3:10-13). Jesus said, “*And no man has ascended up to heaven*” or can tell the difference between *the physical creation* and *the spiritual realm*. Humans *guess* by comparing what they *observe* to the things they do not understand. The height of *human guessing* is *Science*, which is based upon *guesses* called *hypothesis* and *mathematical probability*. Through the repetition of their experiments, they rely on their *theories*. Mankind comes to its form of *truth*. That is why God told Adam and Eve not to eat

from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. After all of their experiments, they were incapable of adding one day to their lives. Science can only begin to discover what God has already done.

*The Bible* uses *symbols* for physical things, like trees, humans, water and animals. They, also, represent *the spiritual realm*. It is a baptism similiar to the plants that lose their flowers and re-bloom the following year. Baptism is *a type of death* followed by *a resurrection to life*. That is why God cannot commit *murder*. In *the final resurrection*, everyone is made alive. God can kill, but He is The Only One who can resurrect. Humans, who commit *murder*, cannot bring anyone back *to life*. Life is a *gift* given by God.

At The Tower of Babel, they began to worship *the creation* instead of God. Solomon said, “*there is no new [physical] thing under the sun*” (Ecclesiastes 1:9). As a human civilization, the world has been in *Babylon* since the beginning of time. Jesus said, “*Come out of her [Babylon], my people*” (Revelation 18:4). Everyone seems to worship physical things all their lives. Their interests revolve around houses, power, money, businesses, sports, entertainment and, even, themselves. Hating *oneself* is, also, *idolatry*. Hating yourself means everything revolves around you and it is still a form of worshipping *oneself*. Job had great losses and was in *horrible pain*. He never thought he deserved to be punished as he was. His entire *focus* was on *himself*. He wouldn't listen to his friends. And, he didn't want to listen to God. However, he always obeyed God. He was *self-righteous* and, therefore, became his *own idol*.

This is the reason humans choose *faith* by *their free choice*. God gives them a chance to choose to be a Son of God. The Great Puzzle of God is *a mystery*. To crack any mystery, you must look at all the clues. To crack The Mystery of God, you must learn all *the symbolic terms* God uses. It is the only way you can compare *physical things* to *spiritual things*. This is the only way you can come to a factual conclusion. Every *profession* has *a discipline* and has its own *language* to *comprehend the facts*.

### God's Holy Spirit

Once you receive God's Holy Spirit, you will know *The Truth* of The Creation. It will reveal its purpose and meaning. Human flesh cannot ever become Holy. Dead flesh cannot be Holy, either. Jesus was *Holy* because God gave Him The Holy Spirit at birth (Luke 1:35). At *death*, His body wasn't corruptible because He had no sin. It is the same with you. In your *fleshly bodies*, you are not *Holy* so you certainly *cannot be worshipped*. No one is to be worshipped as *a saint*. No animal representing some leader is to be worshipped, either. This is *the big error*. Do not sin by worshipping *the creation* instead of God. Worshipping anyone or anything is holding *the truth in unrighteousness*. When you receive God's Holy Spirit, that *Spirit* is *Holy*. *The Holy Spirit* puts you in another category (not anything in you). Until you are *glorified*, you are still human. Never *worship* anything that God *created*.

## CHAPTER 4

### SEEK THE LORD GOD

The Gospel is The Good News of God's Kingdom. It is *a journey* that everyone must take. You must learn God's *will* and *predestined purpose* for you. This human life was designed for you to reach *the goal of immortality*. Salvation has been sought by many since The Garden of Eden. Explorers looked for The Fountain of Youth (the essence of healing waters).

#### The Hidden God

Christ said, “*And the Father himself, which has sent me, has borne witness of me. You have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape*” (John 5:37). You cannot see God because, if you did, you would burn up. Most *obey Him out of fear* (Israel did). If you didn't have fear, what would make you *trust* and *follow* Him?

God wants you to trust Him and have complete *faith* in Him. You must *choose* to *follow* Him. Then, you will be able to accomplish what you have *willed* yourself to do. One day, you will be *a Son of God*. The entire purpose is for you *to seek* and *want God* because of *your love* for Him. Obeying Him out of fear is not acceptable to God. That is why *perfect love* casts out

*fear* (I John 4:18). You do not want to die so, first, you need to *fear God*.

You are merely *pilgrims* on this earth. In time, you will learn to *love Him* as He loves you. God has a *great love* for you (I John 4:8). Until you love God, you cannot know Him. (Read the book, *God's Loving Story*).

### The Lost Talent

Israel began to obey God out of *fear* (Exodus 20). “*The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom*” (Proverbs 9:10). When God sees you begin to obey Him out of *fear*, He starts to give you *the understanding* to grow. But, as “*Babes – In Christ*,” you are still *carnal* (human beasts). However, as you grow “*In Christ*,” you experience *substantive faith*. It is a *gift* from God to *love Him* as He *loves* you. Your fear of God will disappear when you learn to *love Him*. As you begin to *know Him*, you will *learn to love Him*. How wonderful your Father is. That is your ultimate *human purpose* on earth. God will be “*All In All*” through His *love* for you (I Corinthians 15:28).

God gives *many spiritual blessings* to those who seek Him (Ephesians 1). These are *all loving gifts* from God. Have you ever spurned a gift from a friend, a spouse or family member? When you do, *the gift-giver* feels deep sorrow or hurt. God feels the same way. The only difference is God never stops *loving you* and continues to show you His love (Ephesians 1:1-5). You still have time to turn to Him. If you want to find Him, He can be found. God's *love* never fails! So, what *fails*?

***Prophecies fail. Speaking in tongues shall cease and knowledge (doctrine) shall vanish. Doctrinal teachings of the truth will disappear. Signs, like speaking in other languages, will cease as prophecies reach their completion. God's agapé love is an unending love that lasts forever. The Keeping of The Commandments and The Law of Moses (a doctrinal teaching) will no longer be necessary. God's love supersedes all of God's loving gifts. That is why love fulfills The Law. With God's love, His gifts will comprise what you become. You, literally, become what God is, which is love.***

### **Parable Of The Talents**

**If you *bury* the one talent you were given and *grow* no further, you will lose *the one talent* God gave you (Matthew 25). It will be given to another who keeps *growing spiritually*. Being *dogmatic* over *one gift* from God and not increasing your *other talents* will stop your growth. To become a Son of God, you must increase your talents. God is your *Master Rabbi* and *teacher*. He is more. He is your greatest teacher and He is The God who made you.**

**No *human preacher* knows your heart. Only God and Christ know what you lack. You must look to Christ. God will teach you. Your lessons are given to you, personally, through The Word of God, which is your textbook (Matthew 23:10). No *human scribes* or *Rabbis* matter in this discourse. It is God's Work. His Holy Spirit teaches you *Truth* and what human life is all about. Beware when *the preacher* is *guilty* of believing in a certain doctrine or talent.**



When *doctrines* increase, they become more meaningful (dogmatism) (Matthew 23:2-3). Any talent you receive from God should encourage your spiritual growth to *new levels* of understanding. *The Magnified Law*, being more *honorable*, will make you acceptable to God. Strive to have God's love. *Love is the prize gift* from God!

### The Cardinal Talent

*“Seek you the LORD while he may be found”* (Isaiah 55:6). God has written a Great Love Story. It is called *The Bible*. Always remember, God's *mind* is far superior to man's mind. The Word of God, *The Bible*, is God's *Love Story*. God's *will* is for you *to think* like Him (Isaiah 55). So, He has written almost everything you need to know in His *Love Story*. God wants to duplicate His mind in your mind. In order to know who God is, you must become The Word of God. *The Bible is a love story* which reveals *The One True God*. It reveals God's *will, plan* and *purpose*.

The Gospel of The Kingdom of God was known from the beginning (I Peter 1). Today, the world has imitated The Babylonian *Image* (Romans 1:25). All religions, governments, commerce, ideologies and the educational systems are duplications of *Babylon* (Genesis 11:6).

Archeologists have unearthed *tablets* giving *The History of The Babylonian Mystery*. Whether you know it or not, you are living in a form of *Babylon*. Jesus said, *“Come out of her, my people* [God's people are Israel



and The Churches of God]” (Revelation 18:4). **The only safe avenue is to seek God** (Hebrews 3).

**You should depend on God alone. To receive *The Gift of Salvation*, you have to *seek Him* through *Christ* (Hebrews 1:1-3). By becoming like Christ, you become *like God*. You must have “*The Love of God – In You.*” It will make you *One with Christ*.**

## CHAPTER 5

### GOD DIVIDES THE NATIONS

Babylon was caused by mankind's human nature. It keeps everyone *divided* instead of being *united* as One Body (Genesis 11:6). Everyone has *free choice* to decide *good* and *evil*. It is up to you, individually, to seek God. Why did mankind go astray?

#### The Great Sea

God selected the earth as the location for His Holy House so mankind could have *a genuine Paradise*. God is ready to carry out His predestinated plan. He created a piece of property called Eden. God planted a House of Rest in The Garden. It was a wondrous, gorgeous piece of developed land.

Outside of Eden was *the wilderness* for the development of future generations. It was filled with wild plants and many beasts. It was a "*no man's land*." This new planet, called *earth*, had to be *cleansed* with *spirit* and *fire* (Revelation 20:15). During *this new birth*, *the earth* was *baptized* and *made clean*. It is similar to when *a new babe* is washed. This is the baptism of the whole earth (Genesis 1:1-2). In six days, God completed His work and everything was *very good* (Genesis 1:31). It was *perfect* and without *sin*. God rested on The Seventh Day and made it Holy as *a sign* of His *rest*

(Genesis 2:3). God's two children were physically mature but had no experience in living their lives. They were very *innocent*. They didn't realize they were *naked* (Genesis 3:11). Since Eve came out of Adam, they were *joined together as one flesh* until death. They were husband and wife.

Being just born and inexperienced, they had to be taught the facts of life. Since they were to be *homeschooled* in God's garden, they started in kindergarten. God began teaching them as any parent would do. They were told they could eat from any tree in The Garden. One tree (The Tree of Life) was so nutritious it could give *immortality* (eternal life). The other tree (The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil) would, eventually, produce *death*. This lesson was very simple. *God believes any teaching must be simple to understand.*

Eve chose the fruit from the wrong tree. Satan deceived her. Adam followed her advice because he loved her (but he wasn't deceived). They were not allowed to stay in The Garden. Neither one had *the spiritual or physical experience* to survive on their own. God placed Adam over Eve because, when she believed Satan, she needed to be protected. Adam was not deceived. Adam became her *Master* (a Baal or Lord).

God allowed them to stay and live on His protected property. Traveling farther into *the wilderness* would not be safe. Now, they had to do all *the work* themselves to survive. Making an existence would be difficult. Adam was responsible for both of them. They

were no longer equal like they were when Eve came out of Adam's side. When God made Adam *a help-mate*, it meant they were *equal*. This was the definition in Hebrew. She came from Adam's body. They were to be *totally equal*. They were of the same *flesh*. Their D.N.A. was exactly alike.

“*Isha*” in Hebrew connotes “*a womb-man*” (woman). She was now separate from *the man*. She had the ability to *think differently* and have a different opinion. They both had to leave The Garden to learn through *the hard knocks of experience*. They were no longer *taught* by God. They were to earn their Bachelor's Degree on their own. Eve was *The Mother of All Living* (all mankind) (Genesis 3:20). Future generations would know Eve as *The Queen of Heaven*. She was the queen bee.

As Cain and Abel grew into manhood, they left home to begin their lives as adults. Cain became a farmer and Abel became a sheep-herder. Adam and Eve's other children settled in the wilderness as pioneers on their own. It was extremely harsh, difficult and dangerous. They settled in The Land of Shinar, west of Eden. After the flood, The City Shinar or The Land of Shinar became home to the future nations. When Cain killed Abel, God exiled him to Shinar with Adam and Eve's other children. Cain and everyone else coming from Eden were thought to be *part human* and *part divine* since they were still Sons of God. Archaeological history proves it.

These Sons of God are listed in Genesis 5 from Seth

to Noah. Eventually, those who didn't follow God became interested in the daughters of the families who left God. The sons were considered to be *divine*. Eventually, *the daughters of men in Shinar* married the sons of The Sons of God. A division developed between those who followed God and those who didn't. Remember, when you turn a single page in *The Bible*, as many as 500 years may have transpired. One generation could be a 20-year period or a 40-year period. The men in Shinar thought those who followed God were *divine*. They regarded them as *human gods*. As time progressed, the world became *a violent and wicked* place. Genocide of the human race was imminent. God had a change of mind. Mankind became so violent they needed a new beginning (Genesis 6:12-13). God was planning to *rebaptize* the world. A new start began with Noah, a preacher of God's *righteousness* (II Peter 2:5).

After the flood, Noah came down from the mountain where The Ark rested in Mesopotamia. Noah's sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth, had many children. Noah's children and their wives began migrating back to The Land of Shinar (near The Persian Gulf). As the generations multiplied, they built *a tower* to heaven to be as close to God as possible and reach His *house*. Noah taught his children about The Garden of Eden and its history. But, after several generations, there were those who followed paths of *righteousness* and those who floundered (they did not follow God).

The Tower of Babel was a stairway to God's *house*. They all spoke one language. Many understood immor-

**tality and knew about The Tree of Life. Cain spent his remaining existence seeking *immortality*. He became a vagabond and fugitive from his huge family in Shinar (Genesis 4-13). However, he never stopped searching for Eternal Life. Cain wanted to find Eternal Life in his own way and at his own pace. (A story about Cain can be read in the book, *The Epic of Gilgamesh*). Those living at The Tower of Babel were, historically, known as *Sumerians* (black-headed people). They were ruled by Nimrod, The First Emperor of The Known World. This was the beginning of Babylon. This was *The First Head of The Beast* in *The Book of Revelation*. This was The Birth of The Great Babylon.**

## CHAPTER 6

### A WORLD IN WICKEDNESS

Four *great beasts* came out of the sea after *the flood* (Daniel 7:3). The first was Babylon, the second was Media-Persia, the third was Graco-Macedonia and Rome was the fourth beast. Rome ended up being worse than the previous three. The Messiah came during *The Time of The Fourth Beast* (Rome) as was prophesied (Daniel 2).

#### Original Babylon

Babylon began at The Time of The Tower of Babel (Shinar). Something occurred at the genesis of *this Babylon* that affected the entire world *prophetically*. “*Prophecy*” is “*history in advance*.” Does God foresee what happens or does He make it happen? The answer is neither. If He had His *mind* made up, why did He give everyone *free choice*? He could have made everyone perfect from the beginning. God is *The Only One* who understands what He is doing. No one but God knows His *exact plan* and *purpose*. *The Book of Job* explains *what it’s all about* and *why you were born*. “*But there is a spirit* [life energy] *in man: and the inspiration of the Almighty gives them understanding*” (Job 32:8). God has given you *life through His spirit* (God’s breath). Why was this spirit given to mankind? You can only reach your full potential with God’s help.

Mankind, from birth, understands nothing but their existence. That is why Adam and Eve *sinned* by eating from *the wrong tree*. Mankind will never understand why they were born. They will never know God's purpose. God is *The Only One* who can give you *understanding*. The answer to *life* is simple, "*The spirit of God has made me and the breath of the Almighty has given me life*" (Job 33:4). How clear! Everything comes from God. Now comes the answer, "*But none says, Where is God my maker, who gives songs in the night [joy]. Who teaches us more than the beasts of the earth and makes us wiser than the fowls of heaven?*" (Job 35:10-11).

First and foremost, when you are born, you know nothing. As you grow, you have *free choice* to *seek* God. He is *The Only One* who can give you *wisdom*. He is your true teacher. But, it is still your choice. Mankind, left to themselves, cannot know *good* and *evil*. You, eventually, learn through what you experience during your lifetime. Billions of people throughout history have come up with billions of *ideas about what is right or wrong*. *Science is the epitome of human capabilities*. Only after a multitude of experiences does *Science* discover some *truths*. At best, the world has become a *mixture of good and evil*. God is the only one who can bring you *to perfection*. But, you must do your part to seek Him. *Your free choice* allows you to choose God or Satan.

## Babylon – The Conclusion

At The Tower of Babel, God *divided the nations* by lan-



guages and inheritance. He did this so mankind could increase their chances to seek Him. At this time, The Beast of Daniel was *wounded* (Revelation 13:3).

The world was at a loss when it came to understanding why God divided the world into so many different areas and denominations. In Hebrew, the word “*Babel*” means “*gateway to God.*” If God had not divided the nations, they would have annihilated each other (Genesis 11:6-7). This almost happened in Noah’s time. Evil and wickedness prevailed over the entire area. So, the land mass was divided and specific areas were assigned to different groups of people. God also gave each group a language of their own (Genesis 11-6-7).

God said, “*Give ear [listen], O you heavens and I will speak; and hear, O earth, the words of my mouth*” (Deuteronomy 32:1). God wants to tell you, “*When the Most High divided to the nations [The Tower of Babel] their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel. For the LORD’s portion is his people; Jacob is the lot [property] of His inheritance*” (Deuteronomy 32:8-9). Wow! God divided the nations – Christians, Jews, Muslims and Pagans. They could decide to either follow God or follow their version of The Word of God.

Abraham followed God. So, God gave him *The Promise of Paradise and Salvation*. The promises could only come through Abraham. Israel, who were The Children of Abraham, sought God but sought Him out of fear. They did so after hundreds of years in *slav-*

*ery. But, they still corrupted themselves as Isaiah and Malachi prophesied. They didn't seek God (Hebrews 3:8-11). For this reason, they could not enter God's property and rest. God knows your nature and your lack of wisdom and understanding. Without God as your teacher, your outcome is self-fulfilling. It is not agapé love. That is prophecy. Prophecy is conditional. God is longsuffering and waiting for mankind to get sick and tired of their evil ways and come to repentance (II Peter 3:9 and 15).*

### **World Prophecy**

*Zechariah described the outcome of the world when God divided the nations in The Land of Shinar. You must envision a flying scroll much like reading a book. This scroll covers the entire earth with its prophetic conditions, "Then said he to me, This is the curse that goes forth over the face of the whole earth: for every one that steals shall be cut off as on this side according to it; and every one that swears shall be cut off as on that side according to it. I will bring it forth, said the LORD of hosts [all] and it shall enter into the house of the thief and into the house of him that swears falsely by my name [false preachers]: and it [curses] shall remain in the midst of his house and shall consume it with the timber thereof and the stones thereof" (Zechariah 5:3-4). This is the prophecy of a cursed world.*

### **Origin Of The Curse**

*When and where did this world curse begin? How bad did it get? An angel showed Zechariah an ephah. An*

*ephah is a huge weight. “And I said, What is it? And he said, This is an ephah that goes forth. He said moreover, This is their resemblance through all the earth. And, behold, there was lifted up a talent of lead: and this is a woman [Eve] that sits in the middle of the ephah. And he said, This is wickedness. And he cast it into the middle of the ephah [weighty curse]; and he cast the weight of lead upon the mouth thereof. Then lifted I up mine eyes and looked, and, behold, there came out two women and the wind was in their wings; for they had wings like the wings of a stork: and they lifted up the ephah between the earth and the heaven. Then said I to the angel that talked with me, Whither do these bear the ephah? And he said to me, To build it a house in the land of Shinar: and it shall be established and set there upon her own base” (Zechariah 5:6-11).*

The curse that spread worldwide with *the wickedness of the weighty ephah* came from The Land of Shinar and The Tower of Babel (Genesis 10:10). Nimrod was its first worldwide Emperor who spread *this curse of wickedness* to the four corners of *the earth*. The world has continued under this *curse* of wickedness to this very day.

## CHAPTER 7

### BABYLON, THE GREAT

**The First Head of The Beast was wounded when God divided the nations (Revelation 13:3). After the nations were dispersed, they eventually revived. When they got back on their feet, they returned to their wickedness. How did this come to pass?**

#### **Kings Of The Four Corners**

**Before the lands were divided, the earth was one huge continent surrounded by The Great Sea. The earth was thought to be flat. Nimrod, as The World's First Emperor, ruled the entire known civilized world. He was called The King of The Four Corners of The World. Since all the earth was one mass without continents, the rest was a great sea. Then, the earth was divided in *Peleg's day* (Genesis 10:25).**

**Babylon included many different nations and cultures but was considered to be *one people with one language*. In The Days of Peleg, God divided the nations by giving each their own inheritance. The earth was split into continents with oceans between them. Each nation had their own language. Now, Shem, Ham and Japheth's children had an equal opportunity to seek The One True God. Most followed their own choice of leaders or heros and considered them *mini-gods*.**

With their diverse languages, each named their gods in the language of their group. The various names for the gods were considered exclusive to their nationality. In reality, they were the same *man-made gods* they learned about from their forefathers. Each culture passed on the same essential accounts of everything they understood in their language. The World was religiously *pluralistic* with many gods who were accepted by all. The World was religiously *tolerant*, but who had *the strongest god*?

The Garden of Eden was known by all and the same philosophical understanding prevailed. Everyone believed those in The Garden and in The Land of Eden were *divine*, although they knew that they were *mortals*. In fact, their first eight rulers (human) were considered *Holy* and *divine*. With four mini-gods in The Garden (God, Adam, Eve and Satan) and eight listed from Enoch, the total came to twelve. *The One* who created everything was called *The SkyGod* (God). Counting from Enos (minus Enoch who was *translated*) left eight, including Noah (Genesis 4:26). After the flood, Noah and his family were the only humans left. Only *Shem* remained faithful to The One True God. The children of Ham and Japheth worshipped all twelve of the pre-flood individuals as *the great gods*.

*The SkyGod* created everything in *the universe*. Therefore, The One True God was considered *divine* and should have been the only god *worshipped*. However, those who did not follow God kept on worshipping *the creation* instead of *The Creator* (Romans 1:25). The Shemites were the only ones who continued to be faithful

to *The One True God*. The rest became *Polytheists* and worshipped almost everything in the universe. Everyone knew *the history* and *the truth* of *Paradise*, The Tree of Life, the great rivers and Adam and Eve.

This history began with Cain and Abel. Cain and his generations continued their wickedness until the world was consumed in The Great Flood. They, also, knew of The Promised Seed given to Eve to defeat Satan. The Messiah would restore The Tree of Life for mankind. The Prophets of God, like Enoch, preached The Coming of Christ (Jude 14 and I Peter 1:10-12). The full Gospel of The Kingdom of God was known at The Tower of Babel. The Tower was a type of *Jacob's ladder with steps to the top* of The Holy House of God (Genesis 28). What they didn't know was which of *Eve's children* would have God's *spirit*. Those with God's Spirit were the ones waiting for The Messiah to come. However, all the other relatives in The Land of Shinar (Babylon) made saviors of any ruler who protected them. They just didn't know.

In Babylon, they held *this truth of The Gospel of Christ in unrighteousness* by following *Polytheism*. They worshipped Eve (The Mother of All) as *The Queen of Heaven*. She was *the Zodiac sign "Virgo."* She was known as the virgin to come (Revelation 12:1-2).

*They held the truth in unrighteousness.* Everyone in The Land of Shinar knew *The Full Gospel of The Kingdom*. The divided nations had the free choice to follow God or any of their mini-gods. Most used *their human reasoning* with all *their varied imaginations*.

There were *two mysteries*: 1) The Mystery of God about Christ and 2) Mystery Babylon, The Great Whore, who would give birth by her many lovers.

### Mystery Babylon – A Whore

Read about the two women involved in *the ephah, the great weight* oppressing *the wickedness of the world* (Zechariah 5). The first woman, Eve, was The Mother of All Mankind. This has been known by most Bible readers, but who was the whore?

“*Nimrod*” was worshipped in Egypt as “*the resurrected son of Isis*,” who was considered to be divine. She married a man who was killed by Shem and, later, married her own son, Nimrod. In Egyptian history, *this woman* was called “*Semiramis*” and considered divine because she gave birth to Nimrod. As a goddess, she was called Isis, The New Queen of Heaven. She spread the idea that her husband, after he was killed, was resurrected as *the savior* (when her child was born). Now, the woman, Isis, along with Osiris and Horus comprised The New Trinity (this is perpetrated to this day as Satan’s form of religion). Isis, *a whore*, married *her own resurrected son* and was worshipped as *Ishtar* or *Easter*. The festival of *Easter* (bunnies having many eggs) is the prophecy of *this whore* bearing many children through fornication and adultery. Now, the prophecy of the two women is clear (Zechariah 5). The first is Eve who gave birth to all mankind. The second woman is *this great whore*.

Worldwide, *the truth* was held *in unrighteousness*.

**Babylon, The Great Whore, was ready to infect *everyone* except *the remnant* of individuals through Abraham. They followed The True Messiah of the world. They knew *The One True God* and *Father of everyone*.**



## CHAPTER 8

### THE WISE AND UNWISE

Paul, The Apostle wrote, “*I am debtor both to the Greeks and to the Barbarians: both to the wise and to the unwise*” (Romans 1:14). The Greeks of that day were educated and knew philosophy. “*Philosophy*” is “*the study of life.*” Barbarians, being country people, were pagans and *uneducated*. Paul felt obligated to them both. He had the need to teach them *The Gospel of Christ*.

### The World And The Truth

The previous chapter disclosed that the whole world understood *The Truth of The Gospel*. They knew about The Tower of Babel and the dividing of the nations. Mankind, also, knew the reason for human existence. In many ways, they were more educated than those who profess Christianity today. Even The Pagans worshipped their *gods* based upon *the same truth without understanding its mystery*. Of course, they followed *their man-made pagan rituals*. Paul made an astounding statement regarding how both the wise and unwise can grow in truth. It was all about *philosophy*, which is *the knowledge of life*. “*For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith [belief to belief]: as it is written. The just shall live by faith*” (Romans 1:17).

It is a matter of becoming *truly wise* and growing, with God's *wisdom*, from one level of belief to another level. God wants you to be respectful of all people as you grow towards His way of thinking. Two can walk together only when they are in agreement. Why was Paul so adamant about helping both *the wise* and *the pagans*? “*For the wrath of God* [the seven last plagues] *is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness*” (Romans 1:18). *The Whole Truth of God* was known because it was *revealed to them* in The Land of Eden (Romans 1:19).

Cain brought his personal version (perversion) of *the truth* to the known world. It spread long before the flood (Hebrews 1:1).

Intermarriage between The Sons of God (prophets) and those of Cain's progeny changed *the truth* to *unrighteousness*. The problem was those at The Tower of Babel worshipped *the creation* instead of The Creator (Romans 1:25). Cain's side of the family followed Polytheism (the worship of many gods). *Unrighteousness* or *Polytheism* replaced The One True God. This was the condition of the world in Paul's day. He was compelled to witness *The Truth of The Gospel of Christ* by giving them Godly *knowledge* to replace *their* man-made version of the truth. The Apostle Peter wrote how *The Prophets of Old* diligently searched to understand who Christ would be. Paul wanted to tell *the wise* (educated) and *the unwise* (pagans) that Jesus was The Christ (I Peter 1:10-12). Paul answered this question when he went to Athens.

## Idols of Athens

Athens was the capitol of Greece. The Pantheon was considered God's *house* and *temple* on top of the hill where all of their mini-gods were placed. This was the center of education for all Greeks. The Greeks took credit for being *wise* and thought they understood *world philosophy*. The world knows of Socrates and Plato. Because of Pythagoras, they took credit for mathematics.

All this knowledge was known in The Land of Shinar (Babylon). Through the ages, their knowledge was passed on to neo-Babylon. The Romans controlled the world and copied Greek philosophy. The whole world's educational system and religion held *the truth in unrighteousness*. The schools and universities taught *this philosophy*. Here is what Paul taught knowing the knowledge of all Athenians, "*Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars hill [idols] and said, You men of Athens, I perceive that in all things [philosophy] you are too superstitious. For as I passed by and beheld your devotions [worship], I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore you ignorantly worship, him declare I to you*" (Acts 17:22-23).

Paul did not argue or attack their religion. He knew they held *the truth in ignorance*. They knew about The One True God. This conundrum was created by worshipping all of God's creation. They didn't even know The One Creator *of all things*. He was called *The SkyGod*. He lived in *the sky* (not on earth). They

worshipped humans, whom they regarded as divine (Cain, Nimrod, Kings, Emperors and Caesars or Tzars).

Mount Olympus in Greece was the home of all *the gods* they worshipped. Religion and education were combined into *one*. They worshipped their gods in *the temples* and studied philosophy in the schools. The Jews did the same in God's *temple*. *The schools* were located in *the synagogues*.

*"The Torah,"* meaning *"The Path to God's Holy House,"* was a counterpart to The Greek *system*. Jesus said, *"You worship you know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews"* (John 4:22). Jesus said this to The Samaritan woman. Jesus and The Samaritan Woman knew *the truth* but she was *ignorant* while claiming to be *wise*.

The wise were educated in world knowledge, but they couldn't make *any sense of it*. The Educational System today is the same as the original method of schooling that began in The Land of Shinar (Babylon). *The educated* in schools and religious groups know *the truth* but teach and preach it in *ignorance*. Christ warned His *people* to come out of Babylon. Everyone needs to come out of Babylon. How? They do it through Christ, just as Paul preached. (Read the book, *The Magi and Christ's Birth*).

## CHAPTER 9

# CONSTANTINE AND THE WORLD

In The Fourth Century C.E., Constantine and The Roman Empire was attacked by The Ostragoths, Heruli and The Vandals. The Eastern part of The Empire was under military pressure from The Sassanids. *The lucrative silk road of commerce*, running from China to Egypt and Ethiopia, was about to be conquered. Tyre was close to the road and was the port to Carthagina and beyond. Jerusalem was a city everyone wanted to control. Religiously, The City of Jerusalem was worshipped by Muslims, Jews and Christians. Constantine had to do something drastic or he would lose a great source of income for Rome. The world worshipped Jerusalem for its religious and commercial benefits (The Silk Road).

### A New Rome

Present day Istanbul, near The Town of Berea, was chosen by Constantine as The New Rome. By moving The Capitol of Rome to Berea (Constantinople), The Emperor could easily protect Eastern and Western Rome. Because patriotism was declining in Rome, it was getting difficult to recruit men for the military. Something had to be done.

## Unifying Religion

*The wise and unwise worshipped many gods. They all seemed to be waiting for The Savior, The Messiah. Constantine knew he had to unify both religion and education. He, also, had to stimulate national patriotism so he could recruit more men for the military. Rome always needed protection.*

Christianity was growing rapidly so it was time to unite both Christians and Pagans. All Constantine had to do was declare to the diverse pagan religions that *Christ* was their Messiah too. Everyone was waiting for *a savior* in their various individual faiths.

Constantine had a dream. He told The Roman masses he dreamed that The One True *SkyGod* revealed *a vision* to him. In his dream, he saw *a cross in the sky in the middle of the sun.*

*The cross* had always been venerated by both The Pagans and The Christians. It originated at the time of The Tower of Babel. The Cross was not a Roman symbol; rather, it originated in Sumaria. The Sun and God were considered the same. The Seventh Day Sabbath fell into disuse and Sunday became The Empire's *day of worship*. Christians changed and followed Constantine because they thought Christ was resurrected on Sunday instead of God's Seventh Day Sabbath.

Many Christians stopped keeping The Seventh Day Sabbath at that time. During the past 400 years, it was thought that Christ was resurrected on The First

**Day. Christians joined Pagans and worshipped on Sunday. Constantine's dream was to win this battle and become a Savior Caesar for the world. He wanted a one-world government. This was the only difficulty that needed a resolution in order to be accomplished by Caesar's New Rome. He could reunite his entire empire: East, West, North and South.**

### **The Christian Dilemma**

**Over the last several centuries, *Gnostics* (the spiritually knowledgeable ones, the élite and the educated of the day) penetrated Christianity. "*Gnosticism*" wasn't a religion but "*a philosophy*" taught in many schools. The Jews, Asians and Romans all had their personal or ethnic *Gnostic ideologies*.**

**Many Christian Bishops in The Roman Empire were educated and were true believers in Gnosticism. They continued to be educated in Gnosticism. It all depended upon what was taught in their universities just like today.**

***Christianity in Constantine's time was rife with The Gnostic Philosophy. Constantine wanted to unite Christianity by resolving the differences in ideologies among The Gnostic Bishops. The Council of Nicea, in 325 C.E., was held by Constantine to resolve these matters. The major dispute concerned The Divinity of Christ. Did Jesus always exist or did God give life to Him? Of The 600 Bishops from Christian churches around The Mediterranean Sea, only about 250-280 attended The Council. The rest did not attend.***

All Bishops, at that time, were considered to be *Papas* or *Fathers* of The Church. *The Bible* is replete with Fathers or Elders. The Head Elder became *The Overseer* or Bishop of his church just as the older fathers were The Elders or Bishops of their own families (I Peter 5 and I Timothy 5).

Constantine couldn't tolerate having 250 Popes in Christianity. There was a great divide between Arius (Aryan) and Athanasius. They argued and were at odds with each other. Constantine knew this had to change and thought he had the answer. Rome had a Caesar, a Head of State and a High Priesthood. The Caesar decided The Emperor would be *the protector of the faith* (through military means). *The Papa* or Bishop of Rome would be The Pontifex Maximus. The Roman Bishop became *the only Pope* with one exception. The Eastern Faction of The Empire had mostly Greeks as *Papas* and wouldn't accept *The Pope* in Rome. *An equal* to The Pope of Rome was the answer. There were to be *two popes* or *equals*.

The Eastern Churches of The Empire became *The Orthodox Churches* (the original). The Western Churches became The Catholic Church (coined universal). *These two legs* completed the prophecy in Daniel 2. Now there was an Eastern Rome with The Orthodox and a Western Rome with The Catholics. These were the *two legs* in Daniel 2. *Western Rome* under The City of Rome and *Eastern Rome* under Constantinople were established. The two religions were The Catholics and The Orthodox. Both unified Paganism and Christianity. However, their unity was only on the surface.



**The Roman *creed* stated that Christ always existed. Some Bishops disagreed and were exiled. Others didn't accept The Creed but kept quiet and tried to figure out how they could convince their churches at home. Eusebius went along with the creed, but didn't agree with it. In reality, The Council of Nicea never resolved the problem. Future history will prove this with all the additional church councils that were held.**

**History, from that point, dictated Constantine was *divinely ordained* to be *the protector of the faith*. Catholicism in The West and Orthodoxy in The East were *the programmed religions*.**

**The Tower of Babel in The Land of Shinar continued with its many gods. They believed in The Trinity with The Queen of Heaven (Eve and Isis in Egypt). This was prophesied in Zechariah 5. Eve was the pre-flood queen and Isis was the post-flood queen.**

**Easter replaced The Feast of Unleavened Bread. Communion replaced The Passover. Pentecost remained with The Coming of The Holy Spirit until 1054 A.D. The Orthodox Church and The Catholics split at that time. The Greek Orthodox Church did not believe in The Holy Spirit as part of *the trinity*. They believed it was a power from God. They never believed The Holy Spirit was a separate being.**

## CHAPTER 10

### THE IMAGE PREVAILS

Many of The Bishops were taught and educated by *The Teachings of The Gnostics*. Paganism became part of the accepted religion of that time. Daniel's *image*, in King Nebuchadnezzar's dream, infected the entire world. Then it began to expand.

#### Justinian's Image

The Philosophy of Life, representative of Ishtar and Easter (known as *Isis* in Egypt), became *ensconced* in Rome's *way of life*. The entire known world was philosophically and religiously infected. *The image of the beast* sustained itself from The Tower of Babel to Egypt, Assyria, Neo-Babylon, Media-Persia, Greco-Macedonia and Rome under Constantine. After Constantine, Rome deteriorated but was resurrected one more time (from The Mediterranean Sea). Justinian was the last Emperor to restore The Roman Empire to its final glory. Justinian restored everything Constantine lost until *the plague* killed 25 million Romans. Because of this tragedy, The Ostragoths, Heruli and The Vandals infiltrated Rome. Later, The Muslims infiltrated from The West. Under Theodosius, The Empire struggled. Then, it was decreed that all *Gnostic teachings* should *cease*, except for *the philosophy* of The Gnostics which was established by Athanasius.

When the library in Alexandria, Egypt was destroyed, all historical records, except those in The Vatican Library, were gone. The Gnostic teachings were the only records that prevailed. This resulted in the loss of all pre-Greek knowledge. *The truth* of the past disappeared. In The Fifth Century, Islam took over and spread its philosophy and religion. Later, The Kahns controlled almost all of Europe and parts of Russia. There was a mixture of religions which confused the world. *The church of your choice* was at hand. *The image*, under Constantine and Justinian, lasted with *the creeds* of The Roman Church. The plagues, which started in Justinian's day, finally reached Europe between The Eleventh and Thirteenth Centuries.

### The University System

The Catholic Church knew education was the answer. Italy began *the first university* in Europe. History, philosophy and religion were taught from a Catholic agenda and point of view. *The image of the beast* left The Mediterranean Area and continued to grow in Europe (Revelation 13:11-18).

What began at The Tower of Babel was revived as *a lamb* who became *a beast*. Now, its *image* existed in the world and *many harlots* would follow, such as Charlemagne, Napoleon and even Hitler. Universities were teaching pure *Platonism* and *Socrates*, which were garnered from *the ancients*. It went back to The Tower of Babel and experienced *a plethora* of divisions. The division was imminent. *The Harlots* and *Christianity* were in opposition with each other.

*The printing press made The Bible available for the masses to read. The age of personal reason exploded in Europe. With Martin Luther, The Reformation began. A reformed society was underway. Many groups began to protest against The Vatican. The anti-Baptist and The Seventh Day Baptists discovered Salvation was an individual matter. They felt it depended upon receiving The Holy Spirit. The Power of God was needed to understand The Bible as The Word of God (II Timothy 1:7). A Renaissance or a new birth was underway. This new birth continued from the 1500's to this day. All Universities gave Ph.Ds. A Doctorate in Philosophy (knowledge of life) was the most sought after. The Renaissance Philosophy spread the message of the true knowledge that originated in Greece.*

It was promoted in Latin by Rome who copied it from Greece. Prior to Greece, everything was *a myth* and not to be part of the curriculum. In reality, Gnostic teaching began at The Tower of Babel. All present-day ideologies came from that teaching and still prevails to this day. With *scholars* having differing *points of view*, the *ultimate reliance* was developed from *their carnal human minds*. This was called *Science*.

### Apex Of Human Imagination

Human nature is *a mixture* of *good* and *evil*. There is only one way for humanity to know what is *good* or *evil*. It is through *experimentation*, which includes observing numerous experiments at *an escalated pace* (rapid experience) to determine (falsely) what is *right* or *wrong*.

*The Age of God literally died.* This teaching began to take on a philosophical approach. Now, Science (the human mind) could decide *good* and *evil*. The Renaissance Period brought *society* back to The Garden. Science and people who did not believe in God were deciding what was *right* or *wrong*. Today, everyone has the same sin or nature as their forefathers (Adam and Eve). Science has chosen The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. Science is *the new high priest* and does not require *repentance*. Scientific theories merely seek to *escalate* their experiments and come to more conclusions. The Sumerians at The Tower of Babel used *mathematical formulas* for *Zodiac readings*. Science *gleans their knowledge* the same way. The world is still in Babylon. By *guessing the possibilities of life's solutions*, far too many people come to *theorize any truth they may have*. The rapid increase of experiments begins to shape what scientists consider to be *the truth*. The more *a guess* is repeated, the more believable it becomes. Theories, such as *evolution*, tend to be accepted. With the invention of *computers*, the number of experiments has dynamically increased. The time originally needed for *experiencing guesses* has dramatically shortened. The world benefits from the outcome. They regard the results as new inventions which can be *marketed*. Science is the world's base for *technology*.

### The Option Problem

What are the pitfalls when putting your faith in Science? Even with computerized escalation of time, it still does not guarantee lengthening your life to *eter-*

*nity*. Only God is *eternal* and has *the know-how* and *experience*. God always existed, exists today and will always exist in the future.

Science has *options* called *variables*. *A variable is another possibility*. Possibilities can make *most theories wrong*. Until *all possibilities* have been *tried and tested*, the results can be *wrong*. It is exactly why *governments mandate bad laws*. They *guess a great deal* with very little *experience*, especially those *universal and college scholars*. That is why those with *Doctorate Degrees* are the ones who disagree among themselves the most. Evolution (a theory) and other unproven *realities* keep changing every 100 years.

Now, with computers, you can accomplish this every twenty-five years. The latest teachings claim *point of origin* is not enough *truth* when regarding *The Big Bang Theory*. There must be another *point of origin* or a *beginning*. The latest study in *human intelligence* has manifested an *Evolutionist's dilemma*. An intelligent mind makes *evolution* impossible. *A mind* with all its *capabilities* (mathematically) cannot occur by *accident*, as *Evolution claims*. *Any discipline or study* will have an eternal search for *truth*. *How can anything begin from nothing* as Evolution proclaims? It is foolishness.

So it is with God. You must begin with *the point of origin*. Historically, this book has followed *the truth* from The Time of Babylon.

## CHAPTER 11

### ONLY GOD GIVES KNOWLEDGE

True knowledge of *good* and *evil* does not come from *any man*. Deciding what is *good* or *evil* for yourself is your Babylonian *human nature*. The One who gives *true knowledge* is God. God's puzzle can be solved only when you are receptive to the clues He gives you. He is always ready to give you *understanding* so you can solve *the puzzle of life*.

#### The Source Of Knowledge

To whom will God *teach knowledge* and give understanding (Isaiah 28:9)? *Gnosticism is knowledge*. It can either be *human knowledge* without God or knowledge *taught* by God. True knowledge comes from The Word of God.

Because The Ancient Prophets proclaimed The True Gospel of God's *kingdom* through The Messiah, *the truth* was known from the beginning. God instructs and helps you understand *knowledge* and *doctrine*. "*A doctrine*" is "*a teaching*." It can be *a teaching* from humans or a teaching from God.

*A doctrine* can be *true*, *partly true* or *completely false*. When you decide you have had enough of this mixed-

up world, God is always ready to reveal all the facts you need. Only God knows life's purpose and plans for human existence. He will never overwhelm you but will take you through it step-by-step. It will be at a pace which allows you to digest the information. He, alone, gives proper knowledge to understand *doctrine*. This plan has always been known by *the angels*. However, the angels only understood *part* of The Will of God (I Peter 1:12).

Mankind understands less than the angels. The Gospel of Christ, known from The Days of Eden, still lacks *two important factors*. Peter writes about what no one could understand in the beginning.

### Two Unknowns Of History

Peter used *the intricacies* of how The Messiah's *spirit* would manifest itself (I Peter 1:11). "*The Spirit – In Christ*" was the same Spirit *The Prophets* were given. Jesus was a human who was *Holy* because He had God's *Holy Spirit* from birth (Luke 1:35). *The Prophets*, also, were led by God's Holy Spirit. However, they only knew *in part*. Jesus, The First Begotten Son of God, was *the firstborn*. He was given God's Holy Spirit *without measure*. He was *God's word in perfection* (John 3:34).

Since Noah was *a preacher of God's righteousness*, Noah's children (Shem, Ham and Japheth) understood *The Gospel of Christ*. Shem followed his father's teaching but only Abraham had *the faith* to obey God's voice – His *word* (Genesis 26:5). Shem was of The Order of



**The Melchizedek Priesthood, according to Jewish history. He lived long enough to bless Abraham whose seed would produce *the promised seed* (Genesis 22:16-18). Through Abraham's *seed* (genealogically), *the human* Messiah would come.**

**Ham, Japheth and their descendants were always in *the dark* because they chose not to follow God. Worse yet, their culture spread throughout the rest of the earth. They didn't follow Noah or Shem (Deuteronomy 32:7-8). Eventually, Shem's family grew to become a nation (Israel).**

**Only through Abraham's genealogy would *The Christ* come (Deuteronomy 32:9). The rest of the world floundered while continuing *to worship their numerous mini-gods* believing they were *their saviors*. Even the pagans, like *Buddha*, finally knew they had to change the human way of reasoning through meditation (losing one's mind).**

**The Greeks, who were *the wise* and knew *The Gospel of Christ*, were still looking for *their Messiah*. They were no different from the rest of the world (Acts 17). Paul preached that *The Unknown God* had begotten His *Firstborn Son*, Jesus. Jesus Christ was The Messiah. A few believed but most could not accept *the resurrection* of Jesus.**

**These are *the two camps* of understanding throughout history and they continue to this day. True Christians and The Messianic Jews continue to believe in Jesus as The Messiah. The rest of *the world* still doesn't**

know the answer to the old question of who The Messiah will be. There was, also, the question of when He would return. The Jews and The Muslims are still waiting. Many Christians still do not know Him. Don't all Christians believe in Jesus as The Messiah? Yes, most do. However, those believing in *Gnostic philosophy* lost The True Jesus. The world's Christianity is divided with regard to The Real Christ. Paganism (uneducated country people, the unwise) has been in a quandary for thousands of years (Romans 1). Most of *the world* is still in a quandary (Babylon). Jesus' name is Yahshua in Hebrew and Iesous in Greek.

The world is in confusion. The Evolutionists still have their doubts as to *the first cause of creation*. Who has the truth?

### The World's Unanswered Problem

By the time *The Age of Reason* was underway, mankind *decided* God made *no sense*. God was *dead* to them. At The Tower of Babel, they felt The Unknown *SkyGod* was dead. *The end* had become *the beginning* once again. *Science*, without God, pretends to be "*Oh, so smart.*" Only a few look to Jesus and God. If Jesus is God's *true* Son, how can you know *the truth of life*?

Who is right? Is it God or your *human nature*, which has devised so many *untruths*? Only God *knows* what life is all about. How can you prove God is *The Only True God*?

## CHAPTER 12

### IS GOD'S WORD INSPIRED?

Can you prove *The Bible* is The Word of God? Is *The Bible* true? If *The Bible* is The Word of God, how does He want you to study it? What does the word “*inspire*” mean? Can you really know if *The Bible* is *inspired*?

#### Inspiration Defined

Many are surprised when they begin to understand *a mystery*. *Inspiration* is a *logical surprise*. You experience *inspiration* when you *understand* the different parts of *The Bible*. This is especially so when a host of questions enters your thinking process. This *thinking process*, at times, gives you a glimpse of *the truth* when you study *The Bible*.

The word “*sense*” refers to “*the five senses*.” It is the only way mankind can *perceive* or *understand*. You learn through *the observations of seeing, hearing, touching, tasting* and *smelling*. These observations are the means for mankind to come to a conclusion.

What if you cannot understand what one of your senses discerns? You might find yourself in *a dilemma*. Until your *senses* experience *reality* (which is truth), you will be left in *the dark*.

Until you are familiar with *the reality* of your senses, you must *guess* whether *friend* or *foe*, *good* or *evil*. With years and years of experience, you will begin to know *good* from *evil*. *Animals* are self-taught and live purely by instinct. They always seek food and shelter. Survival is their ultimate goal.

### The Human Enemy

Not only do you lack the sense to understand *truth*, you, also, have an enemy within. What enemy? What is most important to you? What or who has *your greatest love*? *Your human desire* and *your human nature* cause you to *lose wisdom* or *common sense* (Proverbs 18). *Wisdom is perception*. Your perception is controlled by your *personal desire*. This can lead you to *idolatry*. What you *love* the most will *motivate your heart*. Your heart pumps blood to your cells and gives you life. When it stops pumping, you will die. It is so simple. When do your senses tell you what the facts are? *Human reasoning*, left to itself, can cause you to be *forever learning* and never come to *The Knowledge of The Truth*. That is *Science* at its best – always in a *state of change* depending upon *the latest knowledge*.

You can invent *good* and helpful *things* but, also, very destructive things. Which one will win out? As long as humanity struggles for *survival* first and foremost, *destruction will win*. *Fear*, as a *motivator*, is only a *temporary deterrent*. A child can be *taught* to choose *good* out of *fear*. But, when he/she loses that fear, they are not capable of existing for very long. Experimentation allows many mistakes. Many times you can and

do make the wrong choice. Which one wins out? It all depends upon your *motivations* and *desires*.

Every *sin* misses *the mark to life* and *Paradise*. Sooner or later, *a misstep allows sin to enter*. If you ever have the opportunity to ask *a murderer* why he killed a person, usually the answer is, "*I don't know*." Then they are asked, "*Did you mean to kill?*" Their answer is usually "*no*."

It is like a child who is warned not to cross a street without an adult. Sometimes, the child crosses the street and is hit by a vehicle. If you ask the child, "*Why didn't you listen?*" they will reply, "*I don't know*." The child is telling you *the truth*. Other *personal desires* motivated the action, which they do not understand. Usually a person intends to obey but some stronger desire prevails. They couldn't help themselves.

When Cain killed Abel, he did not seem to understand why (he felt) his punishment was greater than he could bear. He spent the rest of his life seeking *immortality* – The Tree of Life. Deep down, everyone does *the same*. Most have their own *little idol*, usually themselves.

Sin is innate from a person's birth. *Missing the mark of life* is when a person continues to *sin*. You were intended to live *forever* because God gave you life from the beginning – The Tree of Life. You have the same choice Adam and Eve had in The Garden. If you don't choose *rightly*, it will be no one's fault but your own. Everyone was born to *sin* but, without *Salvation*, everyone *dies*. Nevertheless, everyone tries to *survive*.

## Sin And The Door

God warned Cain, "*Sin lies at the door.*" He was telling Cain that sin was part of his nature. He had to *master* his desires or *rule over sin* (Genesis 4:6-7). What was Cain's desire? He wanted his *sacrifice* of fruits and vegetables to be accepted by God. Every child wants to be accepted by their parents, especially when your Father is God.

Cain was *the firstborn*. Being the firstborn, he believed it gave him *the right of inheritance*. What Cain lacked was *faith* and *trust* in His Father. How many lack this faith today? Don't point the finger at friends or family. *You should be more concerned about your own faith in God.*

Abel had more *faith* and *trust* in God to do *right* (Hebrews 11:4). God warned Cain and, because of jealousy, he *murdered* Abel. Cain had *an evil desire*. God is the only one who understands the pulls of *good* and *evil*. The Tree of Life is The Word of God through Christ. You must have total and complete *faith* in your Father's *words*. They will lead you to *life in Paradise*. Only God's *words* are *inspired* and allow your *five senses* to understand *reality* and *truth*. Your senses will comprehend *the truth*. To your *joyful delight* (your logical intelligence), you will *experience eternal joy and happiness*. *The Bible is inspired* because God is your *Master Rabbi and teacher*.

## CHAPTER 13

### WHAT IS THE HOLY SPIRIT?

Job taught that “*The Spirit – In Man*” gives you *life*. God can give you *understanding* when you, finally, allow Him to be your *teacher*.

#### Genesis 1:26

God said, “*Let us make man in our image*” (Genesis 1:26). God’s entire heavenly host/angels are His *emissaries* to help teach you *the truth* (Hebrews 1). In *The Old Testament*, you find angels helping Jacob take each step *on the ladder to Salvation* (Genesis 28).

Christ has the angels help you enter God’s *gate* to His *house of rest*, just like Jacob (John 1:51).

You debate as to who will help you find *the way*. You ought to learn how God can teach you. He knows how you can become a Son of God.

#### You Can Be Like Christ

God’s *Holy Spirit* made Jesus *Holy* (Luke 1:35). “*God’s Holy Spirit*” (scripturally) is defined as “*a power from Him*” (II Timothy 1:7). This Holy Spirit is *a power of God*. It is not *a separate being*, but, rather, an extension of God, Himself (part of God).

The Holy Spirit gives Christians *a sound mind*. David said God is *The One* who gives *truth* and *wisdom*. The Holy Spirit comes from God and no one else (Psalm 51:6). When Christ was *born*, He received *God's word*, *wisdom* and *truth* through *The Power of God's Holy Spirit* (Luke 1).

Jesus was God's First Begotten Son (mono-genus) and became *the beginning one*. Jesus became The Christ by *inheritance*. Through *the inheritance*, Jesus was given *The Power of God's Holy Spirit* to have God's *sound mind*, *wisdom* and *The Word of God*. He became *The Word of God*. *The Prophets* and *the angels*, also, wanted to know who The True Christ was. So, when Christ became human, *The Mystery of God* was *fulfilled*.

### The Mystery Of God

"*Christ – In You*" is The Mystery (Colossians 1:27). How could that be? When Jesus became *Holy* by God's Holy Spirit, He became *The Very Word* of God (John 1:14). Christ had all of God's *wisdom* and *truth*. The Mystery of God was to be resolved when *the spirit* (Holy Spirit) would come. *The Prophets* and *the whole world* were searching for The Messiah. They desperately wanted to know who *The Messiah* would be.

Jesus Christ (God's word and wisdom) had The Very Mind of God (Philippians 2:5). "*Who* [Christ], *being in the form of God* (Holy Spirit), *thought it not robbery to be equal* [in the exact image] *with God*" (Philippians 2:6). Christ had God's *glory* (goodness) and was in



God's *exact image*. He was *exactly* like God. Today, Christ sits at the right hand of God.

### By His Blood

*The conundrum* concerns how *one man's death* paid for everyone's sins. If that were *true*, would Jesus have to *die* for each person? The solution is simple. Jesus is *The Author of Your Salvation* (Hebrews 12:2). *The Bible* explains how you can *be saved* (John 1:17). Christ knows *the way* and is The One who will *lead you to the truth*. You, *in faith*, must trust Jesus. He can and will *save you*. God gave Christ His Holy Spirit to lead Him. Now, Jesus sets the example for you. He has given you *the same Holy Spirit* to become like Him. This is the answer that has plagued mankind for thousands of years. "*The just shall live by faith*" (Romans 1:17).

When you are led by God's Holy Spirit, you will be led to *the truth*. With God's truth, you will remain *faithful*. You, *spiritually*, grow in your *faith*. *The gift of faith saves you*. With *faith*, which is a *gift*, your sins are covered by Christ's *blood* and *sacrifice*. *The sacrifice* of Jesus *covers your faith*. His *blood* pays for all your *sins*. Only after Christ became *The Author* or *the way* were you able to receive *Salvation*. This is very plain and simple.

### God All In All

After Christ *defeats* all of *God's enemies*, "*death being the last enemy*," Jesus will return The Kingdom to

**God** (I Corinthians 15:25-28). **Why?** “*Two can [only] walk together, except [when] they be agreed [in agreement]*” (Amos 3:3). **When you become like Jesus, God will be “*all in all*”** (I Corinthians 15:28). **Only, then, can everyone in the world be saved and be guaranteed to live in an *Eternal Paradise of bliss and happiness.***

**When you make the correct choice, you are guaranteed *liberty* and freedom to follow God’s *truth*. Only then, can you reach *The Stature* of Christ (Ephesians 4:13). You will have an elder Brother who has all the right answers. God will not only take care of you but will take care of the whole human creation. You will be able to fulfill all of your potential.**

## CHAPTER 14

### GOD'S SCHOOL

Now, you understand the history of The Mystery of God and The Mystery of Babylon, The Great Whore. God's *puzzle* will be solved when you continue to *seek* The One True God. He is The Greatest Rabbi and the greatest servant of all. How does God teach you to be like Him?

#### Bible Study – God's Way

God allowed The Sumerians to learn *the alphabet* so they could study His *word*. This knowledge spread throughout the entire world. Everyone needed either the heavens (with its symbols), some tablets of stone or a scroll so they could learn The Truth of God's Gospel. Like many parents who *homeschool* their children, God had His System of Home Schooling.

Devoid of *spiritual knowledge*, Adam and Eve were initially taught by God. They used their *five senses* to understand. They could see, smell, taste, hear and touch the trees, fruits, rivers, grasses, birds and animals. The Creation was made into *pictures* and *images* which they could easily conceive in *their minds*. Jesus said the same thing to Nicodemus. He told him a man is not *a spirit*. The flesh (human) only understands *the spiritual things* when compared to *the physical things*,

like *the stars* in the heaven and the environment surrounding them (John 3).

Mankind's first writings were *pictographic images*. In *Kindergarten*, Adam and Eve were taught in a very simple manner. God began with *trees*. Trees became symbols for *people* and nations. That is, He simply told *the first two humans* they could eat from all *the trees* in The Garden but one. One tree was The Tree of Life, which symbolized God's Holy Spirit offered to only those who follow Him.

*The Prophets*, like Isaiah, Jeremiah and others, gave different distinctions. Hosea likened Israel to *elm trees* but, also, to scorpions, lions, bears and snakes (Satan).

They were told to *avoid* The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil, which depicted *human nature*. If they ate or learned by themselves, it would lead to *death* because they didn't know how to tell the difference. They could not tell what was *right* or *wrong*. In the end, they would die. This was Lesson No. 1. But, they were already on their own – blowing in the wind to and fro. Human governments have failed because of this reason. No human system of governing knows *right* from *wrong*. No one knows what is *fair* or *just*. Only God does.

Adam and Eve chose to be on their own as students, much like today's teenagers. They wanted to decide for themselves. This human way of teaching was The Sumerian School System. Upon completion, *Bache-*

*lor's Degrees* were awarded according to their interests or talents.

Once humans started to populate The Land of Shinar (without God), their educational system demanded *an alphabet*. All the known world was bent on returning to The House of God in Eden. They knew of an immortal Paradise. In school, a person begins as a *freshman* and knows there is much more to learn. The second year, they are considered *foolish* and ignorant. The third year is their *junior year* (just beginning to learn). In the fourth year, they are *seniors* and on their way to *understanding the meaning of life*.

### Master's Degree

From this point on, no one could be on their own. Rather, they needed a *Master* to *tutor* them in *their choices*. God can also help you in the success of your career. As *apprentices*, you must choose to become *disciplined* in The Philosophy of Life. After you learn, you will, eventually, be given a *Master's Degree*. Then, you will become *an experienced elder* in your specific field of study.

The smart ones discovered the need for *discipline*. They learned the lessons of life. They needed a tutor to help them master their lives. It was too easy for them to find themselves in many pitfalls. This is what God wanted Cain to learn. However, Cain (like any ego-driven teenager) **did not learn** and he was driven to kill Abel. God told Cain he had sinned (making mistakes in life was natural to humans) **and that he**

must *master* himself. In order to gain maturity, Cain needed a total change of *mind* and *thinking*. He, also, needed to *repent*. Instead, he killed Abel. However, he knew about The Tree of Life and kept searching for it. Obviously, he did not want to repent. Cain wanted to do it his way (Genesis 4:7). Cain, guided by Satan, was *the world's first terrorist*.

When Israel came out of Egypt (sin), they did not learn their lesson. They obeyed God out of *fear* instead of wanting to follow Him. God had to bring them to repentance. So, they had to roam *in the wilderness* on their own. He gave them *The Law of Moses* so they could come to *repentance*. That generation did not learn. Under Joshua (a savior), they had to obey *The Law strictly* or be *cursed*. *The Law* became *their righteousness*. Routinely, through sinning and sacrificing, they would, hopefully, learn not to sin. Instead, they would learn to have *faith*. Only then could this lead them to Christ and Salvation (Galatians 3:24).

### Christ Our Master

Individuals must, eventually, learn that their *human weakness* causes them to *sin*. However, be aware that no one can keep *The Law of Moses faithfully* or *perfectly*. You may need help re-thinking this *clue*. By *repenting*, you come to Christ. He is your *Author*. *You must live by every Word of God*. Only God and Christ can lead you to *perfection*. Doctrine will not do it. Going from *doctrine* to *doctrine* and being *tossed* to and *fro* is not the answer. Jesus proclaims He is your only *Master*. It was never *the scribes* or even *The Law*

*of Moses, "But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant"* (Matthew 23:11).

Jesus was referring to Himself as *the greatest of all*. He became *your servant* even though He was your *Master*. Christ came to "*magnify the law and make it [more] honorable*" than *The Law of Moses* with all its *works* (Isaiah 42:21).

*Now, The Magnified Law was enlarged to show you that, by obeying, you show more honor so you can receive God's righteousness. Actually, The Magnified Law does not have to compete with your human nature. You can ask God to have The Ten Commandments as a part of you. The Law has become a part of you. You are becoming, more and more, like your Big Brother – Jesus Christ. The Magnified Law, literally, becomes a part of you. When Christ died, The Law was written in your heart and mind to produce a natural way of thinking. You grow into The Mind of Christ and God* (Ephesians 4:15).

Because of your *repentance*, you are seeking a *new mind and heart*. You become *teachable* and will have "*Christ – In You*." Therefore, you receive *The Gift of God's Holy Spirit*. This is *the same spirit* Jesus was filled with at birth. God's Holy Spirit leads you to *the truth* to be like Jesus. You are to have "*Christ – In You*."

## CHAPTER 15

### GOD'S DOCTORATE

God's *puzzle* will help you put all the pieces together in order for you to see the whole picture. *Perfection* is God's *purpose*. Your job is to become *Holy* and without *flaw* like God and Christ. When you complete your studies, God will give you your *Doctorate Degree*.

#### Doctrine – A Teaching

As you learn *various doctrines* or *pieces of teaching*, you must be careful not to become confused or stuck on one particular point. Each doctrine is a piece or a part of *the truth*. Attempting to put doctrine (a teaching) into its *true* and *proper purpose* can cause you to dangle. Why? If you do not know how to strive for *perfection*, you can end in Babylon. You will not only find yourself *divided*, but, also, in great *conflict*. When you allow yourself to be *divided* over *doctrine*, you are still *carnal* (I Corinthians 3).

Being *divided* is not sinful, but it does keep Christians from uniting with Christ. You must always strive to be *united* as **One Body**. All Christian groups only know *in part* (I Corinthians 13:9). You can be *a part of the body* – *leg, arm, heart, skin* – but still united as **One Body** (Jesus Christ). Each part of Christ's *body* has



its place and *purpose*. However, it still is *One United Body*.

This is why God *divided the nations* (Deuteronomy 32). The Tower of Babel in The Land of Shinar became filled with *wickedness*, that is everyone except Abraham. This refers back to The Alpha, *the beginning*, The Garden of Eden. You can choose The Tree of Life or The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. *The Bible* (The Word of God) began as *prophecy* and is becoming *history*.

## Violence And Destruction

In The Days of Noah, the world was filled with *wickedness* and *violence*. Today, the world has found itself in the same place. *The entire Bible*, which is a history of humanity, began as *prophecy* with *The Prophets*. You will be able to unfold the process of prophecy as it becomes history. *History* proves *prophecy*. Every Word of God is *sure* and *complete*. *The Bible* proves it is infallible as The Word of God (The Alpha and Omega). The Omega (the end) is very near.

God, throughout *The Bible*, *unfolds* an account of worldwide *wickedness*. It is the very reason God's *curse* brings *destruction*. God *resurrects* you to have another chance to find *Salvation*. *The flood*, the destruction of Israel (God's people) and the martyrdoms of God's people will bring fruition in *the end*. Through Christ, *the resurrection* will still occur. Those with heartfelt repentance will receive God's Holy Spirit. The way to become a Son of God is clear. *The end is*

***near.*** The end of all flesh is near when The Times of The Gentiles comes to its *climax of wickedness*. Genocide will be the world's conclusion. Jesus will intervene and The First Resurrection of The Bride of Christ will take place (including the ancients of Israel) (Ezekiel 37 and Revelation 19:7). ***The Millennium*** follows with The Bride (The Church of God – Gentiles and Israel) announcing The Wedding Feast. Who are the rest? The Gentiles of the world (both good and bad) are invited to The Wedding. The Bride has become worthy to be *the wife* (Revelation 19:8-9). (Read the books, *The Wedding Feast* and *The White Throne Judgment*). The Time of The Wedding Feast is at hand. Who can attend? The White Throne Judgment separates *the sheep* from *the goats*. The sheep enter The Kingdom of God to attend The Feast. *The goats* go into The Lake of Fire.

### All Things New

The old earth and the old heavens are about to be destroyed. God descends as *a beautiful burning rainbow* and *ignites the old*. It comes to nothing. God is ready to make *everything new*. Once again, there will be a *fresh, new start*. *It will announce the arrival of completeness and perfection*, which originated in The Garden of Eden. God's Mystery is now solved (as if Adam and Eve never sinned), so their progeny can choose *Salvation* (Revelation 21:1-5).

### From Babes To Maturity

***All previous prophecy has become history*** (I Corinthians 13:10). God never revealed everything, "*For we know*

*in part and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect [God and Christ] is come, then that which is in part shall be done away" (I Corinthians 13:9-10). The time to begin your doctorate training is about to start. Paul explains God's University System of Teaching. The word "university" denotes "universal." Your ultimate schooling goal is to receive your Ph.D. You are about to be taught *The Goodness of God. This is God's glory* (Revelation 21:25-26). This is the time when all nations will become Sons of God (Revelation 21:6-7). God's Holy Temple and Holy House is where everyone will be taught *perfection*. Everyone will receive *their Doctorates*.*

All the pieces of God's puzzle will be united as One Body. This will be *the genuine trinity*. Jesus foretells this event, "*That they all may be one; as you, Father, are in me and I in you, that they [all] also may be one in us: that the world may believe that you have sent me*" (John 17:21). *Salvation* will continue under The New Heaven and on The New Earth. Here is *the goal and the will of God*. "*I in them and you in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that you have sent me and have loved them, as you have loved me*" (John 17:23). (Read the book, *God's Will*).

*Doctrine is a teaching of the truth but only in part. Perfection includes all of God's word as a whole. As Christ said, "you must eat every Word of God to understand how doctrine leads you to become One with God"* (Matthew 4:4) (Paraphrased). Only God is good. He is The Only One who can allow everyone to understand all doctrine. The solution to God's puzzle is described

by Paul (I Corinthians 13:11-12). Before you seek The One True God, you must, first, repent and desire The Mind and Heart of God.

You will no longer discern *good* and *evil* based on your own human deductions. You will grow *spiritually* (heart and mind) in grace to have Godly *wisdom* and *understanding*. For you to do this, you must have clear judgment about *justice* and *true fairness*. When all your fears are cast out, you come to love God with His *love*. God's *love* lasts forever. This is the completion of Jacob's ladder to Christ. You begin as babes, grow in childhood, reach adolescence and become an adult. Christ is your example and The Author of Your *Salvation*. He is The *Way*, The Truth and The Life (John 14:6).

When you are resurrected and receive God's *glory*, you will see God as He is. You will be One with God and Christ. This is *the true trinity* (John 17:21).

### Salvation In Paradise

The Mystery of God is *fulfilled* "In Christ." Babylon, which is *human nature*, is *dead*. You are like God – "kind after kind." God's Holy Spirit has solved His *puzzle* for you.

You will receive a new name, "And they [you] shall see his face; and his name [JHVH] shall be in their foreheads" (Revelation 22:3-4). It will be in your *heart* and *mind*. You will be a *replica* of God. This is yet another *New Beginning*. The entirety of God's *creation* will be

with you in Paradise. God builds *all things* (Hebrews 3:1-4). *In faith*, you completely give your *heart* and *mind* to God. You are to honor God.

God (Elohim) is "*The I AM*," The Existing One, who can be everything He chooses to be. You have to choose to follow Him. At that time, you will have *a heart* and *a mind* like God.

*An eternity of joy and pleasure* are before you, forever and ever, without *end*. Glory to God and His Son Jesus. They both have *great love* to give you, which will lead you to *Eternal Happiness*. Through God's *free gift* you will live forever. Even if you have had sadness in your life, you now know, for a surety, you can have great hope to live forever in tranquility and joy.

# **THE MYSTERY OF GOD**

## **Part 3**

**By**

**ART MOKAROW**

***The Mystery of God is Part 3 of The God's Puzzle Solved Collection.***

**These 5 books comprise Volume I and should be read in the following order. This will give you a step-by-step Bible study focusing on God's *plan*.**

<b><i>God's Puzzle Solved</i></b>	<b>Part 1</b>
<b><i>God's Puzzle Completed</i></b>	<b>Part 2</b>
<b><i>The Mystery of God</i></b>	<b>Part 3</b>
<b><i>Prophecy Is Cyclical</i></b>	<b>Part 4</b>
<b><i>God's Mystery Fulfilled</i></b>	<b>Part 5</b>

**Written by Art Mokarow**

**Copyright – TXu 1-673-756**

**All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.**

# **Contents**

<b>TRUTH IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>GOD’S WORD – A MYSTERY</b>	<b>9</b>
<b>THE MYSTERY OF BABYLON</b>	<b>19</b>
<b>THE ONLY SIGN</b>	<b>27</b>
<b>THE LAST DAYS</b>	<b>35</b>
<b>A CHANGE OF TIME</b>	<b>43</b>
<b>THE END OF TIME</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>DARKNESS DESCENDS</b>	<b>59</b>
<b>DARKNESS ENDS</b>	<b>65</b>
<b>THE BRIGHT AND MORNING STAR</b>	<b>73</b>
<b>A WORLD IN DARKNESS</b>	<b>81</b>
<b>DAYS ARE NOT HOURS</b>	<b>87</b>
<b>THE MORNING STAR</b>	<b>93</b>
<b>THE SIGN OF CHRIST</b>	<b>101</b>
<b>THE WORD OF GOD</b>	<b>111</b>
<b>WHO WAS CHRIST?</b>	<b>119</b>
<b>GOD’S MYSTERY FULFILLED</b>	<b>129</b>



## PREFACE

There are two mysteries in *The Bible*. One is *The Mystery of God* (Colossians 1:27). The other is *The Mystery of Babylon – The Mother of Harlots and Abominations* (Revelation 17:5). The Mystery of God is biblically defined as, “*Even the mystery which has been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints: To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: Whom we preach, warning every man and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus*” (Colossians 1:26-28). All this leads to a vital question. How does one obtain The Mystery of “*Christ – In You?*” That is the question.

Comments and criticisms are welcomed. As usual, no money is accepted for this book. All books are absolutely free. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given). Your job is to pray, study, grow spiritually and use your offerings, to personally, help the orphans, the widows and the poor. In this way you will show yourself approved.

**Art Mokarow**  
**P.O. Box 1197**  
**Montgomery, TX 77356**

email: [art@mokarow.com](mailto:art@mokarow.com) (Comments and Questions)  
websites: [www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com](http://www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com) (Books)  
[www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net](http://www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net) (Articles)

## INTRODUCTION

Over the years, Science has made some amazing and wonderful discoveries. The world is no longer perceived as *flat* even though the universe might be. Cosmology has proposed many different shapes for this *elusive curtain* which God calls “*the universe.*” The words “*heaven*” and “*heavens*” are often used in *The Bible* to refer to the material and spiritual universe. Heaven is where God dwells in His *rest*.

However, there is much more. Some cosmologists (who study the universe) believe they have found another universe. This new universe *appears* to be a duplicate of the one you live in. They have discovered God’s “*third heaven*” where He dwells (II Corinthians 12:2).

Everyone is familiar with the movie *Star Wars* and its sequels. In this series of films, as well as with the *Star Trek* series, the spaceships travel at *warp speed*. *Warp speed* occurs when a space vehicle is caught in one of *the holes* or dips in the flat garment of the universe. As a space vehicle plunges into one of these holes, the downward pull creates *gravity*. This gravity becomes so intense it *warps* the unraveled cloth of space. Thus, a force or a light cannot escape this powerful downward pull. Science calls such distortions in the universe “*black holes.*”

### The Event Horizon

At the entrance of a *black hole* is a rim. From its rim, this hole proceeds downward just like looking into a cup. *The rim* is known as “*an event horizon.*” In *this*

*event horizon*, other objects are caught and absorbed. They are pulled inward with increasing force. They achieve *warp speed* when they cannot overcome this gravity and escape. In short, *matter* cannot escape a *black hole*. Stars disappear when they are trapped in this intense energy field and they are gone for good. They have been fully absorbed and are virtually dematerialized.

Now, consider another aspect of these amazing facts and factors. Some scientific findings present the notion of the reverse situation. Some cosmologists believe there are, also, *white holes*. Instead of absorbing *light*, these strange holes give off *light* at their *event horizons*. Consequently, they catapult light and material outward at an intense *warp speed*. In some cases, the speed is faster than *the speed of light*. In other words, the flow of energy is in the exact opposite direction when compared to a black hole. Science calls this The Big Bang Theory.

## In The Beginning

With this information in mind, it is time to consider it in the context of biblical literature. In *The Book of Genesis*, God's Spirit looked out upon a *new earth* filled with *water* and *darkness*. As this Spirit moved over *the darkness*, "*God said, Let there be light and there was light*" (Genesis 1:3). What was once darkness now has a light cast upon it. Regardless of the technical terminology, God's *very word* (which became Christ) was able to give *light* to this new earth (John 1:1-5). Whatever way it occurred, God was behind it. God was making it all happen, "*And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the*

*darkness*” (Genesis 1:4). *A division* was made between *the light* and *the darkness*, “*And God called the light Day and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day*” (Genesis 1:5). Now you know why God starts His day *at night* rather than at dawn with the first light. It pertains to the new earth. The new earth started in darkness and, then, light (or day) followed. God called *the light* (or day) “*good*” and, in turn, made the night “*dark*” (which is the absence of good). God views this as earthly time.

The New Earth started in *darkness* but will end *in light*. God created the earth (originally in *darkness*) and it was full of *life*. Life needs *light* to exist. So, *life* is connected to *light* and *death* is connected to *darkness*. All this is logical and reasonable. God didn’t create the other *stars* (suns) and *planets* until *The Fourth Day* (Genesis 1:14-19).

In an overall sense, these two great *lights* (*the sun* and *the moon*) were designed to rule over the earth. It was the day or *the light* of day which was *good* (according to God). *The moon*, itself, giving off some *light* during the night, is part of *The Mystery of God*. God declares, “*For the invisible [spiritual] things of him [God] from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse*” (Romans 1:20). In this text, God gives you *the answer* to *The Mystery of God*. It is revealed by *observing* His *creation* – *the entire universe*.

## Spiritual Revelation

The Word of God and *The Power* of God’s Holy Spirit

enable you to resolve the question about what is good and what is *evil*. God said “*goodness is light*” while *darkness is the absence of good*. Light is Holy and sin is *darkness*. Light is *life* and death is *darkness*. The world began in darkness and sin, but it ends in goodness (God’s goodness or righteousness). This Holiness (achieved through God’s Holy Spirit) reveals The Light of The Truth, “*And I will pray the Father and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees him not, neither knows him: but you know him: for he dwells with you and shall be in you*” (John 14:16-17).

God’s *Holy Spirit* brings *truth* to *light* just as God’s *word* created *the light* (through this Spirit). Until *the light* came, which was *good*, the earth was in darkness. The earth, without God, was much like *a black hole*. *This perfect beginning* in The Garden of Eden was *the first earthly house* where God dwelt. God said everything was very good (Genesis 1:31). Everything in The Garden had God’s Holiness or goodness throughout. This *goodness* was offered as Eternal Life through The Tree of Life. Adam and Eve had free choice to eat from The Tree of Life and to live forever in God’s *rest*. But, they chose *The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil*. Since *day* is light and *night* is darkness (with *the moon* giving some reduced *light*), they could either be *good* or *evil*. *The sun* is *light* and, therefore, it is *goodness*. *The darkness*, at night, is *the absence of good* (or evil). *The moon* gives some *light* and can be perceived as both *good* and *evil*.

Through God’s creation, He is manifesting *the goodness* and *the light*. Alternately, through *the moon*, God

is giving some *light* or *goodness* (which can be a combination of good or evil). God's goodness has been declared from the beginning. *The Psalms of David* sing His praises. Through a song, the praises of God reveal *The Gospel* of God's creation (Psalm 19:1-4). The sun is the light. The moon reflects some light from the sun at night. This allows you to learn to discern both good and evil. It is critical for you to realize how these *two mysteries* were known from the beginning.

Adam and Eve chose The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. By doing so, they rejected God's goodness – The Tree of Life. You are now ready to read "*prophecy*" which "*is history – written in advance.*" This is necessary in order to resolve *these two mysteries* (one of God and the other of Satan).

# Chapter 1

## TRUTH IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS

In the daytime, when light is present, it is considered *to be good*. One can see and understand in the light. This is because you can see what you are doing and where you are going. *Darkness or night is the absence of good*. If the moon is shining with partial light, it can be good, evil or a combination of both. This truth was known by those in The Garden. That is why God made The Seventh Day *Holy*. It was a sign of God's *rest* when everything was very good.

Everything was Holy or perfect. How did they know this? Adam and Eve lived in God's Paradise and knew they could stay there, forever, if they ate from The Tree of Life. Then, Satan explained to them, partially, what God knew (Genesis 3:5).

### Satan's Con

Satan asked Eve if she could eat from *all of the trees* in The Garden. This question was intended to raise suspicion in her. Consequently, Eve said she could not eat from *The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil*. Satan explained how God knew what would happen when they ate from *the trees* of The Garden (specifi-

cally The Tree of Life). They believed they would become eternal and be like God, knowing *good* and *evil*. In short, they would be God's children, His Sons. *The True Gospel* was known from the beginning when the first couple lived with God. What happened after that?

### Cain's Lie

When Cain killed Abel and was ostracized from Eden, he went to The Land of Nod (a place of wandering in the wilderness away from God's property). God simply wasn't there. There is no way to know the ages of Cain or Abel (when Abel was killed). Adam and Eve could have had many children after Cain and Abel. God does not reveal this fact to you. However, you are told about the birth of Seth, one of their other children. The True Gospel of God's *rest* was known as The Kingdom of God. This is where God dwelt and rested in The Garden. The Garden offered Eternal Life.

Adam and Eve's children left home when they decided to be on their own. Upon leaving, they decided for themselves when to do *good* and when to do *evil*. Cain was afraid that his other kin would kill him because he had murdered a relative. That is why Lamech, who killed two individuals, felt that since Cain was forgiven, he should be forgiven, also. Lamech believed he should be forgiven 70 x 7. This was because he claimed the crime was in *self-defense*. East of Eden was The Land of Shinar where The Sumerians lived. Sumeria was the earliest known civilized empire.



(Read the book, *Satan's Image*). **Shinar, on The Mesopotamian Estuary, was near The Arabian Gulf. This is where The Tigris and Euphrates Rivers emptied. It was a marshy swamp area filled with low-lying land. Hunting provided the main source of food. In addition, many ravenous creatures (lions) lived there. It truly was a wilderness.**

**Cain moved from God's delightful property to live in Shinar. Cain was a liar and a murderer from the beginning just like Satan (Eve and even Adam followed Satan) (John 8:44). Satan speaks about his own unrighteousness and his followers and this pointed to Cain because he was very much like Satan. "*Cain said to the LORD, My punishment is greater than I can bear*" (Genesis 4:13). He believed he was a victim and blamed God for his sad state. He saw God as cruel and unforgiving.**

**Cain spent the rest of his life as *a human god* who fell from Paradise (Eden). This was when *the human gods* fought and, when victorious, had to be appeased. Cain was, therefore, accepted as *a god* and *a king* who was very powerful. He spent his whole life looking for *The Fountain of Life* in the wilderness. But, he failed and his life ended in death. (Read, *The Epic of Gilgamesh* for more information). **This was the state of affairs at the time of The Tower of Babel.****

## **Mystery Babylon**

**Why is "*Babylon*" defined as "*a great mystery*?" Whatever the reason, it is vital to realize why Jesus tells**

you to, “*Come out of her, my people*” (Revelation 18:4). Obviously, He is talking to The Seven Churches and The 144,000 Israelites with the angels. *The Book of Revelation* is written to *The Seven Churches* (Revelation 1:4). This Babylon is a great city which has made all the nations drunk with the wine of her fornication (Revelation 18:3). Why has this city made everyone *drunk*? To find the answers, you need to go back to *the original City of Babylon*. This “*City of Babylon*” is called “*Babel*” in *The Bible* and has been coined “*Babylon*.”

Why did God confuse the languages of those at The Tower of Babel and, then, separate them into different parts of the world? Babylon is defined as, “*And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let’s go down and there confound [confuse] their language, that they may not understand one another’s speech*” (Genesis 11:6-7).

This is your scriptural definition of how Babylon makes the inhabitants of the earth *drunk*. This is the end result when humans are left to themselves to decide *good* and *evil*. Babylon or human nature can affect not only individuals but entire cities. Babylon can be more than one city depending upon the area and the number of inhabitants as well as the period of time.

Babylon, The Great Whore, causes the world to be in chaos and becomes intoxicated. This is the end result

when mankind is left on its own without God. Only God knows what is *good* because He created everything. How did Babylon originate? Adam and Eve were *the genesis* of Babylon when they decided, for themselves, what was good and evil. How did this effect The Gentiles? “*Goy*” in Hebrew means “*a Gentile*” or “*without God.*”

### Held In Unrighteousness

Many believe Satan runs around *to and fro* trying to make you sin. Satan does not have that power. Satan is far more deceptive than that. He is *a deceiver* and he does it well. He cons people. That is his main job. It is his method of operation (*modus operandi*). How does Satan deceive humanity? He deceives you just as he deceived Eve. Satan could not do anything to Eve. All he did was take the truth and deceive her by using her own desires as bait. When Satan talked to her about *the trees* in The Garden, he didn't mention The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. He was telling her what God knew. It was Eve's *wants* and *desires* that caused her to sin.

At The Tower of Babel, you find the people were doing the same thing. Paul said, “*For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith, as it is written, The just shall live by faith*” (Romans 1:17). When God speaks His *word*, you should do what He asks of you. You never take away or add to The Word of God. In *faith*, you obey God. So, how do you end up in Babylon and sinning? “*For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness*

*of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness*” (Romans 1:18). “*The faithful,*” like Abraham, do exactly what God tells them to do. You do not modify what He wants you to perform. God hates it when humans take His truth and use it in an unrighteous or unjust way. They hold The Truth of God in *unrighteousness* when they decide what is *good* or *evil*. God is love (not hatred). When you use God’s truth unjustly (by doing harm), you misuse His *truth*. God will be furious. It hurts Him. *The faithful* do not misuse God’s *word* according to their own desires, as Eve did.

At The Tower of Babel, God saw those who were unfaithful. They would invent as many ways to worship God as their human imaginations could conceive. Nothing seemed to be restrained because they could devise almost anything and make it a reality. All their human desires were justified just like Cain’s. Paul said, “*And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient*” (Romans 1:28). “*Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations and their foolish heart was darkened*” (Romans 1:21). God refused to *teach* them and, then, Adam and Eve had to do *the work* themselves.

They refused to follow God’s *truth*, which they knew and understood. Consequently, they lost His *glorified light* so their hearts and minds remained in darkness. Wow! How was this done? They completely bypassed God and His *word*, even though they knew The One

True God Almighty was The Creator of all things. Instead, they did the following, “*And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man and to birds and four-footed beasts and creeping things*” (Romans 1:23). The Sumerians called God “*The SkyGod*” and, because God was in the heavens, they worshipped *the stars*. This is how *astrology was born*.

They made *the sun* into a god so they could worship it. Humans turned animals, trees and mountains into heroes. They were worshipped as *gods*. Everything in The Garden became a *god* (the trees, plants, animals), including Adam and Eve. Later, Satan, Cain and Abel were added to their list of *gods*. They virtually took The Truth of God and made it into all types of *unrighteousness*. This was the original Babylon (The Great Whore). The world has been drunk with The Whore’s *cup of wine* ever since. Throughout history, she has caused new heads to pop up with additional harlots. There are as many concepts of religion and versions of *the truth*, as there are human minds and thoughts. The world has become drunk by worshipping so many *gods*. This includes men and women of power and fame. It seems everyone and everything but The One True God is worshipped.

The world knows God and His truth, but they hold *the truth in the bonds of unrighteousness*. Too many are truly falling from the light to see and accept truth. They are in the abyss of darkness where there is no truth.

## CHAPTER 2

### GOD'S WORD – A MYSTERY

Why would a loving father make His *word a mystery*? *The Bible* is written in parables and uses numerous symbols that can cause confusion. Much of this stems from the fact that God allows Satan to deceive not only His people, but the whole world. This is truly a dichotomy, or is it?

#### Sin – Another Enemy

“*Two down – one to go*” is an old saying which can be used as a good example. God's *word is a mystery*. Satan is a deceiver and the final enemy is *the flesh* of every human being. God, at The Tower of Babel, declared human nature is the enemy of the world (Genesis 11:6-7). Individuals do not know *right* from *wrong* because there is no end to their imagination as to what is *good* or *evil*. With so many humans, the number of ideas are innumerable. That is the reason God had to confuse their languages and divide them. Each individual is *a subtle form of Babylon*. Every Christian must do all they can to seek *righteousness*. Who can say they know right from wrong? Babylon is a condition from which everyone must flee. God permits you to be troubled by these enemies. First, God allowed *The Bible* to be *a mystery*. Secondly, you must contend with Satan, The Deceiver. Thirdly and finally, you

must contend with your own flesh. Why would a *loving Father do this* and cause all these pitfalls?

### **Blindness For Your Good**

Let's use the following example. A caring Father might tell his child that they are too young to drive a car. The child might be physically mature enough to drive the family car. However, until a young person gets experience and is well trained, they should not drive a car. Because they don't have enough experience, they can kill or injure themselves and others. Amazingly, God always thinks, first and foremost, about your good (Hebrews 12:10-11). What did Christ say to The Pharisees concerning sin? Jesus said to them, "*If you were blind, you should have no sin: but now you say, We see; therefore your sin remains*" (John 9:41). This was God's answer. God makes His *word a mystery* and allows Satan to deceive you. You are not held responsible for your sins because of your *Babylonian* human nature. What a loving God!

### **The Sun, Moon And Stars**

Why did those at The Tower of Babel turn to Polytheism and forget The Creator, God Almighty? "*They were men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness*" (Romans 1:18). They desecrated *the truth* that they received. They gave their own interpretation about how *the gods* should be worshipped. *The Book of Revelation* explains how this way of worshipping God began. He, also, explained how other *human mini-gods* began. In the middle of *The Book of Revelation*, the



angel told John to seal the rest of the book (Revelation 10:4). “*And he [the angel] said to me, You must prophesy again before many peoples and nations and tongues and kings*” (Revelation 10:11). Then, God describes *the temple* and its measurements (Revelation 11). The court built for The Nation of Israel had specific dimensions which meant it only held a certain number of Israelites. The other court was made for all other nations (The Gentiles) and was left unmeasured. This is where future growth is explained (Revelation 11:1-2). This applies to a future *time-period of 42 months*.

The rest of Revelation 11 explains *The Two Witnesses of God* who will prophesy during these 3<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> years. They will be martyred and resurrected after 3<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> days and meet Christ upon His *return*. This is what *The Book of Revelation* is telling you. It begins with a story about a woman (Revelation 12:1). “*A woman*” in *The Book of Revelation* symbolizes “*a bride*” or “*a wife*.” The word “*Apocalypse*” in Greek means “*revelation*” or “*an unveiling*.” This unveiling is for *a bride* and a *future wedding feast* takes place when she is ready to become *The Wife of The Lamb* (Revelation 19:7-8). Besides this particular woman, there is another woman who is *a whore* (not a virgin). She is called, “*MYS-TERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH*” (Revelation 17:5). This woman proclaimed *the truth* and held it in *unrighteousness*. She is *full of abominations* because she martyrs all *The True Saints of Christ*. This woman originated at The Tower of Babel (*the original Babylon*). This adulterous woman wants to be *The Queen of Heaven* (Zechariah 5). The world



was *cursed* because of its wickedness. The Queen of Heaven (created by God) is the Mother of *all living*, The Queen Bee. This is a comparison to a Queen Bee in the hive. She is the mother of everyone in the hive. Eve is like The Queen Bee for homo sapiens.

You need to understand *exactly what truth* was known in The Garden of Eden. Enoch, representing *The Seventh Prophet* from Adam, preached about The Second Coming of Christ (Jude 14). Wow! *The Truth of The Gospel*, Jesus and His coming back to earth for His *bride*, was known from the beginning. The bride is the virgin as opposed to the whore who claims she will never be a widow or without a husband (Revelation 18:7). Of course not. She wasn't the legal wife because she was a whore (Revelation 18:7). "*And there appeared a great wonder [sign] in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun and the moon under her feet and upon her head a crown [tiara] of twelve stars*" (Revelation 12:1). This is very symbolic. You must let *the scriptures* clearly define the meaning of these symbols and then you will have *the truth* (which became unrighteousness at The Tower of Babel "*Babylon*"). (This First Head of Babylon is defined in the book, *Satan's Image*. This book leads you to understand the workings of this great whore in a modern Babylon).

## The Great Wonder

The "*wonder*" in heaven where this virgin woman appears is "*a sign*" in Greek. *This sign* is in the heavens of the solar system. You can see the stars when you gaze into the heavens. Specifically, this woman is di-

rectly involved with *the sun* and *the moon* (heavenly bodies like the stars). *The sun* and *other stars* are all *suns*, gloriously blazing in the farther heavens. The moons around the stars are probably offshoots of the sun, like the planets. These moons near *the stars* are held in *the orbit* (of the sun) by gravity. Any light on these moons comes from the sun. The moon is half light and half dark. It is similar to when God made the day, which is determined by light and darkness. In this context, you can learn the true definitions of the biblical meanings of Revelation 12:1.

### The Meaning Of The Stars

Who is this woman with the light from her garment shining like *the sun* above her head and *the moon* under her feet? *The crown* placed on her head has *twelve stars*. This woman is about to give birth to a child. But there is a serious problem. There is *a dragon with seven heads, ten horns and seven crowns upon his heads* (Revelation 12:1-3). This dragon is ready to kill her child. This is exactly what occurred to Mary, at the birth of Jesus, when she and Joseph had to flee from Herod to Egypt for safety (Matthew 2). King Herod plotted to kill all the baby boys aged two years and under. *This woman* was Mary giving birth to her son, Jesus.

In the beginning, Eve was *the mother of all creation*. When Satan deceived Eve, he became an enemy to her children. Eve was The Queen of Heaven. Her progeny in the future will be Christ, The Promised Seed (Genesis 3:15). All of these symbols appeared in the

stars. Revelation 12 tells you that human beings (like the angels) were manifested in the stars (astronomy). *The invisible things* of God were seen and known by *the creation* (Romans 1:20). This began astronomy – *the study of the heavenly signs*. It was *The Gospel* being preached (witnessed) in the darkness of the night sky. In Moses' day, before *The Bible* was written, *The Gospel* was preached by The Prophets. The Prophets, such as Enoch, understood the heavenly signs. The known world always looked to the sky to tell the stories of their ancestors. The Tower of Babel was built to study the stars. They created a zodiac as a heavenly outline. You will learn why and how astrology came from astronomy. What about *this sun* who clothed Mary, The Mother of Jesus? Jesus declares He is *the root* of the genealogy of King David. He is also *The Bright and Morning Star* (Revelation 22:16). What "*morning star*" is this?

Malachi 4:2 gives a prophecy about The Messiah who is none other than *the sun of righteousness*. *This sun* will allow Israel to grow to maturity. *The sun* symbolizes God, The Light Giver and His Son, Jesus. "*The sun*" is "*Christ*." This represents The Birth of Jesus by Mary, which was a miracle from God's Holy Spirit through *The Word of God*. The Word of God created all things in the beginning through God saying, "*Let there be light: and there was light...that it [light] was good*" (Genesis 1:3-4). *This Word became Christ in the flesh* (John 1:14). Mary was clothed by "*the sun*" when Christ was *The Word or God Almighty, Himself*.

Once Mary gave birth to Jesus, He became The Word

of God. Jesus was only a human being in the flesh. Notice, Jesus was The Son of Man and The Word of God. He was predestined to be a King and a Bridegroom. The sun and all the heavens declared God's plan. They were the handiwork, like a Bridegroom coming out of His chamber (heaven) to complete His purpose (Psalm 19:1-5). Wow! Christ comes out of The East, like *the rising of the sun*, for His Bride. He comes when The Bride is ready to become His Wife. He is The Bright and Morning (First) Star (Malachi 4:2). The woman is Mary at The Birth of Jesus. "*The sun*" is "*God, The Father.*" This was before Jesus (being flesh) was The Word of God who created everything. The Word of God (with the sun shining from The Father) comes out of His chamber (house) to marry His Royal Bride. Who is this bride?

*The stars*, themselves, preached *The Gospel* of Christ's birth as well as His Second Coming as *the groom*. "*The stars*" are "*the angels*" over each of God's Seven Churches (Revelation 1:20). Before Christ's First coming and death, His Bride was to be Israel (The Twelve Tribes). When Jesus came for His Bride, she (Israel) rejected Him (Revelation 2:21). Christ, then, turned to a nation more worthy than The Twelve Tribes of Israel to become His Bride (Matthew 21:43).

After Jesus died, the angels were responsible to care for The Twelve Tribes of Israel. *The angels* (the heavenly stars) watched over *The Seven Churches*. Angels were created to help God's people. As Christians climb the ladder to reach The Stature of Christ, the angels are there to help. This climb represents Ja-

cob's ladder (Genesis 28:11-22). Later, The New Bride included The Gentiles who were *grafted* into the olive tree (Christianity) (Romans 11). After the resurrection of Jesus, the angels symbolized Jacob's *ladder* (John 1:51). Now, The Gentiles are included as part of *The Seven Churches* along with The 144,000 Israelites as Christ's Bride and witnesses (Revelation 7 and Revelation 11). Mary will wear a crown because she is Royalty. Her lineage goes back to The High Priest, Aaron, of The Tribe of Levi. Historically, she was, also, from The House of David. Remember, her cousin Elizabeth was the wife of Zacharias, a priest. The entire family was from The Priesthood (Luke 1). Jesus, as The Word of God, began The House of David as *the root* long before David was born (Revelation 22:16). This woman was Mary, "*And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman [Mary] clothed with the sun [God, The Father and The Word filled Mary through The Holy Spirit, who became The Bridegroom in the flesh] and the moon [represents The Church who receives its light from the sun (Son)] under her feet and upon her head [Mary] a crown [royalty] of twelve stars [the twelve angels are over The Twelve Tribes of Israel and The Twelve Apostles]*" (Revelation 12:1).

Now, it is vital to define *the moon*. *A moon* has a brilliant light, but it is not a star. *The moon* is "*a dead, undeveloped planet.*" The moon came from *the sun* which represents God. The moon circles the earth, which in turn circles the sun. It receives its light from the sun but only on one side. The other half is in darkness. The moon is half light and half darkness. God keeps repeating "*the light is good.*" Darkness is the

absence of good. Humans, in the flesh, are half good and half evil. The moon is in the earth's (orbit) gravity, but it is not actually of the earth. Jesus said, "*I pray not that you should take them out of the world* [symbolically, the moon is not part of the world but is attached to the world by gravity – not in it], *but that you should keep them from the evil* [the earth's gravity is pulling the moon and is attached to the earth by that gravity]. *They are not of the world* [they don't belong in the world], *even as I am not of the world* [but keep them as a separate entity]" (John 17:15-16). Jesus prayed to The Father for The Christians who are in the world and should not be a part of its *evilness* or *darkness*. This will be scripturally proven in a later chapter.

"*The moon*" is "*the church*" receiving its lighted part from the sun which represents God. The Word of God became Christ. God, from *the beginning*, is The Alpha and includes Christ. *The gospel* was preached by The Prophets (like Enoch). It was, also, revealed in the stars of heaven as a great wonder known as the signs of prophecy. That is why it states, "*the testimony* [witness] *of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy*" (Revelation 19:10). Before Jesus, God's witnesses were The Prophets and the stars in heaven, along with the sun and the moon. God is too marvelous for words! He never leaves those who wonder, desire or want to know The Truth of God. God will always nourish you with *the truth*. After Jesus was resurrected, He, through God's Holy Spirit, tells you how prophecy was foretold by *the truth* (John 1:17). "*The truth*" is "*God's Word.*"

## CHAPTER 3

### THE MYSTERY OF BABYLON

God created all things by His *word*. *The Word of God* became *human* in the flesh. Symbolically, He is like *the sun* who gives *light to the moon and the earth*. Jesus was born as The Son of God and, also, as The Son of Man through Mary. Christ is compared to *the sun* because He is The Light of The World for all mankind. He is, also, The Morning Star from the genealogy of King David (John 1:4-5 and 9). God has many names and titles. Jesus, also, has many names and titles. Jesus, as *the sun* (Son), is to be a Bridegroom and bring Light to The World. Jesus came to this earth for His Bride (Israel) 2,000 years ago. Then, Satan tried to kill Him through the evilness of King Herod.

#### Dragon Of The Sea

Christ was born, grew to manhood, was crucified and is now The High Priest after The Order of Melchizedek. He sits at the right hand of God (Psalm 110:1 and Revelation 12:5). *The woman* who becomes *The Church of God* (*The Gentiles*) will be included as Christ's Bride because Israel rejected *the groom*. When The Twelve Tribes rejected Him, The Gentiles had their chance



to become **The Bride** (Matthew 21:43 and Romans 11). **She** (The Bride) is symbolized by *the moon*. **Suddenly, a Great Dragon appeared out of The Sea** (The Mediterranean). **He chased *the woman*** (part of The Church) who was protected by God while living in the wilderness (world). **As The Church grows spiritually, they are led by God's Holy Spirit. The rest of *The Church*, who remained faithful but only kept *The Ten Commandments* in The Letter, must go through Satan's persecution (being martyred) (Revelation 12:6-17).**

### **Satan Cast Out**

**Satan, along with one-third of the angels, battled against God and His angels. But Satan lost this war. Satan was cast out of heaven by God. He was the one who always accused God's people, much like a District Attorney (as he did with Job). Satan, after losing his position in heaven, knew he had but a short time to accomplish His goals. He was furious to the point of insanity. He acts like a roaring lion devouring anything in his path (Revelation 12:9-12 and I Peter 5:8). He will no longer be the deceptive accuser before The Throne of God. Rather, he becomes "*Diabolo, The Devil, The Destroyer.*" Now Satan, The Devil, holds "*the truth in unrighteousness*" by trying to destroy God's people. He does this by dividing His *people* into thousands of different denominations with thousands of doctrines to add to their confusion (I Corinthians 3).**

**Satan is The Deceiver and "*the destroyer of the truth.*" He tries to get The Churches of God to persecute and martyr each other over *doctrinal differences.* "*Divide***



*and conquer*” is Satan’s plan. From the time of his outcast from heaven, this was his method and will be till the very end. Satan does his job very well by tricking foolish or gullible people. *The Bible* calls them “*the unlearned*” (II Peter 3:16).

To accomplish this diabolical destructive purpose, Satan rides upon a great beast which comes *out of The Mediterranean Sea*. This Great Beast has a number “666,” which is The Number of a Man (Revelation 13:18). Three kingdoms have risen out of this sea: 1) Babylon, under Nebuchadnezzar, 2) Media-Persia, headed by Cyrus and 3) The Macedonia Empire ruled by Alexander, The Great. Each is depicted as a man (number 6 is depicted because man was created on The Sixth Day along with the animals). Each of these men, Nebuchadnezzar, Cyrus and Alexander, The Great, were part of *the animal kingdom*. *The Bible* depicts them as a lion, bear and leopard (666). A fourth beast comes out of this sea and is referred to as The Roman Government. It is different from the previous three beasts. This beast is a combination of all three: a lion, a bear and a leopard. It is the most ferocious of all and lasts as *an image* until Christ returns to restore The Kingdom of God. (Read, *Satan’s Image*).

These four governments denote The Great Image and represent The Idol of The World. The world worships This Great Image (Daniel 2). Babylon, under Nebuchadnezzar, was “*the head of gold*.” Nebuchadnezzar was the only one who recognized God as The Almighty God. The governments that followed did not begin to deteriorate until the arrival of The Fourth Beast. The

Roman Empire and The Caesars represented the harlots in place of God. The Roman government became the image (the idol of the world). They thought it was the best form of human government. This is exactly what seems to be transpiring today. The worship of this image of The Fourth Beast lasts to The End of Time. Everyone looks to this worldly system as The Savior or Messiah. They see it as the final human anti-Christ for their survival and it replaces God and The True Christ. (Read the book, *Satan's Image*).

This is Satan's plan! This Beast, as seen throughout history, has seven heads and ten horns. Upon these ten horns are ten crowns and upon the heads is the name "*blasphemy*" (Revelation 13:1). Another beast is a woman and is run by a religion. She rides this seven-headed beast which may look like a Lamb but blasphemes God (Revelation 12:3 and Revelation 13:11). This religious beast knows the truth but alters it with *unrighteousness*. Who is this beast? Christ will tell you as He gives His message to His *Seven Churches*.

### The Nicolaitanes

The angel tells John that the first of *The Seven Churches* is The Ephesus Church. This group is a *dedicated faithful church* but they lost Christ as their first love. How is this? The Nicolaitanes, with their deeds and works, were infiltrating this church (Revelation 2:6). Jesus hated their deeds just as The Apostles did. Who were these Nicolaitanes? "*Nicolaitane*" breaks down into two words, "*nicol*" and "*laity*." "*Nicol*" in Greek means "*to bind*" or "*conquer*." "*Laity*" is a

word pertaining to “*the common members*” or “*the laity*” in a church. So The Nicolaitanes bind, conquer and try to control church people. They dictate what *the church followers* must believe. The real commission or responsibility of the preaching ministry is to help Christians become perfect like Christ (Ephesians 4:11-15). Only Jesus, The Bridegroom was to be their first love as their Master or Husband. No human is to be your spiritual master. Truth is given through God’s Holy Spirit and not through any man. Christ warns you not to call any man Master or Father (Matthew 23:8-9). Only *a father* was to teach his children.

Paul warned against fighting or debating over every *wind of doctrine*. *Doctrine reveals a member’s personal spiritual understanding*. Picture a Christian climbing a ladder to reach The Stature of Christ. Doctrine shows how far up the ladder a Christian has climbed. That is why Paul wrote that believers should not judge another man’s servant (Romans 14:4). Christ is the only Master or Lord of The Churches of God. Through *scripture*, God (with His Holy Spirit) is able to help *the unlearned* (I John 2:27).

The phrase “*preaching ministry*” in Greek is “*diakonos*” meaning “*servants*.” That is why Jesus said, “*whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister* [the greatest servant]” (Mark 10:43). In order to be the greatest ruler, you have to be the greatest servant. They should be the ones doing the most for the people. The Ephesian Church was being attacked by The Nicolaitanes (Acts 20:28-30). The Apostle pleaded with *the church* to continue to walk *in the truth* (III John). Di-

otrephe was penetrating God's churches and forcing the people to follow him. If they didn't follow him, he kicked them out of The Church of Christ. *The Anchor Dictionary* defines the name "*Diotrephe*" in Greek as "*the friend of Zeus, The Master or Lord of all gods.*" Diotrephe belonged to The Nicolaitanes.

John talked about this when he came to that particular church. He was hopeful about straightening out this *Nicolaitane situation*. Who was this "*woman*" claiming to be a Christian but was really blaspheming God's church? This woman was *Babylon, The Great Whore* who is *The Mother of Harlots*. Every Christian "*religion*" claiming to be the only true church and mandating all believers to follow each and every doctrine (or they were kicked out) is a Nicolaitane (Revelation 2:6). This is quite clear! Debating, arguing, fighting, persecuting or even, in some cases, *killing* is not of God. *Competition* replaces love and is not God's way. God is *love* even to the death. *Baptism* is *the voluntary death of a person's flesh*. It is *an outward symbol of an inward change*. It is so simple and, yet, so profound!

When Christ returns to earth at The Seventh Trump, the battle between these two women (God's Church and Babylon, The Whore and her harlots) will continue (Revelation 13).

*The Book of Revelation* is sealed until The Seventh Trumpet sounds. Once *the trumpet* sounds, the battle between *light* and *dark* will end. The Truth of The Messiah will be established by *the light*. The darkness or *the mystery* will be removed. What takes place with

the sounding of *The Seventh Trumpet*? The answer begins with, “*But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, The Mystery of God should be finished, as he has declared to his servants the prophets*” (Revelation 10:7). When the world is no longer blind, the completion of *The Book of Revelation* will be unsealed, “*And he said to me, You must prophesy again before many peoples, nations, tongues and kings*” (Revelation 10:11).

## CHAPTER 4

### THE ONLY SIGN

Jesus said, *“An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of the prophet Jonah: For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the whale’s belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth”* (Matthew 12:39-40). What you need to remember is that this sign was only *for the unbelievers*. Only Jesus, The Messiah, would know what the three days and three nights were all about. This is *the message* to be investigated.

#### Days And Nights Defined

In both Hebrew and Greek, the word for “*day*” can mean “*one 24-hour day*” or “*1,000 years.*” Peter said, “*that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day*” (II Peter 3:8). Because of this truth, a day is not defined by hours but according to conditions. Christ is to come as “*a thief in the night*” (II Peter 3:10). Jesus returns during The End of Days (light) or when The World is in darkness. The Times of The Gentiles conclude with an impending World War. Now, you need to know when Christ died. That depends upon when the day began and when it ended. To discover the answer, you need to

know how God determines the day of The Messiah's death. Amazingly, Jesus gives you the answer, which will solve another part of the puzzle. Jesus describes a day and a night. When His friend, Lazarus, died, Christ told His Disciples He wanted to go to The Land of Judea first. They asked if He understood when He went there, He would be stoned. Jesus answered, "*Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbles not, because he sees the light of this world. But if a man walk in the night, he stumbles, because there is no light in him*" (John 11:9-10). Jesus solves the prophecy of "*the sign*" by explaining He was The Messiah.

Calculating a day doesn't involve *counting the number of hours* but determining whether or not there is *light and darkness*. Christ's statement is both *physical and spiritual*. That is why Jesus concluded there is no light in a person who keeps himself in darkness. That is what God said concerning how a day is to be determined (Genesis 1:3-5). A day has nothing to do with hours, but is determined by *light and darkness*. The day is good because a Christian can see in the light of day. At night, there is darkness and *an absence of goodness*. Jesus said *the sun* is the light of the world which allows the people to see (John 1:4-5). Light is *goodness or truth*. The moon (as the church) only sees a part of *the truth* because it is in half light and half darkness.

The Churches of God will know, only, a part of *the truth* (I Corinthians 13:9). God reveals *the truth* through His Holy Spirit when He allows you to see. Each Christian

is told to work out his/her own Salvation (Philippians 2). For this reason, Peter said *The Prophets of Old* did not have a sure Word of Prophecy like The Apostles. This is because Christ, The Light-Bringer of Truth, gave them (The Apostles) a more *sure* Word of Prophecy (II Peter 1:16-21). Notice how Peter called Christ "*The Day Star*" or "*Sun*" who will arise (be resurrected) in your heart. This is beautiful! Hopefully, you are beginning to understand the sign which Christ left as proof that He was The Messiah. This is "*Christ – In You*" (Colossians 1:27).

### The Twelve Hours

How can Jesus say there are twelve hours in a day when He told you day and night are not a matter of hours but whether it is light or dark? God's definition of "*day*" is "*the difference between light from the sun and its absence.*" That's it! So, why did He ask the question about twelve hours in the day? You are in for a wonderful surprise.

*The Bible* has chapters and verses because humans arranged it in that order. Originally, there were no chapters or verses in *The Bible*. There were no paragraphs or word divisions in the original version. They had to figure out the proper wording. In *The Old Testament*, they had to use pictures.

The Jews wanted to stone Jesus one winter at The Feast of Dedication when *the day* did not consist of twelve hours (John 10:22). Under Caesar, The Jews followed *Roman time*. The Roman days started *at dawn* in the



first hour. That is when the light *appeared*. The Roman day actually began at 12 midnight as it is today. Lazarus' death was only a week away and, at that time, the daylight lasted for twelve hours (John 11). Jesus said to His Disciples that this event occurred a long time ago when the days were short. Now, a new event would once again shorten the twelve-hour period (the hours before His death). This revelation stirred up The Rulers of The Jews.

### Lazarus Resurrected

Jesus purposely waited until His friend Lazarus was dead for four days. This was so no one could deny his death. This event took place about five months after they wanted to stone Him. The days (light) lasted a lot longer than in the past winter. This was The Passover Season, which was about one week before Lazarus died. Daylight lasted for twelve hours (as Jesus told His Disciples). Christ knew this was the last chance for The Jews to either accept or reject Him as The Bridegroom. This is the reason Lazarus died, "*This sickness is not to death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby*" (John 11:4). This was *prophecy* in action. Jesus was about to give *the sign* of His Messiahship. He had to give the sign to prove He was The Resurrection.

When Jesus went to Lazarus, He was told he was already dead and the *death aroma* had begun. Christ replied, "*Said I not to you, that, if you would believe, you should see the glory of God?*" (John 11:40). Jesus went into the place where Lazarus lay dead and said,

**“Lazarus, come forth”** and he was made alive (John 11:43). Christ reminded them earlier that He was **The Resurrection and The Life**. You will see how all this pointed to His Sign of **The Three Days and Three Nights** (His own resurrection). Read **John 10 and 11** thoroughly and pray about what you have read.

Once the people heard about Lazarus’ resurrection, word spread all over and the people believed Jesus, was **The Christ, The Messiah**. The Pharisees, when told about this, went to **The Chief Priest** and held a council meeting. What should they do? Here is what frightened them, **“If we let him alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation”** (John 11:48). His fate was sealed. He had to be killed. **“And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said to them...it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people and that the whole nation perish not”** (John 11:49-50). From that time, Jesus took precaution and no longer walked openly (John 11:54).

### **The Rejection**

With **The Passover** only six days away, a major prophetic event was about to take place. **Zechariah** gave a clear prophecy concerning **The Messiah’s coming** followed by the establishment of **God’s Rule**, **“Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, your King comes to you: he is just and has salvation; lowly and riding upon an ass and upon a colt the foal of an ass”** (Zechariah 9:9-10 and Matthew 21:4-5 have almost the exact wording). **Jesus was sup-**

posed to come once and install The Millennial Rule of God.

However, this could only take place if the people believed and accepted Christ and hailed Him as their King. Even His Disciples didn't grasp the meaning of this prophecy (John 12:16). The Romans certainly would have killed Him. Then, when Jesus was resurrected, He could have started The Kingdom of God. Even The High Priest and the rulers did not remember *this prophecy in The Book of Zechariah*. They plotted His death in spite of The Word of God. The Wedding Feast could have taken place, but Judah, as The 2<sup>1/2</sup> Tribes, rejected Christ, The Groom (Matthew 22:8-9). They plotted to kill The Messiah. Jesus replied, "*Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out*" (John 12:31).

A momentous event occurred. It is relevant to The Sign of Jonah which proves His Messiahship to the whole world, "*And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men to me*" (John 12:32). This refers to the whole world. Christ was announcing His coming death and resurrection to pay for the sins of the world. Moses' *serpent on the pole* was an example of healing for the whole world by paying for everyone's sins through the death of Jesus (Numbers 21:8). Christ was killed by the serpent (Satan) and then resurrected by God. (*The Bible has puzzle pieces of parables and a continuous array of metaphors*). Satan caused Christ's death, which made a resurrection possible.

*Satan was thrown out of heaven when Jesus died* (John

12:31). **Satan became much more than just a Deceiver. Christ, The Messiah, The Savior of The World, paid for all the sins of the world. His return was guaranteed, as well as God's Kingdom Rule. Satan knew he failed to stop Christ and was prepared to make his last attempt during The Last Days after Jesus died. Satan became "*Diabolo,*" "*The Devil,*" "*The Destroyer,*" "*roaming the world as a roaring lion, walking about, seeking whom he may devour*" (I Peter 5:8).**

**With Satan's wrath and rule, the world was blinded into believing Satan was *the god of this world* (II Corinthians 4:4). Satan, in full fury, is going after The Church of God and trying to deceive them, "*Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened to you*" (I Peter 4:12). Christians were persecuted to the point of martyrdom. You are about to discover how vital *the death* of Christ was to all mankind. With Satan as The Ruler of The World and Jesus dead, the world was left by itself to wander in the wilderness. The proof of The Sign of Jonah was at hand.**

## CHAPTER 5

### THE LAST DAYS

*The Book of Hebrews* begins by informing you that God spoke through The Prophets (Hebrews 1:1). The next verse makes a startling announcement, “*God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, Has in these last days spoken to us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory and the express image of his person and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high*” (Hebrews 1:1-3).

#### A Warning

Many think this bold statement is a mistake. How could *The Time of The Apostles*, also, be *The Last Days*? Some preachers say that The Apostles anticipated The Return of Christ in their day. This is not true. *The scripturally uninformed* have erroneously named dates for The Coming of The Messiah. How absurd is this? With God, a day can be a 1,000 years. The Hebrew and Greek languages define *a day* not by twelve hours, as Jesus warned, but by *light* and *dark* periods (John

11:9-10). The Resurrection of The Bride when The Messiah comes is not determined by hours in a day. There is no specific date, only *light* and *darkness*. The biblical reason behind Lazarus being dead for three twelve-hour days and nights was not a sign stating a certain number of hours. Rather, it was a sign stating that Jesus was The Resurrection. He was The Light of The World! No man knows the hour or the day when The Son of Man will return (Matthew 24:36).

You are about to learn something new. When Jesus comes back, it will not be determined by a certain time-period, but by *an event*. Wow! Before Jesus resurrected Lazarus, “*Jesus said to her [Martha], I am the resurrection and the life: he that believes in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever lives and believes in me shall never die. Believe you this?*” (John 11:25-26). This was declared right after Martha told Jesus that Lazarus would be resurrected in The Last Days. *The Book of Hebrews* tells how those were The Last Days (Hebrews 1:1-3). Then, Christ resurrected Lazarus by saying, “*Lazarus, come forth*” (John 11:43). Christ proved to Martha that He was The Resurrection. Truly, those days were *the beginning* of The Last Days.

What did Jesus do by *raising Lazarus*? This act points to The Return of Jesus as being a matter of faith. This is faith “*In Christ*” to believe and follow Him. When all this transpires, Jesus will return for His Bride (Revelation 19:7-9). The Groom *cannot return* until His Bride is ready to become His Wife. She must love Him as He loves her and prove she is willing to die for

**Him.** The Bride of Christ must be willing to die for Jesus. It is all a matter of *faith*. (Read the book, *Faith That Saves*). The Last Days must be explained to you so you can have a meaningful understanding.

### **Fasting And The Bridegroom**

As usual, The Pharisees tried to catch Jesus in a technical discrepancy regarding The Works of *The Law*. They asked, “*Why eat [why do you keep company] your Master with publicans and sinners?*” Christ answered, “*They that be whole, need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go you and learn what that means, I will have mercy and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance*” (Matthew 9:10-13).

Then, Christ was asked a perplexing question, “*Why do we and the Pharisees fast often but your disciples fast not?*” (Matthew 9:14). This was *the beginning* of The Last Days when Christ gave them this answer, “*Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn [repentant], as long as the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them and then shall they fast [mourn]*” (Matthew 9:15). They will fast because The Bridegroom is gone.

This is about The Last Days of Christ on earth. Jesus said, “*No man puts a piece of new cloth to an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up takes from the garment and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break and the wine runs out and the bottles perish: but they*



*put new wine into new bottles and both are preserved*" (Matthew 9:16-17). You never patch old garments with new cloth and you never, ever, put new wine into old wineskins. Wine can make you drunk if you drink too much and then you are in Babylon. You must choose to come out of Babylon.

Christ was supposed to come only once, but when He was rejected, a change had to be made. Jesus did not come in those Last Days to receive sacrifices as demanded by *The Law of Moses*. He came to give *grace, mercy and forgiveness*. There was to be no mourning, fasting or sacrifices. Now, there was a new way, with new wine skins and new wine, which did not need human works. *The Law of Moses* did not give grace (mercy); rather, it gave curses for every sinner (Deuteronomy 28). Those who repented and were baptized were ready to meet their Bridegroom. These were The Last Days. If they had accepted Christ and followed Him, The Marriage could have taken place. However, they were hard-headed and rejected their Bridegroom.

The Millennium should have taken place right after The Romans killed Jesus. He would have been resurrected and then The Wedding Announcement would have been sent out. Instead, it was the very leaders of Judah, with the people following, who had their Bridegroom killed. They all rejected The Bridegroom even though He was The Light of The World. When The Bride rejected Christ and had Him killed, a curse followed. *The Curse of The World* was about to take place (Zechariah 5:1-3). The final rejection of Christ was The Sign of Jonah (Malachi 4:6). Christ told them



the only physical sign of His Messiahship was that He was to be in the grave for three days and three nights. Then, He would be resurrected. This sign was meant for an evil and adulterous generation.

### The Resurrection

After Jesus was crucified and resurrected, *“It was Mary Magdalene and Joanna and Mary the mother of James and other women that were with them, which told these things [of Jesus resurrection] to the apostles. And their words seemed to them as idle tales and they believed them not”* (Luke 24:10-11). Then, Peter ran to the sepulchre and saw that Jesus was gone. Even he didn’t believe The Sign of Jonah. He pondered and wondered what it was all about.

Later, during the first day of the week, two of Jesus’ followers were on their way to a town called Emmaus. It was about 7½ miles away. Unknown to them, Jesus met them on the way and asked what the commotion was all about. They did not recognize Jesus and asked if He was a stranger. This is what they said, *“And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering said to him, Are you only a stranger in Jerusalem and has not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?”* (Luke 24:18). Then Christ asked, *“What things?”* (Luke 24:19). They told Him how Jesus was a Prophet, Mighty in Deed and Word before God and all the people. They told Him how He was delivered by The Rulers who had Him crucified. Then, they made a startling statement, *“But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and be-*

*side all this, to day is the third day since these things were done*” (Luke 24:21). What things happened by the time of this third day? They told Christ how a woman they knew surprised them early on the first day of the week when she went to the sepulchre and the angel said, “*He was alive.*” They looked and saw it was true (Luke 24:22-23). Then, Jesus revealed Himself and said they did not have faith and were slow to believe what they were told. He preached *the truth* of The Sign of Jonah (Luke 24:27). Even His Disciples and The Apostles didn’t have *the faith* to believe in His resurrection and grasp the significance of this sign. Wow! Going back through the three days, some thought Jesus died on Friday and was resurrected on Sunday. This being The Third Day, according to Roman time, means Friday to Sunday. A full three days and three nights (twelve hours) is Wednesday to Saturday afternoon.

Theologians have debated for centuries about the truth of Christ dying on a Friday. In Hebrew and Greek, the word “*day*” does not mean a twelve-hour day and night. The word “*days*” can mean “*parts of days* (time-wise).” How can three days and three nights start on Friday and end with a Sunday resurrection? Jesus clearly said The Sign of Jonah was three days and three nights. This was the only physical sign He left (Matthew 12:40). Therefore, it must be parts of three days and three nights. Friday night and Saturday night are only parts of two nights (not three days). To have a Friday death with a Sunday resurrection, the days had to have shorter periods of darkness and light – three days and three nights (at least in part).

***Days* are not determined by time but by darkness and light (Genesis 1:3-5). Daytime varies upon the earth going from the equator north or south. Even Jesus told about the winter when there are no hours of light in a day. Only in the spring does the amount of light and dark equalize. This is especially true in the area of Jerusalem. Finally, it is impossible, even with parts of days, to have three nights from Friday to Sunday morning at daybreak. Friday to Sunday are only two nights, no matter how masterful a mathematician you may be. Therefore, a Friday death is probably impossible. Christ had to die on a day other than Friday. Each step, scripturally, takes you closer to the proof of Christ's Messiahship. You will have more biblical proof as you continue to read.**

## CHAPTER 6

### A CHANGE OF TIME

During the third day, when these things were done, the people had very little to do with the issue of the three days and the three nights. The Jewish rulers had Jesus put to death and then on Sunday He was already gone. He was resurrected (Luke 24:20-21). That is the context of this event between *the resurrected* Jesus and the two travelers going to Emmaus. The third day on the road to Emmaus is Sunday, making his *death* on *Friday* possible. That isn't the point Christ taught.

#### Death And Life

The two travelers and Jesus discussed His death. Many witnessed Jesus being crucified and, then, found He had disappeared from the grave. There were serious questions about this. Did someone steal His body or was the angel telling the truth? The angel told the woman, "*He had risen from the dead*" (resurrected). As a result, Jesus was made known to the travelers as He preached about His *resurrection*.

He preached from *The Old Testament* texts beginning with The Prophets of Old, The Time of Moses and, eventually, The Prophets of His day. The travelers be-

lieved and, then, He departed (Luke 24:31). Remember, there were 500 *followers* who saw Him after He was resurrected (I Corinthians 15:6). So three days had passed since His death.

Many misunderstand this third day *statement* and believe He was crucified on Friday and resurrected on Sunday. However, this notion denies the critical factor of Him being in the heart of the earth for three nights (His death). If this were true, then Jesus would not have fulfilled the scriptures concerning the three days and three nights as a sign of His Messiahship. No matter how many parts of a day there were, there had to be three *light periods* and three *dark periods*. It does not matter whether they were full twelve-hour days and twelve-hour nights or not. Biblically, Christ had to die earlier than Friday in order to be your Messiah. *The truth* is no one knows. What is significant is that Christ is the light of the world which is greater than Jonah. Christ can give you Salvation. This is because the three days and three nights were *the only physical sign* He left as proof of His Messiahship. If this is not true, then all of The Gnostic *writings* that declare He never died and lived out His life could be true. How absurd can this be!

*The scriptures* have even greater meaning than three days and three nights. You are going to read about the factors regarding the day Christ died. Most of these factors concern how *time*, itself, was changed. This is additional evidence to prove He is your Savior. His death and resurrection must be precise and exact or else you might conclude that the sign He left

for you could not be true. Since Christ died on *a day* when *darkness* appeared at *noon* and lasted for the *next three hours*, we do not know.

### The Day Christ Died

An amazing event transpired on *the day* Jesus died. Biblically, a day can be twelve hours, a little less or a little more. That is why Peter told about God's *day* which can be one 24-hour day or 1,000 years (II Peter 3:8). *A day*, to God, is determined by light or darkness and not by hours. This is a vital point for you to always remember. God does not measure time like humans measure time in terms of seconds, hours, days, weeks, months and years. Rather, the counting is done by dark and light periods. God's *basic time-table* is determined by *light* and *darkness*. When there is light, day is good (Genesis 1:4). Jesus cannot return until it is night (evening). This is when the world is in darkness. This is a day of The Lord, when he intervenes.

*The sun is a biblical symbol* because Jesus personified The Light of The World (John 1:4,5 and 9 and Malachi 4:2). As long as the light (Christ) shines, men can see. If they are not in The Light of Christ, then they are blind and in darkness. In short, The Sign of Christ's Messiahship rests upon Christ being in the earth for three days and three nights – regardless of the actual physical time involved. To count back three days from the first day would be Saturday, Friday then Thursday. Since Thursday is the third day from Sunday morning, then the night before starts that day (Wednesday). So, at what point on Wednesday did Jesus die?

The Passover Day had twelve hours of daylight at that time. So, it had to be Wednesday when Jesus was crucified. Or was it? At what time did this occur (John 11)? God, through a special sign, changed daylight that day. Read the event, “*And when the sixth hour [12:00 Noon] was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour [3:00 P.M.]. And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying...My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?...And Jesus cried with a loud voice and gave up the ghost [spirit]*” (Mark 15:33-37). That particular Wednesday had only nine hours of daylight. Wednesday ended at 3:00 P.M. in the afternoon. Jesus died at *that exact time*. He had died in the afternoon when all the earth was in darkness.

When Sunday came, the stone had already been removed (while it was still dark) (John 20:1). When daylight came, Christ was *gone*. Maybe Jesus was not resurrected Sunday at dawn, because *The Bible* revealed He was already resurrected when it was still dark. The three days and three nights from Wednesday at 3:00 P.M. brings you to Saturday, which is The Seventh Day Weekly Sabbath. This could be when Jesus was resurrected. Christ did not rise early Sunday morning because He was already gone. He had already risen when the women came to the tomb. It was still dark (John 20:1). Jesus did not rise early Sunday morning as many believe. This is for a very good reason. God changed time on that Wednesday, but the effect implies something more. It shows Christ was *resurrected* Saturday afternoon. That is why His *resurrection* could not be on Sunday morning. At sunrise

on Sunday, He had already risen. He was raised the evening before. Wow! This should be a stunning surprise to most readers and, more so, all *Bible students*.

Why did God, The Father, change the time for Christ's death? Jesus said it is, "*An evil and adulterous generation seeking after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonah*" (Matthew 12:39). The world would never want the correct sign of Christ's death. Most scholars, ministers and many churches are in error regarding this vital point. You must learn the basic reason why the world has probably accepted the wrong time for Jesus' death. An evil and adulterous nation will misunderstand The Sign of Jonah. Days and nights are determined by *light* and *darkness* and not *hours*.

Christ told that generation exactly how they had been wrong. It was because they were adulterers and, therefore, evil. In order to understand, that generation had to seek The Sign of Jonah and not Christ's death. What did Jonah do? They should have known what happened to Jonah. Jonah repented and The Ninevites repented! Until you repent, you cannot understand The Sign of Jonah. After Jonah was in the great fish's belly for three days and three nights, he was taken to Nineveh. Jonah preached *the message of destruction* to the people and they repented. They believed what Jonah prophesied. Think of the implications. Now, *a greater* Prophet than Jonah was present, but they did not repent. Instead, they killed Him (Matthew 12:41). The generation in Jesus' day was more evil than those in Nineveh because they, also,



committed adultery. They broke the wedding vows they had given to The Bridegroom, Christ, by committing adultery with their lovers (Rome)!

Israel was married to Christ, The Bridegroom, but they rejected Him. Wow! Now, Jesus had to seek a more worthy Bride, so He went to The Gentiles (Matthew 21:43). Because of this criminal act by Israel, God had to hide *the truth* of Christ's death and resurrection. Until Israel truly repented, the only sign given to the world was *a false resurrection* on Sunday along with other theories. Most will not realize this is an error until Jesus *returns*. The world lost The True Light along with Christ. Since then, the world is wallowing in darkness. The Last Days have lasted for 2,000 years. As usual, Satan deceives even God's people, Israel, by holding *the truth in unrighteousness*. Whenever God begins to give His truth, Satan deceives Christians by taking that same truth and presenting it in *an unrighteous way* (Romans 1:18). Christ was resurrected on The Seventh Day Sabbath, which was on Saturday. Jesus will return to the earth to institute The Kingdom of God on The Sabbath (God's *rest*)! The Mystery of God will remain *a mystery* until everyone comes to repentance (II Peter 3). It is now being revealed but only to *true* Christians.

The Engagement Period of *The Converted Gentiles* and the restored Israelites heralds The Coming Wedding Feast to the entire world during The Millennium (Matthew 22). Everyone in the world will know The Truth of God. The Mystery of God will be revealed because Satan will be captive in God's *prison of dark-*

*ness* for 1,000 years (Revelation 20:2-3). Once you understand The Mystery of God concerning The Sign of Jonah, it unravels and magnifies The Truth of God's Plan. You have discovered how God allows Satan to cause deception. This will continue until every Christian becomes like a little child and is teachable by seeking a true change of mind (repentance) (I Corinthians 3). You must stop seeking your own righteousness and stop thinking you are right. Instead, you should be determined to learn more truth and not be limited by knowing only a part of it (I Corinthians 13:9). *Doctrine is a spiritual growth process. It entails doctrine upon doctrine; here a little, there a little like a learning child* (Isaiah 28).

Once *the truth* of The Sign of Jonah is understood, then God's *mystery* unfolds to reveal His Plan of Salvation from The Last Day right to The End of Days when Christ *returns*. The End of Days occurs when The World is in total darkness. There will be no light, only violence and evil, just as it was in Noah's Day (Genesis 6:5). Truly, these days will have *no light* or truth in them. The final Gentile rule will conclude with genocide. It is The Day of Darkness. It is The Day of The Lord (Joel 2:1-2). Jesus must return for His elect's sake, otherwise there would be no flesh saved alive. This is *the last days* beginning with Jesus death until *the end of days*.

## CHAPTER 7

### THE END OF TIME

With God there is *no time*. God gave mankind time as a reference point. This is so they could realize a vital truth. Mankind only has so much *time* to do whatever God intends for them to do. God is forever and, therefore, with God, *time* does not exist. *Time* was created to help man understand. Mankind must learn, eventually, that all life ends.

#### What Are The Last Days?

John wrote *The Book of Revelation* around 66 A.D. while *the temple* was still standing. Just as *the seven angels* were about to reveal *The Seven Last Trumpets*, John was told to seal the information. These instructions were contained in a very small book (Revelation 10). It was a small book because it only covered The Last Seven Trumpets. This was before The Seventh Seal was to be opened. When *The Seven Trumpets* were to sound, the book was to be opened. But all of a sudden, this process was halted. John was told, “*You must prophesy again before many peoples, nations, tongues and kings*” (Revelation 10:11). This was to be done before the blowing of The Last Seven Trumpets. When does this unsealing take place? “*And swear by him [the angel] that lives for ever and ever, who created heaven*

*and the things that therein are and the earth and the things that therein are and the sea and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer. But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he has declared to his servants the prophets”* (Revelation 10:6-7). Do you grasp what this angel said to John? *Think about it!* John, The Prophet in *The Book of Revelation*, will preach to the world again at The End of Time. John’s words reveal The Truth.

According to The Apostle John’s *words*, he thought Christ would return when he and the other Apostles were still alive (John 21:22). Human time ends at the blowing of The Seventh Trumpet when Christ *returns*. Then, *The Book of Revelation* will be opened and everyone will know The Truth of The Mystery of God. This is *the prophecy* that was revealed to The Prophets by Jesus. The angel told John what was in the small book. It concerned Jesus’ return to the earth on a white horse, “*And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said to me, See you do it not: I am your fellow servant and of your brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy*” (Revelation 19:10). In Greek, “*sundoulo*” conveys “*a togetherness of one purpose.*” The word, “*fellow servant*” applies to Christ as “*the bright and morning star*” (Revelation 22:9 and 22:16). Jesus is “*the Sun of righteousness*” (Malachi 4:2). You now understand how the word “*sun*” represents “*The Bridegroom*” and “*The Light of The World*” (John 1:4, 5, 7 and Psalm 19). Jesus is The Light Bringer for all who believe. In fact, He is *The Light* for everyone in

the world (John 1:8-9). The Mystery of God is “*Christ – In You*” (Colossians 1:27).

Christ is prophesied from Genesis to Revelation. The Word of God is Christ. He is Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end (Revelation 22:12-13). Christians and A Remnant of Israel will prophesy The Truth of The Mystery of God at The Time of The Seventh Trumpet. The words “*Christ – In You*” apply to *the converted*. The mystery is about you becoming like Christ. The word “*testimony*” or “*witness*” in Greek is “*marturia*” which denotes “*a martyr*” or one who witnesses Christ right to their death. Christians and some Israelites will either live their lives like Jesus, or they will go through persecution and martyrdom. They will *learn to love Christ*. They must really love Jesus and be willing to die for Him. That’s what it’s all about. It is all about God wanting The Bride to love The Groom, Christ as He loved her by dying for her. Either way, by The Time of The Seventh Trump, God’s two witnesses (The Christian Gentiles and The Remnant of Israel) will testify about *Christ*. That is The Mystery of God! This is “*Christ – In You*” (Colossians 1:27). At the occurrence of The Seventh Trump, *time* itself will stop. This is *human time* and not God’s time. There is a big difference. Time with God can be an hour, a week, a month, a year or a 1,000 years (II Peter 3:8). It matters not to God. Human time does not exist with God. The *elderly feeble ones* who don’t know what day it is should take comfort because God doesn’t care about what day it is either. God’s *plan* is ruled by *a condition*. Whether humans live to be 1,000 years, 120 years or 70 years of age, it matters not to

God. This is because, with God, there is no human time, but only *light* and *darkness*. God is *eternal* so *no time exists*. There is only light and darkness. “*Darkness*” is “*the lack of goodness*” (light) (Genesis 1:4). Remember, God is only *light* and “*in him is no darkness at all*” (I John 1:5). You must prove, *biblically*, the difference between The Last Days and The End of Days to come. It must be imbedded in your heart. Your Eternal Life depends on it.

### When Christ Died

When Jesus was crucified, there were men dying on either side of Him. One blasphemed Christ and the other said in response, “*Do not you fear God, seeing you are in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man has done nothing amiss. And he said to Jesus, Lord, remember me when you come into your kingdom. And Jesus said to him, Verily I say to you, today shall you be with me in paradise*” (Luke 23:40-43). How could this be? Well, this man had repented. He understood The Sign of Jonah. Jesus, for three days and three nights, had to be in His sepulchre. Christ would not be in The Kingdom of God or Paradise for another forty days after His *resurrection*. Jesus was dead for three days and three nights just like *the men*. Some believe this text is a mistranslation and should read, “*I tell you this, today, you shall be with me in Paradise.*” But it isn’t to be understood that way. The original translation is correct. That “*day,*” Jesus knew the man next to Him *believed* and, so, he was considered to be a Christian (like you). So he, as with other true Christians at The

End Day, will be resurrected. Martha told Jesus that she knew Lazarus, her brother, would be resurrected on The Last Day. What Martha did not know was that Christ was, literally, The Last Day of *light* or *truth*. So He was able to resurrect her brother on that same day (John 11:24). How could this be The Last Day? Jesus rode into Jerusalem and the people acknowledged Him as The Messiah. However, The Pharisees were worried and feared The Leaders of Rome. Christ knew it was His time to be *glorified*. God, The Father, said, “*I have both glorified it [you] and will glorify it [you] again. The people therefore, that stood by and heard it, said that it thundered: [while] others said, An angel spoke to him*” (John 12:28-29).

This is why Jesus told the repentant criminal who was dying with Him that he was already *considered* to be in Paradise on that day, “*Verily, verily, I say to you, He that hears my word and believes on him that sent me, has everlasting life and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death to life*” (John 5:24). That man, when he died that day, was already in God’s *rest* or Paradise. He would be resurrected at The End of Days which is The Second Resurrection (John 5:29). This context of the man being in Paradise that day (on his day of death) directly impacts The Sign of Jonah. When he awakens from his death, he will have Eternal Life. What did Jesus declare following God’s glorification statement about Him? How does God *glorify* His Son? “*Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince [Satan] of this world be cast out. And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men to me*” (John 12:31-32). The serpent’s pole created by



Moses was *a type of Christ dying for your sins*. Jesus was signifying what type of death He would experience (John 12:33). Satan becomes The Devil, who is a destroyer like “*a roaring lion*” (I Peter 5:8).

In these Last Days at The End of Time, there will be a world judgment which will conclude with The White Throne Judgment. That is why Satan is *mad* and has become such *a destroyer*. Satan’s wicked (flying) roll is ready to descend upon the whole world as prophesied (Zechariah 5:1-3 and Malachi 4:6). Satan no longer has access to God’s *throne* like he did in The Days of Job. From this time forward, Satan is *the god of this world*. He attempts to blind God’s people (if they allow it). Satan is more than a Deceiver and has become The Devil or The Destroyer. Judgment has come to the earth and, especially, to God’s people (I Peter 4:12). That is why Jesus said, if it were possible, *the very elect* would be deceived (Matthew 24:24).

Jesus was rejected by His Bride, Israel (they ran after another lover [Rome] to commit adultery), so He had to reject them for a more worthy nation (Matthew 21:43). He told them how He, first, had to die and, afterwards, He would be *glorified*. Here is what He told them, “*Yet a little while is the light [Christ] with you. Walk while you have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walks in darkness knows not where he goes. While you have light [Christ], believe in the light, that you may be children of the light*” (John 12:35-36). Jesus was describing The Last Days. Satan rules in darkness while Christ, The Light, has gone to heaven to sit beside His Father’s *throne*. Satan becomes *the*



*god of this world, as a destroyer and no longer as an accuser* (II Corinthians 4:4). **The Last Days or *the last of the light* were over. The world lives in darkness just like when The Apostles knew they were living in The Last Days. This was The World's Time of Judgment. The Time of Jacob's troubles continues (Jeremiah 30). All you will need are the witnesses at The End of Days (The White Throne Judgment) (John 12:31). Until Jesus returns at The End of Days or the end of darkness, Satan curses the world. Satan, from this time, holds *the truth in unrighteousness* just as he did with Eve in The Garden of Eden. Wow!**

**Jesus concludes His commentary, “*These things I have spoken to you, that in me you might have peace. In the world you shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world*” (John 16:33). Israel's *time of trouble* is to continue and the whole world is under a curse of wickedness until The End of Days. The Last Days begin with no light and will prevail until Jesus returns at The End of Days (of darkness) to be “*the bright and morning star*” (Revelation 22:16).**

## CHAPTER 8

### DARKNESS DESCENDS

God is *eternal*. With God, *time* does not exist. God created *time* when He laid out the heavens with the stars and the galaxies. The universe is a temporary and tenuous system that will change under the dominion of The New Heaven and The New Earth. The concept of *time* was given to mankind to discern *good* from *evil* (light from darkness) (Genesis 1:14-18). This *artificial reality* set the seasons and allowed man to judge his own mortal lifespan (Genesis 1:18).

#### Christ – The Last Days

You are coming closer to grasping *the scriptural meaning* of the texts which prove Jesus was The Messiah through The Sign of Jonah. Christ was dead for three days and three nights. However, these three days and three nights were not based on a twelve-hour day or a twelve-hour time-frame. “*And when the sixth hour [12:00 noon] was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour [3:00 P.M.]. And at the ninth hour [3:00 P.M.] Jesus cried with a loud voice...and gave up the ghost [spirit]. And the veil of the temple was rent in twain [two pieces] from the top to the bottom*” (Mark 15:33-38). “*And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into your hands I commend*

*my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost [his spirit]*” (Luke 23:46). That ended at 3:00 P.M. in the afternoon. At that time, Jesus died. Daylight on that Wednesday or Friday was not a normal twelve-hours, but instead it only lasted for nine hours. The night lasted from 3:00 P.M. Wednesday/Friday till daylight Thursday/Saturday morning. That night was fifteen hours in length. *The Last Days* had begun. The Last Days of Light started and will end at The End of Days. There will be no light or truth in the world except for God’s two witnesses (The Remnant of Israel and the converted Gentiles who have repented). When you count Wednesday night, Thursday night and Friday night, you have three nights. So Jesus was resurrected on The Sabbath Day. It was God’s *rest*. The Sabbath Day began at 3:00 P.M. Saturday afternoon. That is why you must examine when Mary Magdalene and the other Mary came, “*In the end of The Sabbath as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week [Sunday]*” (Matthew 28:1). Jesus had already risen (Matthew 28). The events of what transpired were explained to the two women when they were told by the angels that Jesus had risen and was no longer there. Christ’s death and resurrection should not be counted by three 24-hour days, but by *light* and *darkness*.

When the two women came, it was still dark. They could see *the sun* beginning to reflect upon the horizon. Christ had already risen (John 20:1). *Jesus did not necessarily rise on Sunday morning*. Jesus might not return at dawn because He is *the light bringer*, The Morning Star (Revelation 22:16). Jesus must return at night when it is dark. He is *The Day Bringer*. He is

*the bright and morning star* and begins a new day. The world will be in darkness. That is why Jesus said He would return at night. Christ's predicts His coming in *the light of morning* but that *day will be in darkness* (Matthew 24:27, 29-30). When Jesus returns, His Bride must have their lamps lit (Matthew 25). *The brightness, like the sun, will light the sky as a new day.* God's day begins with the dawning of *the day*. Human time begins at night. That day is *a day of light coming to light the darkness.*

When Jesus died at 3:00 P.M. in the afternoon, it was the beginning of The Last Days. Jesus told you to walk in His *light* as long as He was upon the earth. Then Jesus said, when He was gone, that darkness would again come upon you. This darkness would not allow you to know where you are going (John 12:35). When Jesus returns on The Day of The Lord, the world will be in darkness (Joel 2:1-2). How clear and simple can this be? The day Jesus died (2,000 years ago) was *the beginning* of The Last Days. These are The Last Days because Jesus departed from the earth. Satan has been cast out of heaven and, as a roaring lion, creeps around as *the god of this world*. He specifically goes after God's people, who are The Remnants of Israel and the true Christians. Satan wants to destroy *the two witnesses* so they cannot testify at The White Throne Judgment. These Last Days are filled with persecution, martyrdom and tribulation for God's people. These individuals are Christians with God's Holy Spirit. Being in the flesh (like the moon), they are partly in the light and partly in darkness. They receive this light from *the sun*, which is Jesus and His

Holy Spirit. God's people who do not have His Holy Spirit are not led to *the truth*. They are in total darkness along with the rest of the world (in Babylon).

### Days And Years

The Apostle Peter makes sense of it all. God, being *eternal*, has no *time-frame* whether it be one day or a 1,000 years (II Peter 3:8). The Sign of Jonah begins to take on a new meaning. It isn't how many hours Jesus was dead that counts (The Sign of Jonah). What matters is when a certain condition or goal is reached. God's days and nights vary according to light and darkness. *Prophecy* occurs through *light* and *darkness*. It is not a matter of hours but of light and darkness. If you are in the light, then you are growing in God's *truth*. If not, then you are in darkness and have no idea what is right and true. "*Darkness*" is "*a lie*" and "*light*" is "*the truth*" (very good). Now, how in these Last Days, without truth in the world, can anyone receive *the light of goodness*?

### A State Of Mind

The wilderness is the world and, at the end of Christ's life on earth, darkness began as The Last Days (2,000 years) without light. Satan is *the god* who blinds the world and seeks to destroy God's people.

Now, Christians become pilgrims or sojourners in this world by trusting God for *the truth* to lead them. This is exactly what God did with Israel for forty years in *the wilderness*. The wilderness, with no light, is a time

of testing and trial. This darkness proves your faith to yourself and to God. Jesus was tested by Satan for forty days without food, and you, also, are in your forty-year trial of testing.

Peter gives you the answer which proves Jesus is The Messiah through The Sign of Jonah. The Mystery of God is solved, "*The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is long suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance*" (II Peter 3:9). Those who have not repented are *in the wilderness of this world*. There is no light, only darkness. Good is absent. Christians and The Remnant of Israel are being tried and tested while the ungodly must, yet, come to repentance (Romans 11). The Mystery of God is to have "*Christ – In You*" (Colossians 1:27). He is "*the light of men*" (John 1:4). He is *the hope* for everyone to receive God's *glory and goodness*.

There are *biblical clues of truth* which resolve The Sign of Jonah (Jesus is The Messiah). Christ tells you the answer. Jesus told The Pharisees that only an evil and adulterous generation would seek *a sign*. He described how Satan deceives, clouds and devours *the truth* in order to deceive everyone that he can. Only Christ can give you the solution.

Jesus had to die for the sins of His Bride. Israel rejected Him and sought another lover – which was Rome. By dying, Christ's marriage to Israel was dissolved. When He returns a second time, He will save the world from complete *annihilation*. His death al-

lows Him to marry Israel when He returns. Here is what He said, “*For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the whale’s belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and, behold, a greater than Jonah is here*” (Matthew 12:40-41). There it is! Jonah got The Ninevites to repent. Jesus is greater and, therefore, He is The Light of The World. He will give light to every man in it (John 1:9). Christ came to Save The World, not just The City of Nineveh (I John 4:14).

It isn’t the number of hours in a day that is *the sign* (remember, at times, winter has shorter periods of light). If you are “*In Christ*,” you can be *the light of the world*. “*Christ – In You*” is the truth and the proof that Jesus is The Messiah (Colossians 1:27). Christians must witness Christ (the light) now and later, as witnesses, judge *the angels* at The White Throne Judgment (I Corinthians 6:2-3). Paul reveals The Mystery of God, “*In whom [Christ] are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge*” (Colossians 2:3). Wow! Christ is The Messiah because He is “*In You*” as your Savior. It is by your faith “*In Christ*” that truth is revealed to you (John 1:17). That *light* must return at The End of Days to give light to the rest of the world. Until then, Christians should witness Christ even to their own death, if need be, just as He died for you!

## CHAPTER 9

### DARKNESS ENDS

**The Last Day of Light** was when Christ died. When He was resurrected and went to be with His Father in heaven, darkness began to cover the earth. The Bride rejected The Groom and committed adultery with Rome (her lover). The Last Days began in darkness when Christ was resurrected.

#### The Shining Moon

Those days were known as Israel's Time of Trouble. The only light came from the moon as *reduced light* (from the sun reflecting upon it). The "moon" is a symbol for "*The Churches of God.*" It was created to shine as a witness to the world. The moon, also, includes The Remnant of Israel. Satan, The Deceiver and The Destroyer, loves the darkness and is relentless against The Churches of God and The Remnant of Israel. To help His Bride, Jesus, The Groom, gives The Holy Spirit to guide them while they are in various levels of darkness. That is why Christ told *the church* to come out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4).

This is the only source of light in the world until The Groom returns for His Bride. *The Song of Solomon* depicts the story of a virgin searching for her lover (Christ).



## The Menorah

**The Golden Candlesticks are in The Holy Place. The Olive Trees, one on each side of the bowl, feed The Holy Oil (The Holy Spirit) to The Candlestick which keeps the seven candles burning (Revelation 1 and Zechariah 4:2-3 explains these “candlesticks”). As long as the candles have sufficient oil, there is light and truth in the world of darkness. The Time of Israel’s Trouble is at hand and the cursed world is on its own without Christ. Read the condition of God’s Seven Holy Candles (Churches – The Menorah) at the end of The First Century (Revelation 2 and 3).**

*The Seven Churches* were in chaos and in Babylon. Some were spiritually rich like The Smyrna Church, while others were being martyred. Others barely knew any truth because so much was mixed with pagan beliefs. Others were so pompous they believed they had *the only truth*. Others were merely *social clubs*; they were so busy doing charity works that they forgot to witness their first love (Christ). Satan was doing his job very well. Christ warned His two *witnesses* to come out of The Babylonian System (of darkness) (Revelation 18:4).

Satan had infiltrated not only The Jews but all the religions in the world. Rome (the fourth beast in Daniel 2) took over the world with The Christians who had succumbed to Satan’s tricks. When the final eighth Head of The Beast fell, its image prevailed as *a false Kingdom of God on earth*. Satan filled the world with lies by *holding the truth in unrighteousness* (Romans 1:18).

**Satan was a murderer and a liar from the very beginning** (John 8:44). (Read the book, *The Eighth Head Of The Beast*). **In short, the world was in total darkness.**

### **Dark Ages – To The Age Of Reason**

**While Rome ruled, there was relative peace throughout the world. Some Caesars, who thought they were *gods* or *saviors*, were hailed as “*mini gods*.” They were types of The Heads of The Seven Beasts or anti-Christis who were supposed to be *peace bringers*. Instead of *peace bringers*, they were Harlots. (Read the book, *Revelation Uncovered*).**

**When Judah fell to Titus in 70 A.D., The Emperor was hailed as “*the savior of the world*.” Constantine, in 325 A.D., at The Council of Nicea, consumed The Christian Church. Finally, Justinian, as The Eighth Head of The Beast, made the image of The Eighth Head known throughout the world. The Dark Ages were to follow. Without The Roman Empire to sustain world peace (by force), Europe and The East plummeted into chaos. Darkness prevailed worldwide. The world, The West, The East, The North and The South, was in disarray. *Self survival* became mankind’s only motivation. There was no central system for protection and no sanitation for good health. Disease, sickness and self-preservation were the reasons most individuals sought the kind of leaders they wanted. The Dark Ages had begun. It truly was *survival of the fittest*. Some individuals became slaves while others agreed to sell family members as slaves so the family could survive.**

**Religion** (Greek Orthodoxy and Roman Catholicism) was a source of comfort and compliance. Every human idea born out of Babylon was turned into one religion or another. This was promoted by the supposed “*holy men*” in nations around the world. All *the harlots of the beast* fought to give true answers to *life’s difficulties*. In Arabia, The Islamic Faith of *One God* exploded around the world in 600 A.D. and continued for hundreds of years.

The Bubonic plague ignited in Justinian’s day. The plague (900-1300 A.D.) destroyed almost all of Europe. During this time, The Mongols were on a march for world conquest led by The Kahns. The Old Roman Empire completely collapsed by 800 A.D. At this time, Catholicism became Europe’s source of unity. The Catholic Church claimed to inherit The Roman Government upon the death of Constantine because they had his Last Will and Testament. Heroes came upon the scene as offshoots of The Caesars of Rome. They were tyrants like Charlemagne, Napoleon and Hitler. The Catholic Church, as the spiritual head, crowned them as protectors or saviors of Old Rome. They maintained the same image or system.

Nobles or blue bloods, such as dukes, princes and kings, became sub-saviors with vassals, principalities and the resulting serfdom. The Khazars, Edomites and Turks from The Byzantium Kingdom conquered The Slavic Nations, who became their slaves. They were anti-Christian and fought against Orthodoxy which was protected by The Russians from The Rus. In about 900 A.D., Prince Vladimier from Scandinavia made Kiev the capital of

**The Rus.** This was *the genesis* of The Russian Empire. He visited Constantinople and enjoined all of Russia to become part of The Russian-Greek Orthodox Church.

## **The Renaissance**

**Governments began to form, taxes were collected and the nobility emerged. Numerous heroes from the old nobility formed their nations and kingdoms. The rebirth of Europe (The Renaissance) was underway. Civilization began to reappear and the darkness seemed to end. The noble élite supplied all human needs, just as they do today.**

**Germany and England (under The Franks of France) spawned into great nations. Others formed principalities and smaller nations. Religion became an issue. The hundred years' war and the thirty years' war ensued. Independent nations fought for the control of their people and their *own brand* of Christianity. Inventions like the printing press aided international communication. Later, *independent thinking* exploded with The Internet.**

**The Renaissance was *a worldwide reformation* of independent thinking. Babylon, expressing itself through individual human nature, spawned many different worldwide religions.**

**Between 1400 and 1600 A.D., the number of *religious denominations* multiplied. Martin Luther was the catalyst for European Protestantism. Consequently, The**

Catholic Church, the only primary religious power, was weakened. The East was dominated by Russian Orthodoxy and The Far East was dominated by Islam. China and other Orientals followed the philosophies of Confucius and Buddha.

### The Age Of Reason

In order to preserve Catholicism, The Country of Italy created *The University System*. Initially, colleges gained notoriety as the source for education in religious studies. However, this began only for the élite. It was known as The Age of Reason. Over many decades, religion lost out and was replaced by science and human logic with mathematical probabilities. Progressivism or secularism was here to stay. Evolution, with *the notion of existence being an accident*, replaced *creation as a first cause*. Science replaced *philosophical studies* as the process for determining truth. Philosophy (the study of life) could not be *mathematically* explained. The process of turning guesses and hypotheses into theories and probabilities became their only avenue to find *truth*.

*Science* replaced God because *human guesses* seemed to become *the truth* with each repetition. This is mental conditioning. When a lie is told often enough, it becomes *an accepted and acknowledged truth*. On the other hand, religion was predicated upon *faith*. Unfortunately, Science, with only *probabilities* as its creditability, seemed to take hold, which is blind faith because it depends upon whose guess is accepted as Science even though it could be false (I Timothy 6:20-21).

## Israel's Time Of Trouble

After 70 years in captivity in Babylon under Nebuchadnezzar and The Medio-Persian Empire, Cyrus took control of The Babylonian Empire. Because of The Prophet Daniel and his prayer, God was ready to restore Israel and bring peace to His people (Isaiah 40). A Savior (the branch) was to overthrow World-wide Gentile Rule just as Zechariah prophesied. As Savior, He would restore what had been lost (Matthew 18:11). The Kingdom of God's rule, known as The Millennium, could have started at that time. Under Cyrus, The Jews were allowed to return to Jerusalem and rebuild the temple. This restoration wasn't an easy time.

God called this period "*Israel's Time of Trouble.*" This will last until Shiloh comes (Genesis 49:10). The Messiah (The Branch) was to restore God's people to The Promised Land. This event was to take place when Herod, an Edomite, completed *the temple*. Jesus, as The Bridegroom, was The Messiah. Jesus could have restored Israel if they had accepted Him as The Groom. Then, He would have restored them to The Temple of God. However, because they rejected Him and had Him killed (in Rome), the curse upon the world continued. Israel's Time of Trouble will continue until The End of Time (Daniel 12).

## Babylon In Full Bloom

Babylon, The Great Whore, who makes the whole world drunk and confused, will expand till The End

of Days. Just as God feared at The Tower of Babel, mankind was able to unite worldwide. That period was known as “*globalization*.” They were able to do almost anything without restraint. Anything the nations could imagine was possible. Babylon (human logic), without God or His Holy Spirit, is free to conjure up anything they want to imagine. Mankind made themselves into *mini-gods* by deciding good and evil on their own (Romans 1:23). The Tree of Life will once again be restored. The truth is clear. God has told you that no one knows what is *right* or *wrong*. God, however, can lead you to righteousness.

Jesus forecasted a curse upon the world. Zechariah labeled the sins of the world as “*wickedness*” (Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21). This curse will culminate at The End of The World or The End of Days. Famine, pestilence, world catastrophes, wars and rumors of wars continue into The End of Days. Religion is *the genesis* of it all. The Babylonian religion is the culprit and at The End of Days, *the beast* will turn upon the whore who has been deceiving the whole world. At The End of Days, the world blames *religion* for their troubles and attacks (Armageddon) (Zechariah 14). Mankind needs all *the assets in this world* to survive. These assets are in jeopardy, which will negatively affect the survival of mankind. (Read the book, *What’s It All About*).

## CHAPTER 10

# THE BRIGHT AND MORNING STAR

***Darkness, with all of its evil, is about to end. True world peace is on the horizon. The End of Days or the end of global darkness is near. The restoration of The True Light of Christ (the light of the world) is about to take place. The Time of Jacob's Trouble will be completed.***

### **Gentile's Time Will Be Fulfilled**

**Some misunderstand The Times Of The Gentiles. Too many scholars have *theological debates* regarding the dates for this time-period. The Fall of Jerusalem occurred in 586 B.C. under Nebuchadnezzar and lasts until The Time of Christ's return. Jesus came about 2,000 years ago and He will return when The Gentiles' Rule ends. It is one of *the signs* that God's *people* should watch for (Luke 21:24). The Gentiles' Rule will end just before they commit *genocide*. If their rule doesn't end, all mankind will be destroyed.**

### **Times Of Trouble**

**When The Jews are allowed to return to Jerusalem by a king's decree, they will build *the walls* in troublesome times (Daniel 9:25). The Prophet tells you that after 70 years of exile in Babylon, God will have mercy**



upon Jerusalem and Judah (Zechariah 1:12). Later, the future daughter of Jerusalem will sing with joy (Zechariah 2:10-11). It is a time when many nations shall be gathered together. There will come a time when God will dwell in their midst. After The End of Days, God will be with men (Revelation 21:3). It is Christ, *The Branch*, who delivers Jerusalem (Zechariah 3). The angel informs Zechariah that Zerubbabel will lay *the foundation for the temple* (Zechariah 4). Then, the chapter ends with God's Two Olive Trees as His *anointed ones* (Judah and Israel – God's two witnesses).

When *The Branch* returns, God's two *witnesses* will meet The Bridegroom. Israel and Judah will be restored. *The temple* was not completed until King Herod's day when Jesus came in the flesh as The Light of The World (John 1:4-9). Up to this time, Jerusalem had troublesome times. A roll or a scroll appeared which revealed the whole world was cursed (because of their wickedness) (Zechariah 5). This curse continued after Jesus died (Zechariah 5:3,11 and 18 and Malachi 4:6). When The End of Days are over, Jesus will return and complete God's *temple*. Christ (King of Kings) will become a Priest for the world and restore world peace (Daniel 12). The Millennium will begin and The Wedding Feast will be announced (Revelation 20).

You are, indeed, blessed so now you can know the future. Before The Day of The Lord, when all nations (The World) gather at Armageddon, Babylon, The Whore, will be attacked and ravished (Zechariah 14 and Genesis 10:5). Jerusalem will fall to the advancing

military but will, finally, be *saved* by Christ (Revelation 22:16). A vital prophecy was given which covers the state of Jerusalem until The Return of The Messiah. The Messiah will come to restore Jerusalem as *the capitol of the world* during The Millennium. “*Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling to all the people round about, when they shall be in the siege both against Judah and against Jerusalem. And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth [will] be gathered together against it*” (Zechariah 12:2-3). Wow! Do you understand this prophecy and what Zechariah is telling you? From the time of *the laying of the foundation for the temple* (while Judah was in Babylon until The End of Days), Jerusalem has been and still is in troublesome times. This is the same condition you find in contemporary Jerusalem today. The whole world will be involved and will be burdened by Jerusalem.

After Christ died and was resurrected, Jerusalem remained *a troublesome place*. Jesus prophesied, “*For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened*” (Matthew 24:21-22). This is amazing! *The Tribulation of Jerusalem* will not end until Christ returns. The curse of wickedness remains in the world from The Days of Daniel in Babylon until The Return of Christ. My, oh my, how wrong everyone has been! The tribulation ends with The Return of Christ (Luke 21:24-27). That is why Jesus said at

the beginning of this tribulation, “*All these are the beginning of sorrows*” (Matthew 24:8). “*But the end is not yet*” (Matthew 24:6). The Fall of The Temple in 70 A.D. began The Tribulation and it will not end until Christ returns!

### Troublesome Times

During Daniel’s day, when Zerubbabel went to lay the foundation for *the temple*, Jerusalem was in *a time of trouble* (great sorrows). Why is this? It is because The Jews and Israel were never restored or brought back from worldwide captivity. Only a small group of Jews left Babylon to rebuild God’s *temple*. People, including The Babylonians, The Edomites and The Arabs, had been occupying the land. They continue to occupy most of Israel today. Many who are living in The Nation of Israel are not from the genealogy of Judah. In many cases, they are only Jews through religion and not race. Over time, some claimed to be Jews when they were not, genealogically, from Judah. When Jesus came, Jerusalem was filled with people who claimed to be Jews. They joined The Jewish *religion* by being circumcised and keeping *The Law of Moses*. Many called themselves “Jews” although they were not from The Tribe of Judah. Paul was a Jew but not of The Tribe of Judah, genealogically. The Levites were not of Judah, either. The Levites were to serve the priesthood who was of Aaron.

Herod, their King, was an Edomite. The Roman Government annually chose their High Priest from The Sadducees. This is ironic because they didn’t even

**believe in *the resurrection*. Jews in Jerusalem didn't believe The Samaritans were from The House of Israel; yet, those in Samaria claimed to be The Children of Jacob (John 4:12). Many in Galilee were Gentiles (Matthew 4:15). From the time of captivity in Babylon to the restoration of The Temple, a great number were not Israelites or even Jews (by birth). They only claimed to be Jews. Today, Jerusalem is exactly as it was in The Days when Jesus was on this earth. The Nation of Israel is composed of many non-Israelites and non-Jews. Israel is a mongrel group held together only by religion. Many of today's Jews (in Israel) came from other nations. They claim to be Jewish by religion and not by race. They are Jews only through accepting The Jewish Religion. Some are known as Sephardi or Ashkenazim Jews while others claim to be of The Khazars, an Empire in The Caucasus during the time of 400-1100 A.D.**

**That is why Israel's definition of a Jew is by religion and not necessarily by genealogy. Only 20% of Israel's citizens are Arabs. Others are Edomites (like Herod). Israel, today, is very similar to its population during Christ's time on earth. This is why The Muslims claim The Jews don't belong there. Jesus, as The Messiah, came to bring all Israel back to God's Promised Land, but they rejected Him as their King. They had Him killed. That generation was evil and adulterous. Because of this, the curse that existed in Zechariah's time continued to cover the whole world. They were evil because they refused their King. They were adulterous by going after other lovers and, then, having The Bridegroom killed.**

**So, Jesus sought a *bride* who would come from a more worthy nation (Matthew 21:42-44). Christ can again be engaged and marry Israel (as He died for her). (Once an engagement was announced it was considered a *marriage* in God's covenant). **Once dead, The Covenant ended. Christ not only came as The Bridegroom, but He also came as The One Stone who was rejected. When He returns, He will rebuild God's *house*. God will do the building and it will not be done by a foreigner (like an Edomite). King Herod was not from Israel or King David's *household*. Christ is from that line! Only Jesus can restore The Temple of God in Jerusalem. Christ is The One who brings Israel back to God's Promised Land. This occurs at The Messiah's Second Coming with the start of The Millennium (Read Ezekiel 40-48 and Isaiah 66). Jesus unites Judah at that time with Israel. The Lost Tribes became one staff (stick) known as "*Beauty and Bands*" (Zechariah 11:7).****

**Zechariah announced, "*Open your doors, O Lebanon, that the fire may devour your cedars*" (Zechariah 11:1). This is the beginning of Armageddon. The armies will begin to assemble for World War III. Israel and Judah broke their marriage contract by committing adultery and will need to be restored (Zechariah 11:9-17). Christ can become engaged to Israel and Judah because they, also, will have died for Christ in the tribulation.**

***The Law* never allows a divorced woman to remarry her former living husband. Only through death can the woman be free to remarry him. Death released**

**the marriage covenant (Romans 7:1-2). Jesus was the groom of Israel. Once He divorced her (The Israelites), He could not remarry Israel until He died. Only, then, was He free to remarry her.**

**Israel and Judah are restored by Christ and remolded into a new, beautiful Bride worthy to be His Wife (Zechariah 11:9-14 reveals *The Old Covenant* is broken or null and void and Revelation 19:7-8 reveals *The New Covenant* is restored through Christ's death).**

### **The End Days**

**The Last Days or Days of Light ended when Christ was crucified. The End of Days (light) were completely extinguished. The Sign of Jonah goes beyond the uninvited to *One* who is greater than Jonah (Matthew 12:14 and John 12:35). Here is Jesus' parting words before He was crucified, "*I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believes on me should not abide in darkness. And if any man hear my words and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world*" (John 12:46-47). Are you ready to understand why Jesus was greater than Jonah? Jesus is greater than Jonah because He brought *Salvation* and *repentance* to everyone. Jonah only brought repentance to The Ninevites. The End of Days comes closer when the world is filled with so much evil.**

## CHAPTER 11

### A WORLD IN DARKNESS

After Jesus was resurrected and went to be with His Father, *the last days of light* ended. Jesus predicted those last days (without light) would be known as The Time of Sorrows. This was prophesied as *a total world curse* (Matthew 24 and Mark 13).

#### The Beginning And The End

In The Olivet Prophecy, Christ prophesied that *the temple* would be destroyed and not one stone would be left upon another (Matthew 24:2). That prediction would be followed by other events like many false preachers claiming Jesus was The Messiah (Mark 13:6). Rumors of wars would come and go, but His Disciples were assured they need not be troubled since the end *is not yet*. The Disciples had the distinct impression this was all going to occur in their lifetime. Continuing with The Olivet Prophecy, you find nations will rise against nations and kingdoms against kingdoms. But, there is more. Jesus said there will be famines, pestilences and earthquakes. He made a grave announcement, “*All these are the beginning of sorrows*” (Matthew 24:8). The word “*sorrows*” in Greek alludes to “*a birth pain*” or “*the start of labor.*” Jerusalem began to have labor pains which would eventually produce a newborn babe. Hence, The Time of Birth



approaches. Finally, the time arrives and is called **The Great Tribulation**. The downfall of Jerusalem is to occur after this. Jesus warned about what signs His Disciples should look for, so they could escape to the mountains. When the time came, many fled to Pella. In 70 A.D., *the temple* was destroyed by Titus. Not one stone was left upon another. Those who remained in Jerusalem were taken captive and scattered into all the nations of the world. This will not take place until **The Times Of The Gentiles** are fulfilled (Luke 21:24). **The Time of Jerusalem's Trouble** continues and concludes only when **The Gentile's World Rule** ceases at **The Time of The End**.

### **The Greek Definition For Tribulation**

Since **The Time of Sorrows** is the first part of **The Great Tribulation**, the labor pains of birth will continue to intensify. This is exactly what the definition in Greek declares. The word "*tribulation*" means "*to constrain*" or "*to be in a closed room*" (with nowhere to go). It denotes *super-human stress relating to labor pains*, but it will prove to be false pains. So, there will be no delivery of a newborn. Hence, this *tribulation* is likened to *a false labor pain*. As a result, this is a time of curses. No children will be born until *the true tribulation* comes to pass.

The Apostle Paul understood this prophecy and he explained the difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant* (Galatians 4:22-27). The slave of Abraham's wife (Hagar) bore a child for Abraham. In reality, this son, Ishmael, was an illegitimate son.



Under *The Old Covenant*, The Letter of *The Law* contained many *works* that Israel had to perform. This was because they were in slavery in Egypt. (Read *The Forth Commandment* in Deuteronomy 5:12-15). *The Old Covenant Law* was written for slaves who had a *wrong heart*. They were in another form of slavery during their trek through *the wilderness*. This time they were Slaves of God because of their disobedience. *In the wilderness*, they were tried and tested. *The Law of Moses* was intended to bring them *to Christ* (Galatians 3:24). However, they rebelled against God's Law. As a result, they all had to die. They could not enter The Property of God (The Promised Land). Now, *The New Covenant Law* was to be magnified (enlarged) to the point where it was more honorable than *The Old Covenant Law* (Isaiah 42:21). *The Old Covenant Law* (letter) produced death (II Corinthians 3:6). *The New Covenant Law* was something that would change your heart and mind. It will bring *life*. Wow! Christ magnified *The Law* by God's Holy Spirit, thus making everyone Holy or righteous. It was accomplished by God doing all the work and not by any Christian *works* (Christian's trying on their own). "*Christ – In You*" (The Mystery of God) will give you Life Eternal.

Paul refers to Isaac's birth as a miracle given by God to Abraham. This birth was not the result of human ideas or works. This is *The New Covenant* through Melchizedek who changed *The Law*. In *The New Covenant*, God does the work. Mere man is not able to compete with God. Paul states how *this Old Covenant Law*, given at Mount Sinai, produced slavery. It compares with Old Jerusalem. Consequently, Jerusalem

had to be destroyed because it (in Christ's day) was evil (Sodom) and adulterous (Egypt) (Revelation 11:8). This is why Jesus was crucified in Jerusalem. In short, The City of Jerusalem was a form of Sodom and Egypt.

Jerusalem was not an Israeli city in Christ's time. Its King was an Edomite and the entire region was under The Rulership of Rome. Jerusalem was populated by strangers rather than by Israelites. This was the case from The Times of Trouble when Zerubbabel went to restore *the temple foundation*. Even in Jesus' day, *the temple* was defiled by Herod for commercial reasons. All this negativity meant *the temple* had to go – and it did. Paul revealed The End of Days after The Last Days of The Light and Jerusalem will be restored.

Paul heralded a wonderful truth, “*But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all [universal]*” (Galatians 4:26). At the time of this heavenly Jerusalem under The New Heaven and The New Earth, “*the desolate has many more children than she which has an husband*” (Galatians 4:27). This first tribulation, with all its pains of child bearing does not produce Godly children. This is because they were evil and adulterous – just like Sodom and Egypt. So, this labor of birth is a false tribulation.

### Jacob's Trouble

During The Days of King Hezekiah, The King of Judah, a world prophetic event took place which affected all of God's people in Israel and Judah. This prophecy began in 600 B.C., which was fifteen years

before Judah was taken into captivity (Babylon). Nebuchadnezzar took them captive in 586 B.C. (Read II Kings 18-20). Regarding these days, Jeremiah said, *“For, lo, the days come, says the LORD, that I will bring again the captivity of my people Israel and Judah, says the LORD: and I will cause them to return to the land that I gave to their fathers and they shall possess it. And these are the words that the LORD spoke concerning Israel and concerning Judah. For thus says the Lord; We have heard a voice of trembling, of fear and not of peace. Ask you now and see whether a man does travail with child? Wherefore do I see every man with his hands on his loins, as a woman in travail and all faces are turned into paleness? Alas! For that day is great, so that none is like it: it is even the time of Jacob’s trouble; but he shall be saved out of it. For it shall come to pass in that day, says the LORD of hosts, that I will break your yoke from off your neck and will burst your bonds and strangers shall no more serve themselves of him: But they shall serve the LORD their God and David their king, whom I will raise up to them”* (Jeremiah 30:3-9).

This is awesome! Sometime in the future, King David will be resurrected and he will rule during The Millennium. At that time, Jacob’s troubles will end. This is not The Great Tribulation which Christ warned Jerusalem about. It took place in 70 A.D. under Titus. In that tribulation, Judah went into world captivity until The Times Of The Gentiles are fulfilled (Luke 21:24). King David will be resurrected when Christ returns. The Gentiles ruled Jerusalem in Christ’s day. Herod, an Edomite, was The King of Judah. Caesar chose *the high priest* to administer religion. It is exactly the

same today. Modern Israel has a great number of Gentiles living there. *Questionable Jews* like *Sephadia* or *Ashkenazim Jews* are ruling modern-day Israel.

Remember, not all Jews are from The Tribe of Judah. Some are Jews, only, through religion. To be a Jew today, all you need to do is be circumcised and keep *The Law of Moses*. There is another factor about Israel. In Christ's time, it was controlled by Gentiles just as it is today. Jeremiah's prophecy speaks of another great tribulation, which is The Second Tribulation. It is a continuation of The First Tribulation. Once again, this tribulation will be compared to a woman in childbirth. It will be so intense and of such severity that every individual will stoop as if they are in labor giving birth to a child!

Then, Christ comes to restore and bring together all The Israelites scattered throughout the world (Israel and Judah). As a result, they will once again become *one stick* or *one nation* according to the prophecy in Ezekiel 37. When is this supposed to take place? King David will be resurrected and will again become King over all Israel. Until The Times Of The Gentiles end, Israel's troublesome times will continue. Jacob's trouble began in 586 B.C. with the captivity of Judah (conquering Nebuchadnezzar). This was the start of Gentile Rule until The End of Days. King David will be restored as King over Israel with The Return of Christ. The Sign of Jonah is about to conclude. The End of Days or The End of All Light is nearly ready to take place. Yet, the world cannot see because it is in darkness!

## CHAPTER 12

### DAYS ARE NOT HOURS

It has been proven that *time* does not exist in God's perspective. Hours and days do not matter in God's *plan*. Only light and darkness outline God's concept of *time*. Jesus asked, "*Are there not twelve hours in the day?*" (John 11:9). God answers by revealing how only the light of a day and the darkness at night define *a day*. It can be a 24-hour day or a 1,000-year day (II Peter 3). God measures a day by light and darkness and not hours (Genesis 1).

#### Christ Is Greater

The parable of The Sign of Jonah is given as *a piece* of the puzzle in *The Old Testament*. *This piece proves* Jesus is The Messiah because according to God's time He spent three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. Jonah was in the belly of the fish for three days and three nights. This situation parallels the experience of Christ. This *sign*, however, is only for an evil and adulterous nation. It was for those living in Jerusalem at the time of Christ's crucifixion (Revelation 11:8). They were in Babylon.

The people were evil because they sinned and were adulterous. They rejected Jesus as their Bridegroom

**and King. Christ divorced them (death cancels a contract), but He did this so that He could remarry them in the future (Matthew 21, John 11 and Zechariah 9:9). They were evil because they were guilty of having Jesus murdered by The Romans. Jesus will send The Wedding Feast *invitations* to the world. Invitations go to both *the bad* and *the good* (Matthew 22:9-10).**

**What was significant for that evil and adulterous generation was the instruction about Jesus being in the grave for three days and three nights (Jonah in the belly of the fish). You have read how Jesus probably died on Wednesday afternoon around 3:00 P.M. and was resurrected three days and three nights later on Saturday afternoon. Jesus was already resurrected when Mary Magdalene came to the tomb while it was still dark. Sunday morning hadn't started since it was just on the horizon (John 21:1). Mary came before the light began to shine on the first day of the week (Sunday). It was still night and Christ had already been resurrected. *The Bible* does not say when Jesus rose except that it was after the three days and three nights. We don't know. The lesson is three days and three nights by God's Time. It is conditional which is light and darkness. Also, it was "*the end of the sabbath*" (Matthew 28:1). The Sabbath ended at 6:00 P.M. on Saturday night. Why was this important? It was *important* because this was during The Feast of Unleavened Bread (Luke 22:1).**

**During The Passover, The Jews were told to stay indoors or else their firstborn would be killed. However, only the firstborns of The Egyptian children**

were killed. This night was not a Sabbath (annual), but they were all required to stay indoors. The next day, Thursday, was not a Sabbath, either. Rather, it was “*a night to be much remembered.*” This night was the time when Israel was released from slavery. Friday was a preparation day for The Sabbaths (two) that followed. Both of these Sabbaths started on Friday evening. They were *the annual* Sabbath and *the weekly* Seventh Day Sabbath. This annual Sabbath was called The Feast of Unleavened Bread. This *feast* was celebrated by having The Israelites remove all leavening (representing sin) from their houses for seven days. During *these seven days*, the people were to experience sinlessness, which is to come out of sin (Exodus 23 and 34; I Corinthians 5:6-7 and Colossians 2:16). *The condition for The Messiah’s return* is when Israel is ready to repent and accept Jesus, their Groom.

The Seventh Day weekly Sabbath represented The Rest of God or Paradise (Hebrews 4). (Read the book, *God’s Sabbath And Holy Days*).

Jesus might have died on Wednesday, Thursday or Friday afternoon at 3:00 P.M. In doing so, He saved all the inhabitants of the earth who were born and will be born in the future. Thursday was the second day of His death. It ended on Thursday night and was a *feast day* (Night To Be Much Remembered). It will be remembered because it was the sign of a promise that all humans will be saved. They will be at The Wedding Feast. (Read the book, *The Wedding Feast*).

Friday night began the third day with two Sabbaths



**occurring** (an Annual Sabbath and The Seventh Day Weekly Sabbath). **On Saturday, the third day, everyone in the world became sinless because of Christ's death. Consequently, they would be able to enter God's Seventh Day Rest, The Weekly Sabbath. This is Paradise or The Kingdom of God (New Jerusalem on earth) (Revelation 21 and 22). God is more wonderful than any human can imagine. God is truly amazing! Can you see the difference between Christ and The Sign of Jonah which only brought The Ninevites to repentance? Christ and His sign are greater than Jonah (Matthew 12:38-41). Jesus, with His birth, death and resurrection, is able to give Salvation to the whole world.**

**Jesus was rejected by His people. Since they were evil and adulterous, they would only understand through His death and resurrection. Christ's *sign* proves He is The Messiah, The Savior of The World. Christ's people wouldn't repent like The Assyrians did when John, The Baptist preached. Being evil and adulterous, like Sodom and Egypt, they murdered Jesus. So, being rejected, Christ turned to another nation. You can now understand the debate over Jesus' death. You are now ready to prove The Mystery of God which is "*Christ – In You.*" His *sign of the two witnesses* is to be given to His people and, eventually, to the whole world. *The sign is the love for Christ* even to their *death*, as He died for everyone.**

### **Jesus Dies**

***"And it was about the sixth hour [12:00 noon] and there***



*was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour [3:00 P.M.]. And the sun was darkened and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst. And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into your hands I commend my spirit: and having said this, he gave up the ghost [spirit]"* (Luke 23:44-46). Jesus died. He no longer existed. His human flesh was totally dead. What some do not realize is that Jesus' decision to die was made with His free choice. Notice The Centurion's reply regarding His death, *"Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man"* (Luke 23:47). *The Centurion saw that Jesus died willingly. Could he have been The First Gentile to become a Christian (Acts 10)?*

Jesus, of His own volition, chose to die for the world. This glorified God! Jesus said, *"Therefore does my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man takes it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father"* (John 10:17-18). Wow, what faith! God told Jesus He would be required to die and be resurrected. When Jesus died, He knew God would leave Him completely on His own to bear the sins of the world. This was why He asked, *"My God [Father], my God, why have you forsaken me?"* (Matthew 27:46).

In faith, Jesus knew that He would be resurrected because God told Him so by The Holy Spirit. That's faith! You are saved by your faith when you trust God implicitly! Jesus is The Author, a forerunner, for Christians and your faith in Him (Hebrews 12:2).

## Change Of Day

**You must question whether that day had twelve hours of light as Jesus stated. No, the day Christ died had only nine hours of daylight. Jesus died in darkness at 3:00 P.M. Why was darkness upon *the whole earth*? Was it an eclipse? That day was shortened because Christ's life was shortened when He died for everyone's sins (John 1). This was the beginning of The Last Days of Light upon the earth. This was The Time of The Last Days. From then on, the world would be in darkness (without God). Wow! His two *witnesses* will be *the candlesticks*: 1) The Menorah (The Seven Churches, The Churches of God in Revelation 1) and 2) The Remnant of Israel. These candlesticks would light a world in darkness because The Holy Spirit gives them light! His two witnesses (The Churches of God and a Remnant of Israel) are a ray of light upon the earth. That is why the moon reflects the light from the sun (Christ) to the earth at night. Darkness, from the time of His death, remains a wilderness (a human curse of wickedness) until The Return of Jesus (Zechariah 5).**

**You are beginning to see why The Sign of Jesus is greater than The Sign of Jonah. Jesus is greater than Jonah because, as *the light* of every man, He gives *truth* to the world and there is no darkness in Him. He is in the exact image of God (I John 1:5). This began The Last Days.**

## CHAPTER 13

### THE MORNING STAR

With the death of Jesus, the first day ended at 3:00 P.M. and the second day began. That second day was fifteen hours long. All this was according to God's timetable of day and night. When Jesus died, the day had only nine hours before the night began. The second day concluded with The Feast called The Night To Be Much Remembered (memorializing when Israel left Egypt). Likewise, because Jesus died, everyone's sins were paid for. Then, the world could leave Egypt (denoting a type of sin). Christ changed The Bride from being just The Remnant of Israel to include everyone who comes out of Babylon or Egypt. It truly was A Night To Be Remembered because Jesus turned to The Gentiles (Matthew 21).

The first day of Jesus' death probably started Wednesday afternoon (3:00 P.M.) and lasted until Thursday night. Thursday night till Friday night was the second day. The third day began Friday night which lasted till Saturday night. Jesus was resurrected on Saturday and was in Paradise on that Seventh Day Sabbath.

Remember, when Mary came to the sepulchre, it was

still dark and Jesus was already gone (John 20:1). Christ was not resurrected on the first day of the week. Rather, He was raised on The Sabbath. On the first day of the week (while it was still dark), Mary came to the tomb and He had already risen. The world was in darkness that first Sunday (The Last Days). The light had gone out.

### Sign Of Jonah

Jonah's *sign* brought repentance. Jesus' death offered the world *a light* so the people could see the truth. Instead of peace and prosperity, *the world curse* continued. Jesus truly was a greater sign than Jonah. Jesus, The Christ must return to restore light to the world, which is The Word of God. If Judah had accepted Christ as their Messiah, would there have been a different outcome? If they had accepted Christ when He was resurrected, The Millennial Peace of The Kingdom of God would have started. The Wedding Feast *announcement* would have been proclaimed throughout the whole world.

### Mystery Of God Ends

John, The Apostle, after he had written about the six seals and the heavenly signs, continued writing *The Book of Revelation*. However, he was told to stop writing. Just as The Seventh Trumpet was about to sound, John ceased to unseal The Seventh Seal. John was told to continue later when he would prophesy to the world (Revelation 10:11). Here is the reason John stopped at the beginning of The Seventh Trump

(Revelation 10:4). At the time of The Seventh Trumpet, time ceases (stops) because, “*But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he has declared to his servants the prophets*” (Revelation 10:7).

Amazingly, the six seals and the prophecy are all finished (as Christ foretold). He said that this generation shall not pass till all these things are fulfilled (Matthew 24:24-29 and Matthew 24:34). Everything was fulfilled in The First Century before that generation died. Paul warned Christians that Christ wouldn’t come back until a great falling away took place and *The anti-Christ* ruled for a short time (II Thessalonians 2:2).

Just as The Mystery of God was only to be understood by Christians, Satan had to deceive the world with The Mystery of Iniquity (II Thessalonians 2:7). This falling away from *the truth* started after that generation was dead. That is why Jude declared Christians needed to return to the original faith of The Apostles (Jude 3). *The Book of Revelation* was written to The Seven Churches because Christianity was already in *doctrinal* chaos. The Greek name “*Diotrephes*,” when translated, means “*a friend of Zeus*,” who is Lord and Master. Diotrephes disfellowshipped Christians who did not believe what he taught (III John 1:9-11).

Some churches do the same thing today. So, John warned the believers to follow what was *good* and not to follow *evil* (III John 1:11). John said kicking people out of the church for *dogmatic doctrinal differences*

was evil. Spiritual growth can only occur when *free choice* is allowed (Romans 14).

By the time The First Century ended, Christianity was in doctrinal chaos and The Nicolaitanes were penetrating The Churches of God just as Christ had warned (Revelation 2:6). Diotrephes was a Nicolaitane. In Greek, “*Nicolaitane*” means “*to bind*” or “*control the laity*.” Everyone was required to be at the same level of doctrinal belief or else they were cast out of *the church*. The Gnostics penetrated The Churches of God in this way. That is why there were many persecutions, martyrs and great tribulations within God’s *churches* over the centuries.

Now, consider the following. The Nicolaitanes have always penetrated The Churches of God. That is why Jesus wonders if He will find any faith when He returns. The final anti-Christ will be a Nicolaitane leading a one-world religion with one doctrine. It will be The anti-Christ’s *doctrine*. This is Satan’s Mystery of Babylon, The Great Whore. The End of Days or *end of light*, will come to a climax and the world will be in total darkness. This will usher in The Day of The Lord.

This darkness comes to an apex just before *The Seventh Trumpet* sounds. The Seventh Trumpet is the announcement of God’s intervention in world affairs. Cataclysmic signs in the heaven and on earth will be unleashed. *The third woe* starts with Armageddon. This will end in a world war over Jerusalem just before The Return of Christ (Zechariah 14:1-4). Jesus

returns at the sounding of The Seventh Trump. Most likely, the world will blame *the green-house effect* on the first four trumpets for bringing heavenly and earthly destruction. Satan tries to thwart *the truth* and deceive the world by using Babylonian miracles. That is why the world fights Christ at His Second Coming (Revelation 17:14).

### The Day Of The Lord

*The Book of Joel* specifically discusses The Day of The Lord. Read these three chapters thoroughly. Here is how The Day of The Lord will be known, “*Blow you the trumpet [Seventh] in Zion [Jerusalem, the Last Woe] and sound an alarm in my holy mountain: let all the inhabitants of the land tremble [Great Tribulation]: for the day of the LORD comes, for it is nigh at hand. A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the morning spread upon the mountains: a great people and a strong; there has not been ever the like, neither shall be any more after it, even to the years of many generations*” (Joel 2:1-2). This has to be just prior to The Millennium because it will never be that bad again.

The world has no light, peace or prosperity. This is the culmination of Babylon and it ends mankind’s efforts to survive. These are The End of Days (of light). The human imagination created *Babylon* (Genesis 11:6-7). This includes *human science* as it was in The Days of Noah (Matthew 24:27-29 and II Peter 2:5). Mankind’s logic, through *science*, has produced destructive weapons that will result in the same outcome as



in Noah's days (wickedness and violence) (Genesis 6:5). **World genocide will end The Times of Gentile Rule. The Times of Gentile Rule will be fulfilled. The Day of The Lord is at hand.** (Read the book, *The Time of The Gentiles*). **End of Days or complete darkness is the result of man's imaginations that are made possible through mathematical probabilities. Many awesome advances have been invented for mankind. In spite of it all, without God, *survival of the fittest* will cause the destruction of the world. This planet is The House and Property of God. God has to protect His *house and land* (Psalm 24:1-10). The End Days of The Great Tribulation will be unlike The First Tribulation in 70 A.D. (which was a false labor and did not bring forth a birth). Now the birth is ready to break forth. "Before she travailed [labor], she brought forth [birthed]; before her pain [labor] came, she was delivered of a man child [Jesus]. Who has heard such a thing [no labor]? Who has seen such things? Shall the earth [world] be made to bring forth in one day? Or shall a nation be born at once? For as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children"** (Isaiah 66:7-8).

Jesus was ready to die for the sins of the world. However, His own nation did not accept Him so they never bore fruit (or a birth). They went into captivity worldwide (Luke 21:24). It was a false labor. However, the future Great Tribulation will be different. This labor, at The End of Days, will bear fruit. During this Second Great Tribulation, there will be many who turn to *righteousness* (Daniel 12:1-3). The Kingdom of God will come and many will turn to Christianity. Isaiah prophesies this Great Day of Delivery, "*Shall I bring*



*to the birth and not cause to bring forth [no abortion]? Said the LORD: shall I cause to bring forth and shut the womb? Said your God. Rejoice you with Jerusalem and be glad with her, all you that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all you that mourn for her: That you may suck and be satisfied with the breasts [nourished] of her consolations; that you may milk out and be delighted with the abundance of her glory [goodness and riches]. For this said the LORD, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream: then shall you suck, you shall be borne upon her sides and be dandled [to move a baby lightly up and down] upon her knees. As one whom his mother comforts, so will I comfort you; and you shall be comforted in Jerusalem” (Isaiah 66:9-13).*

**This account covers the death of Jesus, His resurrection, the first tribulation into captivity and, then, a false labor. This shows God never aborts a babe and will bring a full birth to fruition. It does not happen in one day because it must mature in the mother’s womb!**

**This continuing Great Tribulation brings many to righteousness when The Groom returns for His Bride. The Millennium begins the announcement for the whole world to come to The Wedding Feast! Wow! The Morning Star (the sun) is ready to come and complete The Mystery of God. This will happen at the sounding of The Seventh Trump (Revelation 10:7 and 22:16).**

## CHAPTER 14

### THE SIGN OF CHRIST

The Sign of Jonah was intended for an evil and adulterous generation. To this day, the whole world (Christians and scholars) debates whether Jesus, The Christ, was The Messiah or not. No answer will be given to such people except to that generation. The conclusion is that He was The Messiah. This is *the only sign* that was given and it concerned The Three Days and The Three Nights Jesus was in the grave. With *the truth* (The Word of God), this debate should end with the statement, “*But the wise shall understand*” (Daniel 12:10). The wicked will not be able to discern. However, the wise ones, as little babes who are teachable, will spiritually mature.

#### Christ's Return

Jesus tells you what to look for when He returns. He, also, tells you what not to look for. What do the wise and teachable need? “*And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Then if any man shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ or there, believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs [anti-Christ] and false prophets and shall show great signs [healing,*

etc] *and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told you before. Wherefore if they shall say to you, Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not*" (Matthew 24:22-26).

Notice, the subject of Jesus' *return* is clear. It will be such a catastrophic time that even God's elect will be destroyed if Christ doesn't intervene. It will be a period of *world genocide*. The world will be in complete darkness. The reason Jesus warns you about this perilous time is because many teachers will be falsely predicting Christ's return. Some will give dates, times and places. Locations will be given, but don't believe these false reports. Some will prophesy that Jesus is coming secretly. They will say He is coming for His Saints at a secret time and place. Don't believe it! Now, you are ready to biblically prove why Jesus cannot come in any other way than what He is about to reveal.

Remember, The Pharisees asked for *a sign* to prove that Jesus was The Messiah (Matthew 12:38). He answered the evil and adulterous generation by saying, "*there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonah*" (Matthew 12:39). They are busy trying to figure out *the times* and debating when Christ died (about the three days and three nights). They don't know the answer to the riddle of Jonah being in the belly of the great fish (Matthew 12:38-40). Was the day of Christ's *death* Wednesday, Thursday or Friday? Now, you know what not to look for. You can read when The Messiah will return and give Salva-

tion. Christ declares, “*Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened and the moon shall not give her light and the stars shall fall from heaven and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken* [heavenly signs appear that the world is in darkness]” (Matthew 24:29).

The heavenly signs are caused by God (not from the greenhouse effect). They occurred in The First Century and are probably the reason why some believed The First Resurrection already happened. They were waiting for The Last Resurrection – or else there was to be *no resurrection* at all. That is why Paul had to write to validate The First Resurrection even though it had not happened yet (I Corinthians 15). This caused great confusion for The Christians. That is why Jesus warned that His generation would not pass till all was fulfilled (Matthew 24:34). What *tribulation* is this? What are the heavenly signs? Everything was fulfilled in Christ’s generation. All had taken place during the time of that generation (while they were still alive) (Matthew 24). What a dilemma! What a contradiction!

### Christ’s Sign

Jesus clarifies this conundrum. Read Matthew 24:30-51 thoroughly. You are about to see Jesus reveal the true sign of His Messiahship, which is *greater* than Jonah’s three days and three nights in the belly of the fish. A greater sign and a greater purpose proves that The Messiah was foretold, “*And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven* [it will not be a

secret]: *and then shall all the tribes* [the world] *of the earth mourn and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory* [the shekinah]” (Matthew 24:30). This is The First Resurrection of The Saints. What is *the sign* of Christ’s Messiahship? He comes with God’s power and glory. God’s *glory* is all of His goodness, riches and power. This is what will give you Salvation. This is precisely when The Mystery of God is fulfilled, “*But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he had declared to his servants the prophets*” (Revelation 10:7).

Christ comes in all of God’s glory or light. When this occurs there will *not be any global blindness*. A new day will begin. God’s day as the sun will rise in the east and all darkness will end. There is *no secret return, specific day or time but a condition based upon darkness* – complete evil!

The whole world will mourn at The Return of Jesus. The world mourns because all their human imaginations (Babylon) were wrong! Jesus concludes *The Book of Revelation* with the declaration, “*I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify* [witness] *to you* [seven churches] *these things in the churches* [seven]. *I am the root* [before David, God’s *Word*] *and the offspring* [lineage] *of David and the bright and morning star*” (Revelation 22:16). Jesus existed before David as *The Spoken Word of God*, God’s word Himself, Elohim. Therefore, He is *the very root* of David’s genealogy before King David came on the scene. David wrote, “*The LORD* [JHVH,

Father God] *said to my Lord [Jesus, His Son – future prophecy Acts 2], Sit you at my right hand, until I make your enemies your footstool”* (Psalm 110:1).

**This was God talking to His *Word* before Jesus appeared in the flesh** (all of God’s thinking, plans and memory were His *word* and were transmitted to Jesus through The Holy Spirit when He came the first time). **This prophecy did not occur until Jesus was resurrected and sat at the right hand of God** (Acts 2:32-35). **God’s Holy Spirit gave King David this prophecy in Psalm 110. Christ now solves The Mystery of His Birth. At the writing of Psalm 110 King David revealed God’s mind and future prophecy of The Messiah.**

**Mary was from The Tribe of Levi. The Tribe of Levi was the genealogical line from which Elizabeth came. Elizabeth was Mary’s cousin through her marriage to Zechariah, who was a Priest of The Tribe of Levi. Zechariah was the father of John The Baptist, who, also, had a miraculous birth. They were all called Jews of Judah but were of The Tribe of Levi. Zechariah was Mary’s cousin and Elizabeth was her cousin-in-law. How does Mary, Jesus’ mother from The Tribe of Levi, make Jesus a part of Judea, The House of David?**

**Joseph was Christ’s adopted father by genealogy. However, this doesn’t mean Jesus came from The House of King David through Joseph. How could Jesus come from David’s line? Christ asked The Pharisees the same question, “Saying, *What think you of Christ? Whose son is he?* They [Pharisees] *said to him,***

*The son of David. He said to them, How then does David in spirit call him Lord, saying, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit you on my right hand, till I make your enemies your footstool [submit]? If David then call him Lord; how is he his son?"* (Matthew 22:42-46). Jesus could not have been of David if He existed before King David. Christ said so (John 8:48)! He was of Judah by God's Holy Spirit which was the Root of King David's lineage. All the world came from God's Spirit.

This is a funny thing, isn't it? They could not give Him the answer, but Jesus will reveal it to you! Psalm 110:1 reveals "a type" and "a prophecy." Christ said that David, as King of Israel, would destroy The Lord's enemies. That is why he had enough faith to fight Goliath and, later, become The King of Israel. Jesus answered His own question to The Pharisees about how David, although so young, had the faith to fight Goliath. As amazing and awesome as it seems, the answer to this question directly ties in with Christ being greater than The Sign of Jonah. There are two vital points about why Jesus is greater than Jonah (Revelation 22:16).

Jesus is the root, or the beginning, of the family genealogy of King David as God's Word. Christ started The Davidic Line through God's Holy Spirit. Ask God for help to understand this. Remember, Jesus, before becoming human, created all things as The Word of God (Hebrews 1:13). Jesus told The Pharisees it was God's spirit that was revealed to King David (Psalm 110:1). It is quite simple but very deep – *spiritually*. It is God's Holy Spirit which is The Word of God.



**On The Day of Pentecost, Peter preached that Jesus sat at God's right hand after His resurrection. This prophecy was fulfilled (Psalm 110:1). Jesus had to destroy all of God's enemies (I Corinthians 15:24-26). The main enemy was death. Jesus, as The Son of David, was now obligated to complete the prophecy (Psalm 110:1). How could Jesus, who was The Genesis of David's family, now be David's son? It is so simple and so wonderful! Jesus was born as a human in the flesh by God's Holy Spirit. Mary was overshadowed by The Holy Spirit which made Jesus Holy (Luke 1:35). The Holy Spirit, or The Word of God, began the family of King David. He had God's heart or spirit (Psalm 51). Mary, being made pregnant with Jesus, became the mother of The Very Word of God. *The word became flesh* (human) (John 1:14). Jesus, The Son of Man, was, also, The Word of God through The Holy Spirit. This was just like King David. This Son of Man, now in the flesh, was the same as The Word of God. Furthermore, He was The Light of The World shining on every individual (John 1:9).**

### **The Morning Star**

**When Jesus came to earth, the world was in darkness (2,000 years in darkness had blinded them) and the people never recognized Him (John 1:5). The First Tribulation began with The Fall of The Temple in 70 A.D. and culminated with The Fall of Masada in 74 A.D. This disaster dispersed The Jews to all sections of the world as captives (Luke 21:24). The continuing *tribulation* (sorrows) cannot take place until The Gentiles' rule is completed. "*Babes – In Christ,*" who are not**



growing spiritually, will have to go through **The Great Tribulation** (Revelation 7:13-14 and 12:14-17).

Jesus, besides being *the root* or *genesis* of David's family, is also **The Bright and Morning Star**. **The First Star of The Morning that shines is the sun** (Malachi 4:2). Jesus, as **The Sun**, was filled with righteousness and He will come as an eagle with *healing and restoration* on His wings. You are coming close to the climax. This will be the fulfillment of **The Mystery of God** which is "*Christ – In You*" (Colossians 1:27). Jesus, as **The Root of The House of David**, will come as **King of Kings** and as **The Light of The World** (glory). Just imagine lightning striking from **The East** with *great power and glory* (Matthew 24:27).

**The sign of Christ's Messiahship will be revealed in the heavens as The Morning Star's sunlight**. Then, all the earth will mourn (Matthew 24:30). The people will know they have been fooled by the whore (Babylon) who rides the beast with seven heads led by Satan. What heralds Christ's return? Of course, it is **The Seventh Trumpet!** "*And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven [atmosphere] to the other*" (Matthew 24:31). There will be no *secret rapture* of The Saints. **The First Resurrection** takes place when **The Seventh Trumpet** sounds accompanied by all the heavenly signs. **The Return of Christ** will be seen by the world as *the sun rising in The East*. Sunday, which is *the first day* of the new week, begins as the light shines upon the earth which was in darkness.

**It will occur when the times are like The Days of Noah and the world is filled with wickedness and violence (Armageddon) (Matthew 24). At that time, God's people will be resurrected (some while asleep and others at work). The warning given by Christ is for a believer to not sleep but to always watch as The Mystery of God takes place. This is so you will know what will come upon the world. The Mystery of God is completed at *The Seventh Trumpet* and The Return of The Light of The World. The Root of David will suddenly appear when the world is unaware. The Sign of Christ is greater than The Sign of Jonah. Christ, *the light of every man*, concludes The End of Days by bringing a light to the world that was in darkness. Here is what happens to those with The Mark of The Beast, "*The lord of that servant [God's people] shall come in a day when he looks not for him and in an hour that he is not aware of. And shall cut him asunder and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth*" (Matthew 24:50-51).**

**Christ will not come in secret if you are wise and always watching (Daniel 12:10). Those who debate The Sign of Jonah and what day Christ died will not know or understand. Only those who believe in The Messiah (because He is greater than Jonah) will know. How is this? It occurs when The Seventh Trumpet sounds (Revelation 10:7). The Mystery of God ends when The Light of The World returns (Daniel 12:7 and Revelation 22:16).**

## CHAPTER 15

# THE WORD OF GOD

Christ will shine like *the sun* in full strength. He is *the light* for every man in the world. Who is The Word of God which gives *light* to the whole world? To answer this question, you must go back to the beginning. The Alpha is the beginning and the ending is known as The Omega.

## YHVH

The word “*God*” in Hebrew is “*Elohim.*” He is The All Encompassing, Almighty, Universal, Holy, Most Powerful, Supreme Creator and Loving Father of all. When Elohim spoke, He said, “*Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good*” (Genesis 1:3-4). There is more. *This Word* was of God and came from God’s *goodness*, which is His *glory* (The Shekinah) (Exodus 33:18-19 and John 1:1-3). God is the “*I AM THAT I AM [YHVH]*” (Exodus 3:14). *This “word”* who created all things, was The Very Light of The World and was all of God’s express images (Hebrews 1:1-3). *This “word”* became Christ, who is The Very Son of God. What or who was *this “word?”* Who became Christ? Moses clearly defines *this “word.”* Israel was frightened when they heard *the booming* Words of God who gave *The Ten Commandments*. In fear, they decided that Moses should

be their intercessor with God. God approved their request and sent a messenger (an angel) to lead them to The Promised Land. Since they lacked faith in God, He told them this messenger would give no mercy, nor would they be pardoned. To be safe, they had to keep every aspect of God's "*word*." God gave *The Old Covenant Law* so they would know what was *good* and what was *evil* (Hebrews 3:10 and Exodus 23:20-21). No *forgiveness* or *mercy* would be given.

What or who was *this word* that created all things? Consider this text, "*I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren [a human], like to you and will put my words in his mouth: and he [Christ] shall speak to them all that I shall command Him*" (Deuteronomy 18:18). Wow! The Word of God is Elohim's *very words* and the thoughts in His mind, all of which He gave to Christ! It can't be any simpler! Jesus, the human, became God's *very word*! Did you think about what *The Bible* just told you? "*And will put my words in His mouth.*" (Since The Sixteenth Century, most students of *The Bible*, just read over and ignored each word of The Word of God. When you see words in **an italicized font** or **in quotes**, read them again and again. They are highlighted this way so you will not read over them. They are *The Words* of God).

Jesus is God's very Son. "*YHVH*" is "*Elohim*" (The God of all things). He is The One who spoke God's *words* and created all things! Christ became God as His *word*. What was Jesus before He was human? He was not *a separate being*; He was The Word of God. "*And the earth was without form and void and darkness*

*was upon the face of the deep. And The Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters”* (Genesis 1:2). This *spirit* of God, *not Christ*, became God’s *word* at His *birth* (Luke 1:35). God’s Holy Spirit is the power, love and The Mind of God (II Timothy 1:7). God’s Holy Spirit is the glory, riches and goodness of God (Exodus 33). It is all of God’s Shekinah *glory* that followed Israel. The Glory of God only spoke to Moses in the tabernacle. Paul told you about Israel’s sojourn in the wilderness, “*Wherefore as the Holy Ghost [Spirit] said, Today if you will hear his voice, Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation [Israel’s sin], in the day of temptation [trial] in the wilderness”* (Hebrews 3:7-8).

God’s Holy Spirit is *the very power, love and The Sound Mind of God*. These are truly wondrous words! The Holy Spirit expresses *the very thoughts* or The Mind of God with all its loving power (II Timothy 1:7). These are The Very Words of God with all their *glory* (riches and goodness). These same *thoughts, power and love* of God became Christ in the flesh; which were, also, God’s very words and His mind and intellect, including all His *power, The Almighty One*. These three attributes of *power, love and a sound mind* include all of God’s *abilities* which is the word “*Elohim.*” Here is what Mary was told before she became pregnant with Christ. “*And the angel answered and said to her, The Holy Ghost [Spirit] shall come upon you and the power of the Highest [YHVH] shall overshadow you: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God”* (Luke 1:35). Christ as The Word is God, because God’s *very mind and thoughts* are in *The Word* of God. The Holy *thing* mentioned

in *The Book of Luke* is The Holy Spirit which became God's Son! There it is, God's *goodness* and *riches* became God's Son *in the flesh* (born of Mary). God's very mind, thoughts, words, love and power became Christ, The Creator of all things. Wow! "*Logos*," or "*word*" in Greek, means that it contains "*the complete meaning of The Word of God*." God gave His Son this full measure or completeness which is "*kind after kind!*" You are to become like Jesus when you become a Son of God. When Jesus was destined to be crucified, He asked God to give Him *the glory* that He had as *The Word* (with God) before the world was formed (John 17:5). God's very words and mind, with all its power, always existed. From heaven, God gave Christ His *very power* and *love*, as well as His *sound mind* (II Timothy 1:7).

Jesus only speaks The Very Words of God because God gave Him His Holy Spirit without measure (John 3:34). Christians will receive an earnest portion of God's Spirit, but it is only a down payment (Ephesians 1). Jesus had all of God's Holy Spirit. Jesus truly was The Complete Word through God's Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit made Jesus Holy. God's Holy Spirit is God.

### Christ – The Greatest Sign

Jesus, as God's First begotten Son, was The Light of The World for every man. Here is what Christ told Nicodemus about how everyone can be born again as God's sons, "*For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him*

*might be saved. He that believes on him is not condemned: but he that believes not is condemned already, because he has not believed [faith] in the name [authority] of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light [truth] is come into the world and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one [world] that does evil hates the light [Christ], neither comes to the light, lest his deeds [works] should be reprov'd. But he that does truth comes to the light [Christ], that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought [produced] in God"* (John 3:17-21). How clear do you want it? It is God Almighty who makes you in His *image* and not Jesus. Christ is *The Author as God's word*.

**The Sign of Jonah** (the three days and the three nights) was meant to be a witness to an adulterous and evil nation. Its purpose was to bring sinners to repentance (as with The Ninevites). Christ, as **The Messiah and The Light or Truth Bringer**, is revealed to you when you repent. The Mystery of God is "*Christ – In You*" (Colossians 1:27).

**Christ is The Bright and Morning Star and The Root of David.** At The Seventh Trumpet, when Christ returns, The Mystery of God will be fulfilled (completed). The End of Days will finally result in violence and war. The world will come out of the wilderness so it can, once again, be found in God's *light*. Jerusalem is to become The Mother of Everyone by breaking forth and having children. The people will be called to *the light* during The Millennium and invited to God's Great Wedding Feast for His Son and The Bride. New



Jerusalem and The New Earth ushers in a new day for The Wedding Feast of The Groom and His Wife. The Wife will bear children without end. The Agnostics and non-Christians will repent and turn to God, “*And the Spirit [God] and the bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely*” (Revelation 22:17). What water is this? These are the waters which contain *the healing leaves* (Revelation 21:6 and Revelation 22:2).

### All In All

Christ and God are *One* (John 10:30). How? *The Word of God* is known as God’s *words*. These *words* are *the power, love and mind* manifested in His Holy Spirit which created all things (Hebrews 3:4). Christ in the flesh, as The Son of Man, is The Very Word of God. The Word of God, through Christ, will make everyone become Sons of God. You will be *One with God* and God will be *All In All* (I Corinthians 15:28). Christ is The Alpha and The Omega (Revelation 1:8). Jesus, before being human, was The Word of God. As The Word of God, He created all things through The Holy Spirit which is God’s *very mind and power*. *The Bible* is The Word of God and reveals The One True God through His Son, Jesus! This Holy Spirit, as it moved over the waters, said, “*Let there be light and there was light...that it was good*” (Genesis 1:1-4). *This Word of God* created all things. Then, this *word* became Jesus, The Son of Man. This Son of Man (human) was The Word of God and The Light of The World which gave grace, mercy and truth (John 1:17). The Word of



God, Jesus, speaks to you through God's Holy Spirit and leads His people to *the truth* (John 16:13). God's Holy Spirit, *The Very Word* of God is "*Christ – In You,*" which is The Mystery of God (Colossians 1:27). Christ is The Bright and Morning Star, The Light Bringer of truth to the world. Christ, Himself, truly is a greater sign than The Sign of Jonah, which made the people repent. Christ, as The Word, is The Beginning and The End, just like His Father. This is "*kind after kind.*" Consequently, you are destined to be in God's family. Christ, *today*, is God as everyone will be in the future. Christ, *The Firstborn*, is to be followed by all the world (John 17:20-23).

Christ will be The Omega, which is *the end*, just as He was *the beginning*. Jesus created all things through God's Holy Spirit. This Holy power does *the work*. Christ must rule till all of God's enemies are destroyed, including death, which is the last enemy (I Corinthians 15:26). Now, what is The Work of God? "*This is the work of God, that you believe on Him whom he [God] has sent*" (John 6:29). "*In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come to me and drink. He that believes on me, as the scripture has said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living waters. (But this spoke He of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost [Spirit] was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified)*" (John 7:37-39). God is The Alpha and Omega with Christ, The Messiah and Savior of The World (I John 4:14). The entire New Heaven and The New Earth will be *One with God*.

## CHAPTER 16

### WHO WAS CHRIST?

Being human, you tend to define your existence in terms of the flesh. Everyone knows that if you lose an arm, you still exist. But what do you consist of? The philosopher Descartes said, “*I think, therefore, I am.*” He knew that he existed and was real because he was conscious of his own awareness. Jesus, in the flesh, as The Son of Man knew He was more than just His body. You need to know who He is and not just as a physical being.

#### The Soul Can Die

Many believe the soul is immortal. The original Greek word for “*soul*” means “*life.*” Jesus said, “*And fear not them which kill the body [“soma” in Greek], but are not able to kill the soul [life]: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell*” (Matthew 10:28). So, the soul can be destroyed. It isn’t immortal. Who are you and who was Christ when He was in the flesh? Your *soul* or *life* can only be given or taken by God. God can destroy your soul or life in The Lake of Fire. God, however, is The God of The Living and not of the dead (Matthew 22:32). People can commit murder, but God can only *kill* (not murder) since He is The God of The Living. God does not murder because

He can resurrect those He has killed. Humans cannot restore life; so, when they kill someone, it is murder. God is able to destroy your body, your *soul* and your *life*. Who are you, really, and who was Christ? This is the big question.

### **Jesus As A Human**

As a human, Christ came from Mary and not from Joseph, genealogically. Joseph, a son of David, was Jesus' adopted father. His mother, Mary, wasn't from The Tribe of Judah. Rather, she was from The Tribe of Levi. Joseph, Mary and Jesus were all from The Land of Judah, but only Joseph was a physical Jew, but all were of The 2<sup>1/2</sup> Tribes as Jews (Hebrews 7:14). Mary and her son (Jesus) were of The Tribe of Levi, as was her cousin, Elizabeth. Yet, Jesus, The Christ claims to be The Son of David. How can this be? It seems you have found a scriptural contradiction or have you? The Jews consider one's genealogy from the mother's line and not the father. This proves Christ existed before King David.

### **Jesus A Son of David**

Read the list of descendants in the adopted genealogy of Christ from King David through Joseph (Matthew 1). In the lineage, Jesus is The Son of King David (Matthew 1:1). Is Christ an adopted son of King David because of Joseph? Jesus was not a Jew by birth, but a Levite. He was a Jew like Paul, who was of The Tribe of Benjamin. He was from The Tribe of Levi. According to prophecy, The Tribe of Levi was scattered

throughout The Tribes of Israel (Genesis 49:7). It was known that many of those in Palestine were from The House of David. That is why Joseph was living there. Jesus could not have been a Jew (by birth). He was a Levite because of His mother. He only lived and grew up in Judah and, therefore, was Jewish. That is why they called Him The King of The Jews, “*And Pilate asked him, Are you the King of the Jews? And he [Christ] answering said to him, You say it*” (Mark 15:2). Jesus knew He wasn’t The King of The Jews, but He was from Israel, just like His human great-great-great grandfather King David. Jesus was not a Jew. What is the answer? Jesus, as God’s *word*, existed before King David as God Almighty by God’s Holy Spirit.

### A Tabernacle

The biblical impasse posed above is *spiritual*. Jesus told Nicodemus, “*That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit*” (John 3:6). *Flesh* and *spirit* are not the same. “*The Spirit – In Man*” (life and consciousness) is not the same as the flesh. They are different entities. You must stop thinking of yourself (or Jesus, in the flesh) as a *physical being*! They are not the same, biblically. Jesus reveals what the flesh is, “*What and if you shall see the Son of man [flesh] ascend up where he was before? It is the spirit that quickens [energizes life]; the flesh [human body] profits nothing: the words that I speak to you, they are spirit and they are life*” (John 6:62-63). In Greek, the word “*profit*” means “*useless.*” *The spirit gives you life.* That is why Solomon said, “*Then shall the dust [flesh] return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return to*

***God who gave it***” (Ecclesiastes 12:7). The soul is not immortal because God can destroy your life. It is “***The Spirit – In Man***” that makes you conscious of your existence and your life. That is why humans are very aware of *being conscious*.

Jesus and humans, in the flesh, are nothing. Your spirit is your life and your sense of self. Descartes was aware of what *The Bible* revealed. Now, you are on the biblical track to discover who Christ was. The Apostle Peter clarified what your body is, “***Searching what or what manner of time the Spirit [pneuma] of Christ which was in them did signify [a sign], when it testified [witness] beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow. To whom it was revealed that not to themselves [Old Prophets], but to us they did minister the things, which are now reported to you by them that have preached the gospel to you with the Holy Ghost [Spirit] sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into***” (I Peter 1:11-12). The Old Prophets, like Enoch, preached Christ, but they did not completely or fully understand *The Gospel* of Christ (Jude 14). Christians, however, are supposed to know who Christ is through The Holy Spirit given to them. The Prophets of Old revealed what was clearly made known to Christians in The Last Days because of Christ’s *revelation* (Hebrews 11:1-3). Peter plainly reveals that your human body is nothing but a tabernacle or tent where God’s *glory* dwells. *The same glory* was with Moses in *the wilderness*. This human body (a tent) is a dwelling place for God’s *glory* (I John 4:13). Your flesh, as was Christ’s flesh, is only a temporary dwelling for God. He gives life (spirit)

to every newborn. This allows your body to be alive and function. It is "*The Spirit – In Man*" that occupies *your tabernacle*. *Your spirit is the self*. You are not a being just as Christ was not a being. The human being is only a body and a tent where you temporarily dwell until your death. Your tabernacle (body), ultimately, wears out and dies. These physical structures are merely *temporary tents* (your body) in which *the individual consciousness* dwells. Your *spirit* goes to God when you *die* and it is up to God to give you *an eternal body* (I Corinthians 15:53). Until that time, your *Spirit* is *in God*. The soul is not immortal. It dies and becomes God's choice when to give *life* (Matthew 10:28).

### The Real Christ

When your flesh is dead and your breath is gone, *your spirit* goes back to God. The tent (your body) turns back into dust. Jesus went to His Father after His resurrection. He received *a glorified body* from God, which is a special body like God. He is eternal and in the exact image or likeness of His Father (Hebrews 1:1-3). Now, Christ, in His glorified form (not human), is beautiful like a rainbow of various colored diamonds. He is full of light and has no darkness (Revelation 1:14-15, Revelation 10:1 and Revelation 4:2-3). His Dad, "*YHVH*," is The Eternal One, The Light or Life Giver who makes all things as "*The I Am*." Jesus is, also, "*The I Am*." This compares with "*kind after kind!*" They are both Holy and in each other's likeness. They both dwell in The Temple of God (everlasting house) with The Glory of God (Revelation 21:22 and Hebrews 3:4).

## The Root And The Branch

When a seed is planted or buried and it miraculously breaks forth, grows and blooms, it gives food to mankind (John 12:23-27). At The Seventh Trumpet, God's Mystery will be finalized (Revelation 10:7). The Seventh Trumpet will blow and Christ *will return* as King of Kings and Lord of Lords. In this way, He will give every man their gifts according to their works. Christ announces, "*What and if you shall see the Son of man [flesh] ascend up where he was before? It is the spirit that quickens [energizes life]; the flesh [human body] profits nothing: the words that I speak to you, they are spirit and they are life*" (John 6:61-63). In Greek, the word "*flesh*" means "*useless.*" Only *the spirit* gives you *life*. That is why Solomon said, "*the flesh dies in the grave but the spirit goes back to God who gave it*" (Paraphrased) (Ecclesiastes 12:7).

Only God has *life* to give. He gave *life* to His First Begotten Son just as any mortal father does when begetting children (John 5:26). The soul is not immortal because God can destroy your life. "*The Spirit – In Man*" makes you conscious of your existence and your life. You and Jesus, in fleshly bodies, are nothing because your *spirit* is your life. You, too, can track the biblical truth about who Christ was. The Apostle, Peter, clarified what your body is. "*Searching what or what manner of time the Spirit [pneuma] of Christ which was in them did signify [a sign], when it testified [witness] beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow. To whom it was revealed, that not to themselves [old prophets], but to us they did minister the things, which are now reported to you*



*by them that have preached the gospel to you with the Holy Ghost [Spirit] sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into”* (I Peter 1:11-12). Jesus was The Word of God in the flesh (John 1:14). Jesus, as *The Word of God*, represented every Word of God. Jesus, in the flesh, was a temporary tabernacle. The Spirit of God “In Him” was the real Jesus – *The Very Words of God!*

You have read about Jesus in the flesh and the glorified Jesus being The Root of David. Wow! The Greek word “*root*” can mean “*a root*” both figuratively and literally. You are about to prophetically prove how Jesus is *The Genesis or progenitor* of The Family of David. Again, this is “*kind after kind.*” Christ asked The Pharisees whose son was The Messiah (Matthew 22:41-42). They said, “*King David.*” Then, Jesus asked the question about how King David can call Him Lord. Astoundingly, Christ interprets the prophetic meaning of Psalm 110:1. Jesus reveals how King David was told by The Word of God that The LORD (God) asked The Lord (Christ) to sit at His right hand by the heavenly throne. God, Almighty is The Word of God. He became Jesus in the flesh and declared that *The Word of God* was the progenitor of the family of King David. Jesus, as The Word of God, is God’s *very word* and started The Davidic Lineage as God’s *word*. That is why David called The Lord God “*The Word,*” who became Christ. Jesus truly was The Son of David from the beginning, as The Word of God. Christ is truly the root or the beginning of The Davidic *genealogy*. Wow! There it is. Jesus was King David’s son but not through mere adoption by Joseph. As The Word of



God, He was of The Genealogical Line of David before David and Joseph. My, how wonderful this is! What wonderful words these are for you to know and understand. When you put all the scriptures together, The Word of God is perfect. Now, for the conclusion to The Mystery of God. Jesus is The Root of David. The Messiah is *the light of every man in the world*. Do you understand? Do you have eyes to see and ears to hear? Besides Christ being *the root* of The House of David, He is also The Light of The World. That is the conclusion to The Mystery of God. Jesus, besides starting King David's family line and serving as God's word, *created everything*. That includes the whole world and everything in it. Jesus was as The Father with The Holy Spirit in Him. They were one and the same. He was also the beginning or The Alpha of the world (Isaiah 46:10). Jesus *inherited* it all from His Father (Hebrews 1:2).

Paul states how The Nation of Israel and The Gentiles *are included as God's chosen people* (Ephesians 3:6). That is The Mystery that Christ will reveal through The Sign of His Messiahship when He comes again to *save the world* (I John 4:14). So, The Mystery of God is complete. The earth and everything in it belongs to God (Psalm 24). God concludes this mystery with Jesus, as King of Kings, announcing The Wedding Feast during The Millennial period (Matthew 22). Zechariah prophesies this process, "*Hear now, O Joshua the high priest, you and your fellows that sit before you: for they are men wondered at [mystery]: for, behold, I [God] will bring forth my servant [The Messiah] the BRANCH. For behold the stone that I have laid [the*

rock, Christ] *before Joshua; upon one stone shall be seven eyes* [seven spirits – Revelation 1:4]: *behold, I will engrave the graving thereof, said the LORD of hosts and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day*” (Zechariah 3:8-10). Jesus, as The Seed, was planted and became *the root of the plant*. The Servant (Christ in the flesh) was predestined to remove sin and make this occur in one day. This happened through His death and resurrection (The Sign of Jonah). Once Jesus paid for the world’s sins, He became The Son of Man for all nations and all peoples as The Word of God. *That sign is greater than The Sign of Jonah, which could only bring people to repentance. Jesus, The Greater Sign, Saves The World* (Matthew 12:40-42) and He is The Very Word of God. God will, then, be *All In All!*

You should no longer doubt or be thrown to and fro by every wind of doctrine. The Mystery of God is The Word of God. You, as the body, will eventually have the same Word of God or “*Christ – In You*” (Colossians 1:27). When you are resurrected, you will, also, have The Spirit of God. The Word of God will be given to you. The Word of God gives you all of God’s *thoughts, power and glory*. You, too, will have everything that Jesus had at the beginning of time. All this was restored to Him, once again, after His resurrection. You may not receive a double portion, but you will receive The Word of God. That, my friend, is The Mystery of God, which you have now resolved by reading God’s *word*. In the future, the world will walk together in Paradise, forever. God will, then, be “*all in all*” (I Corinthians 15:28).

## CHAPTER 17

### GOD'S MYSTERY FULFILLED

God tried to dwell in His Temple with humanity seven times. The Garden of Eden was *the first place* God dwelt with Adam and Eve. *The second tabernacle was the tent in the wilderness* with Israel. *The third temple* was built by Solomon. *The fourth temple* was started by Zerubbabel. He laid the foundation after The Jews left. (The 70 years of Babylonian Captivity continued until the time of King Herod). *The fifth temple* was a spiritual structure built by Christ. *The sixth temple* will be built during The Millennium. *The seventh temple* will be built by God under The New Heaven and on The New Earth. *This seventh temple* is the final piece of the puzzle and completes The Mystery of God.

### God's Glory – The Light Of The World

God's Mystery is "*Christ – In You*" (Colossians 1:27). Jesus is The Root of The Davidic Line. He is, also, The Bright and Morning Star, *the sun* that lightens the whole world at The Time of The Seventh Trumpet. At The End of Days (end of light), the truth will be restored when Christ returns. The Light of The World returns to restore The Truth to God's world.

Then, The Wedding Feast will commence. Jesus is The Word of God who became flesh (John 1). He paid for the world's sin through the blood covenant, by giving His life for the world. This was because He loved the world so much. Jesus was willing to die for you. Through His death, sin was destroyed. In the future, God will dwell with man because of grace. All truth will be revealed through God's Holy Spirit (John 1:17).

Since The Resurrection of Christ, the world has laid claim to God's *temple* saying it belongs to them. All or most wars have been fought because of religion and self-survival. The Jews claimed The Temple of God was theirs. Constantine claimed The Temple of Sophia in Constantinople was God's temple. The Muslims under Omar built The Mosque of Omar. At that time, *the temple site* was a garbage dump. The Muslims were able to conquer some of Europe and removed God's *dwelling* from The Catholic Church in The Vatican.

The Knights of The Templar, through the crusades, tried to recapture Jerusalem. They did this on and off and, temporarily, succeeded. Finally, The Muslims defeated The Knights and kept control. This is the reason today's tribulations are between The Jews and The Arabs. The Masons have the same goal as The Knights of The Templar. Their mysterious sign, a compass and triangle with "G" or "God" in the middle, is all about *the temple* and where God will dwell. Since The Tower of Babel, The Sumerians called The Temple a "Ziggurat." This Tower represented the *pathway* up the hill to heaven to where God lived.

They thought God dwelt in His *heavenly temple*. So they built The Tower of Babel as an attempt to reach heaven. Throughout history, mankind has tried to build a house so God could dwell with them. Of the seven houses or temples of God, four were built by man and three were built by God. The seventh house, which is to be under The New Heaven and on The New Earth, is to be built by Christ and God who builds all things (Hebrews 3:1-4).

To understand The True Mystery of God, you must understand that God is The One and Only True God who created all things, including Christ. Jesus said, "*For as the Father [One God] has life in himself [eternal]; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself*" (John 5:26). Do you grasp the truth of this statement? Only God, The One God, has eternal life. That is why God's name is YHVH, which is "*The I Am*" or "*Ever Living One*." Christ said He did not always exist as His own being! There is *no trinity*! God consists of only One God and there is none other. God had to give *life* to Jesus. Jesus didn't give life to Himself.

In understanding The Mystery of God, which is "*Christ – In You*," you need to, biblically, put the whole Mystery of God together. You need to know who Christ was before He was born as a human. Before Jesus came in the flesh, He was *The Word* (John 1). The question concerns the identity of *The Word*. God, in *The Bible*, tells you Jesus was The Word and "*The Word*" is God. It can't be plainer! How is that possible? Are there two Gods in *one*? Yes! However, you are about to, biblically, discover they are not two personal beings.

**The Word and God are *one being*. Notice what Jesus said, “*Verily, verily, I say to you, Before Abraham was, I am*” (John 8:58). Clearly, Jesus admitted that He existed before Abraham as “*The I Am*.” That is God Almighty. What a great mystery! It is the greatest mystery the world has ever tried to solve. You have already discovered how Jesus, as The Word of God, was *the genesis* of The House of David. Furthermore, He is also The Morning Star which lightens the world with *truth*. Why is this? It is because He is The Word of God. What does The Word of God mean? In Greek, *the word* is “*logos*.”**

### **Moses Discloses The Answer**

**“*Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuses you, even Moses [God’s witness], in whom you trust. For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me: for he wrote of me. But if you believe not his writings, how shall you believe my words?*” (John 5:45-47). *The Torah Law*, which is the part Moses added to *The Torah*, was given 430 years after Abraham spoke (Galatians 3:17). The Prophets Of Old have spoken of Jesus and who He is. Wow! Read about *The Law* that was added to *The Torah*. Read what Moses wrote about Jesus.**

**After God accepted Israel as His people (though they lacked faith or trust in Him), He told Moses what would occur in the future, “*I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like to you [Moses] and will put my words [YHVH] – [logos] in his mouth; and he shall speak to them all that I shall command him. And***

*it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken to my words [Gods] which he [Christ] shall speak in my name [Son of God], I will require it of him”* (Deuteronomy 18:18-19). Do you understand what Moses wrote? This is the scriptural definition of the word “logos” in Greek. “Logos” means “*The Very Words of God.*” The One God who created everything put all His *power* and thoughts into Christ’s mind. As Christ spoke, He was “*the logos*” or “*God.*”

Remember, Mary gave birth to Jesus through the miracle of The Overshadowing Holy Spirit – which is *the truth* or The Very Words of God. Read the meanings of The Holy Spirit and The Power of God (Luke 1:35). In fact, this scripture defines what and who is a Son of God. Read it over and over again. This Holy Spirit was like *sperm* and consisted of God’s Holiness. Jesus, God’s First Begotten Son, will be followed by everyone in the world as they become Sons of God (I John 4:14). Christ came to save you and all the world. Who was Jesus before He became flesh? Christ was The Word of God by The Power of God’s Holy Spirit. That is why Jesus was given The Holy Spirit without measure. “*For he whom God has sent speaks the words of God: for God gave not the Spirit by measure to him*” (John 3:34). Your God has a beautiful plan to save you and the rest of the world. All this is in spite of Satan. Do you understand this vital point?

God’s Holy Spirit produced Christ in the flesh as The Word of God. That is what Moses wrote. Just as a father gives his sperm to his offspring, God gave Jesus everything. Again, it is “*kind after kind.*” Who was



Jesus before He was human? He was God (YHVH) because God put His *own personal words, thoughts and power* in Christ at His miraculous birth. Jesus was The Word of God through God's Holy Spirit, which is God's *power* and all that God is. That is why the angel said to Mary, "*For with God nothing shall be impossible*" (Luke 1:37). God arranges, makes and builds all things (Hebrews 3:4). Christ was not a separate being or a second God; He was The Logos, which is The Word of God, through His Father's Holy Spirit. So states your *Bible*. The Mystery of God can now be fulfilled "*In You.*" "*Christ – In You*" is that Mystery, so God can be "*All in All – In You*" just as He is "*In Christ.*" "*God said, Let us make [build] man in our image*" (Genesis 1:26). If you become like God, you will also have God's power (II Timothy 1:7).

### Jesus – God's Glory

When Jesus was to be crucified, He prayed to The Father to give Him *the glory* that He had with God before the world was created (John 17:5). Jesus had God's *very word*, which included all of God's thoughts, His *power* and His *Holy Spirit*. Christ created everything that was, is and will be. This is because YHVH is "*The I Am, The Self-existing One.*" Jesus, as a human, was ready to die and leave His *human tabernacle* to become part of God's *glory* (John 17:5). What is The Glory of God? The word "*doxa*" has the same meaning in Hebrew and Greek as it applies to God's *glory*. Its root means "*to be weighty*" or "*completely full.*" All that was, is and will be is in The Glory of God. What is God's *glory* filled with?



When God was going to destroy Israel for sinning, Moses interceded and God honored Moses' request. Moses wanted to ensure that God would keep Israel as His people. God agreed to reveal His *glory* to Moses, "*And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before you and I will proclaim the name of the Lord before you and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious and will show mercy on whom I will show mercy*" (Exodus 33:19). God's "*goodness*" is "*perfection*" or "*complete holiness,*" which is purity or light. However, God said that Moses could not see His face. Moses saw God's *glory* radiating from His backside. No one will ever see God until The New Heaven is created on The New Earth. Then you will see Him as He truly is (I Corinthians 13:12). At His *resurrection*, Christ's human tabernacle (body or flesh) vanished and Jesus took on The Image of God – which is "*kind after kind.*" Who was Jesus before He was human? He was in God's *glory*, which is all of The Word of God. This is possible through the power or completeness of God's very *thoughts* and *mind*. This mind and heart is now clothed in God's *glory*. Jesus now has a *spiritual body* (glory). In the flesh, He had God's *word* and *thoughts* through God's *spirit*. However, it was without The Glory of God or *complete goodness*. The hope of God's *glory* is God's *goodness*.

The Bride of Christ will be worthy to become His Wife and will be clothed in fine linen which is The Righteousness of Saints (Revelation 19:7-8). Christians, known as The Saints, will die for Him as He died for all mankind. The Saints will be willing to die for their Groom. Their minds and hearts will have the same

mind and heart that God and Christ have. Their bodies will be resurrected by God. They will be spiritual and filled with God's *glory*. Both Christ and His Wife will be glorified. The Mystery of God will be completely fulfilled. God's *mystery* is "*Christ – In You.*" Where will The House and The Temple of God be located? It will be under The New Heaven and on The New Earth. Jerusalem is where God, His Son Jesus and Christ's Wife will live (Revelation 21:9). What about New Jerusalem? God's *house* is The Temple of God, "*And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple in it. And the city had no need of the sun, neither the moon, to shine in it; for the glory [goodness] of God did lighten it and the Lamb is the light thereof*" (Revelation 21:22-23). This fulfills The Mystery of God which is all of God's *goodness* illuminating The New Universe as The Temple of God with Christ. (Read the book, *Who Is God*).

Arthur Conan Doyle and Agatha Christie could not create a mystery that lasts 6,000 years and includes billions of individuals. The *maze of life* can lead you astray. God has His *map* in *The Bible* so you can find all *the check points* and solve this mystery. In solving this mystery, you, too, will be able to inherit *the same glory* that Jesus received. You will be like God and Jesus – living, eternally, in Paradise. That, my friend, is The Mystery of God which you have just solved. You now have all the clues and can understand where *the path* will lead you. Don't lose your way! The destination is far too important for you not to be there.

# **PROPHECY IS CYCLICAL**

## **Part 4**

**By**

**ART MOKAROW**

***Prophecy Is Cyclical* is Part 4 of *God's Puzzle Solved* Collection.**

**The following books comprise Volume I**

<b><i>God's Puzzle Solved</i></b>	<b><i>Part 1</i></b>
<b><i>God's Puzzle Completed</i></b>	<b><i>Part 2</i></b>
<b><i>The Mystery of God</i></b>	<b><i>Part 3</i></b>
<b><i>Prophecy Is Cyclical</i></b>	<b><i>Part 4</i></b>
<b><i>God's Mystery Fulfilled</i></b>	<b><i>Part 5</i></b>

**Written By Art Mokarow**

**Copyright TXu 1-727-292 – *Prophecy Is Cyclical***

**All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.**

# CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	v
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	vii
<b>GOD, YOUR TEACHER</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>ELDERSHIP AND THE TRUTH</b>	<b>5</b>
<b>WHAT IS A PROPHET?</b>	<b>11</b>
<b>A CIRCLE AND A LINE</b>	<b>17</b>
<b>SPIRITUAL MINDS</b>	<b>25</b>
<b>WHAT IS DOCTRINE?</b>	<b>31</b>
<b>HUMAN PROPHECY</b>	<b>39</b>
<b>BEGINNING TO END</b>	<b>45</b>
<b>MANY ANTI-CHRISTS</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>PROPHECY DOES REPEAT</b>	<b>57</b>
<b>ELIJAH TO COME</b>	<b>61</b>
<b>WHY CHRIST CAME</b>	<b>69</b>
<b>GOD AND MARRIAGE</b>	<b>75</b>

## PREFACE

Prophecy is God's predestined *will* and *purpose*. God has a deep desire to fulfill all He planned for you. But, it is not a command like *The Law of Moses*. God gets *great pleasure* when He sees His plan coming to fruition (Ephesians 1).

Why doesn't God *force* or *command* Christians to do what He knows is good for them? There is an extremely important reason why God wants you to decide to be part of His plan. You will find God never forces anyone to follow Him. God wants you *to want* Him.

“*Prophecy*” is “*the future foretold*” according to God's will. How is it possible that God knows all the outcomes of His *plans*, especially, since it is based upon everyone's *free choice*? You will find prophecy is cyclical, which can and will be, scripturally, proven.

Comments and criticisms are welcomed. As usual, no money can be accepted for this book. All books are absolutely *free*. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given). Our hope is you use Art's books as a study tool.

**Art Mokarow**

**address: P.O. Box 1197 Montgomery, TX 77356**

**e-mail: [art@mokarow.com](mailto:art@mokarow.com) (Comments and Questions)**

**websites: [www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com](http://www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com) (Books)**

**[www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net](http://www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net) (Articles)**

## INTRODUCTION

God told you, from the beginning, that His *will* was to make you and *everyone* He created in His *image* (Genesis 1:26). When this is accomplished, you will have a *new name* written on your forehead. John, The Apostle wrote, “*And they shall see his face [God’s] and his name shall be in their foreheads*” (Revelation 22:4). They will be family.

Under The New Heaven and on The New Earth, Christ reveals that Christians will continue to become God’s Sons (Revelation 21). As a Son of God, you will be in His *image* (as Jesus is) (Hebrews 1:1-3).

God’s name is “*YHWH*,” “*The I Am*,” “*The Existing One*.” God’s very name, *The I Am*, will be imbedded in your *mind*. You will be *One* with God and Jesus. You will look and *think* like God!

God (Elohim) created everything in heaven and on earth (Genesis 1:1) and has *total liberty* (free choice) to do whatever He chooses. In the future, God will accomplish *more* than He has to this day. (Read the book, *God’s Puzzle Completed*). Never forget that God was The Creator of all things in the past and will create all things in the future (Hebrews 3:4).

Read God’s promise, “*Hearken to me, you stout-hearted [full of pride], that are far from righteousness: I bring near my righteousness: it shall not be far off and my salvation shall not tarry: and I will place [desire for] salvation in Zion for Israel my glory*” (Isaiah 46:12-13). That is absolute! God *declares* that His *will* and *desire* shall come to *pass*. It will definitely occur. That

is *prophecy* or *fore-knowledge* of the future. It is definite! Amen.

## Purpose Of Free Choice

You are ready to discover why *free choice* is so *important* to God. Adam and Eve were destined to be in God's *image* if they ate from *the right tree*. One tree led to Salvation (The Tree of Life). The other tree led to *death* (The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil). This was Adam and Eve's *free choice*. They chose *death*. They wanted to live their life according to their whims and on their own terms.

*The Bible* tells you over and over again that you have been given *free choice*, even when you are filled with *self-pride* and *unrighteousness* (Isaiah 46:12). Still, God insists He will bring you His righteousness and His Salvation (Isaiah 46:13). That's settled and it is absolute!

God is *Elohim, The Builder of All Things* and He will give *life* to everyone He created. That is why God does not give *death*, which is *the absence of life*. Jesus said, "*I am the God of Abraham and the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob [Israel]? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living*" (Matthew 22:32).

God has nothing to do with *death*. He did not, nor does He, produce *death*. Men and women die by *choosing* not to follow God. It is very *simple*. God gives *life* to those who *choose* it. Nothing can come from nothing. *Life is a gift* for those who choose to become like God and Jesus. Why is that? God is *good* and being like God can make you *good* (Matthew 19:17).



In six days, God created the heaven and the earth to be a *Paradise* in The Garden of Eden. The Garden was God's *property*. This was, also, where God's *temple* and *house* were located. The rest of *the earth* belonged to God but was left to be developed by The Gentiles. It remained a *wilderness* (Psalm 24:1-4).

Everything God created was, indeed, *very good* (no sin existed) (Genesis 1:31). Adam and Eve missed *the mark* by not eating from The Tree of Life for *Salvation*. Therefore, their sin brought *death*. God insists, according to His will (desire), that you be like Him without evilness or sin. You must know what is *good* and *evil*. When you choose *good*, you will receive *the gift of life* (which is "*Christ – In You*"). Then, you will be *perfect* and *Holy* like God. After that, God promises you a life in *Paradise*. You may not be able to fathom this, but you will be in *perpetual joy* and *happiness*. You will be totally *free* (not in slavery) and you will be able to build and invent whatever you may desire or want. You will be just like God, The Father. Kind after kind. Being *Holy* and without *flaws* will allow you to do what is *good*, just like God. Christ said that when you are in God's *rest* (The Sabbath), you will always do *good works* like God. Now it is plain and simple why Salvation is a gift from God.

When you become *One* with God and Jesus, *the real trinity* will be God, The Father, Jesus and His Sons (which includes all mankind when they finally repent)! Here is what Jesus prayed to God, "*That they* [Sons of God] *all may be one; as you, Father, are in me* [Jesus] *and I in you, that they also may be one* [exact images] *in us: that the world may believe that you have sent me*" (John 17:21). Wow! It becomes clear. God's purpose

**is to continually make you like Him and Christ. However, because you are in the flesh, you still need to repent when you *sin*. When you *sin* because of *self-pride* or *unrighteousness*, God will not give up until His *will* and *plan* for you have been accomplished. Therefore, *prophecy is cyclical* in order to achieve God's predestined purpose, which is to have everyone become Sons of God.**

***Through sin*, God allows you to be destroyed. However, by giving His *mercy*, He allows you to start all over by your own free choice. Over and over again, you are about to witness Christ came to Save The World (I John 4:14).**

**When you *sin*, God could have you destroyed. Instead, because of His *love*, He gives *mercy* and gives you a new start when you repent (by your free choice).**

## CHAPTER 1

# GOD, YOUR TEACHER

God believes in home schooling until His children are ready for further university training. The word “*university*” means “*a universal level of teaching.*” “*Philosophy*” is defined as “*the knowledge of life.*” Ultimately, you need to get a Ph.D. in *the knowledge of life.* “*Life knowledge*” in Greek means “*Gnostic.*” “*Gnosticism*” is “*a form of the knowledge of life.*”

### God’s School

God teaches you His *knowledge* so you can understand *doctrine.* What is doctrine? In Hebrew, the word “*doctrine*” means “*a teaching*” (Isaiah 28:9). *Doctrine* can also *carry the function of a message.* Remember, *prophecy* itself can only be partially understood (I Corinthians 13:9). God is your real teacher because He created you, the rest of mankind and all things (Hebrews 3:4).

You must begin to learn about *the universe* as babies, “*line upon line*” or “*precept [idea] upon precept [idea]*” (Isaiah 28:10). No one can know everything until they become *perfect.* That will only happen when they see God’s face (I Corinthians 13:12). When you are resurrected, God will allow you to know what He is all

about. You will know what He has been doing and building. God will, personally, teach you as He did Adam and Eve. At that time, you will receive your Doctorate.

*A “Doctorate” is nothing more than “doctrine – a teaching” (but only a part). Later, when God discloses all doctrine, you will be scholars (ready to rule). Jesus tells you about God’s methodology (system) of teaching, “But be not you called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all you are brethren [teacher]. And call no man your father upon the earth; for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be you called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ” (Matthew 23:8-10). It is all spelled out, very simply, in *The Bible*.*

You begin as babes in The Garden of God’s *house* and you choose (by free choice) which *school* you want to learn from about *life* and *the universe*. You are free to choose which school. Adam and Eve wanted to learn and earn their *Bachelor’s Degree* from a school of their own choosing. They did not want to be taught by God through The Tree of Life. They wanted to do *the work* on their own without any *family interference*. Does this sound familiar?

God, however, *loves His family* and allows His *children* to remain on His *property* and learn on their own whether it is right or not. True repentance will enable you to look to God for guidance. When Cain murdered Abel, he could no longer remain with his family. After he left, he was completely on his own and struggled to make a living. He had to do *all the work in the*

*wilderness* by himself. The City of Nod was *the wilderness* in The Land of Shinar (Genesis 10:10). This was Babylon.

Eve is called The Mother of All Living (Genesis 3:20). All humanity came from her. She was known as The Queen Mother to everyone in Shinar, which was The Great Babylon.

Adam and Eve remained in Eden working and learning to *survive* the best they could. They had to learn through their own experience. They were no longer in The Garden with their Father. Adam was in charge because he wasn't deceived like Eve (I Timothy 2:14).

### Holding The Truth

Noah had three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth. Of the three, only Shem followed Noah's *teachings of righteousness* (Genesis 10).

Peter told Christians there would be scoffers in *the last days of truth*. “*For this they willingly are ignorant of [free choice], that by the word of God the heavens were of old and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished [died]. But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved to fire [Lake of Fire] against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the lord as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day*” (II Peter 3:5-8).

Peter told The Christians about *the prophecy* of God's *entire plan*. Why did Peter preach that they should not be ignorant? *Salvation* could take thousands of years according to God. God's *will* and *prophecy* is predicated upon *free choice* (just as Adam and Eve had) (II Peter 3:9-10). Today, you have the same choice between the two trees in The Garden. You can choose The Tree of Life or you can repeat what Adam and Eve did.

Until everyone *comes to repentance*, your Messiah will not return. Peter clearly declares *prophecy is cyclical, repetitive* and depends upon *your free choice*. *Prophecy is conditional* upon which tree you choose. *Prophecies will fail* and even *knowledge* will vanish (disappear) (I Corinthians 13:8). The word "*fail*" in Greek is defined as "*cease, stop or pause*" because it is *conditional*. It all depends upon *a Christian's free choice*. Even *knowledge* and *truth* will be *lost* or will *vanish*.

## CHAPTER 2

### ELDERSHIP AND THE TRUTH

From *birth*, everyone, one way or another, is in Babylon. All mankind has *free choice* to make *their own decisions*. This choice is based upon a person's individual experience coupled with man's intangible imagination. Did God leave mankind with *any teachers*? How does God teach all the children who decide to learn on their own?

#### Life Experience

God uses teachers, professors and then more teachers. Besides overseeing His school to ensure that it was properly run, God had a special creation – angels. Angels were just a little higher than mankind.

In Hebrew, “*an angel*” is just “*a messenger*” or “*an emissary*” from God. Their purpose is to serve God by making *man* in His *image*. Notice, they are *spirit beings* (Hebrews 1:14). They can, also, appear as humans (Genesis 18:1-23). Abraham knew God in *human form*. Two angels joined Abraham in a meal on their way to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah (Genesis 18:4-5). Angels were taught by God, personally (Isaiah 6:1-6). The Temple of God was Holy. The highest angels were The Seraphims who understood that fire purged sin.

God discussed Sodom with Abraham because they had a personal relationship, friend to friend, “*And the LORD said, Shall I hide from Abraham that thing which I do; Seeing that Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in him?*” (Genesis 18:17-18). The scholars call those who are *spirit beings* (like God) a “*theophany*.” His angels are theophanies and are *spirit beings* like God. The greatest angel is *the angel of The LORD*. Presently, *angels* are *your elders* since they were created to help mankind. They are God’s assistants who watch over and help everyone become like God (for a very tremendous reason). Angels are far more *experienced* than humans. Look at what The Apostle Paul said, “*But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage [slaves] under the elements of the world*” (Galatians 4:2-3). Paul explains how God teaches everyone so they can, one day, be over His creation. It is an *Eldership Educational System* created and taught by God. God’s school is an apprenticeship program with elders. Those with *more knowledge* and *experience* become God’s *teachers* and assist Him in making everyone a Son of God. Why? Listen to God’s answer to Abraham.

This is why God chose Abraham and his seed to *bless* all nations, “*For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him and they shall keep the way of the LORD, to do justice and judgment [Jacob’s ladder]; that the LORD may bring upon Abraham that which he has spoken of him*” (Genesis 18:19). God’s elder system continues with humans as well.



Knowledge flows from God to His *angels* and, then, to *humans*. God teaches by *free choice* when a *child* or *baby* is ready to begin to mature. It is all predicated upon *eldership*, which is learning from *experience* through God's guidance.

### The Bachelor's System

When Adam and Eve decided to learn on their own, they had to leave God's *house*. However, they still lived on His property in Eden and God was still watching over them. Humanity learns through life experiences and observations from their five senses. As a person ages, they learn from both their mistakes and their successes. They know *what works* and *what doesn't*. Because you love your children, you do not want them to make the same mistakes or commit the sins that you know carry harsh penalties. God places *the responsibility* upon *the elders* to pass on what they have learned from their personal life experiences. This is *God's elder program*, which should be acknowledged even when you decide to learn by your own *life experiences*. Even animals pass on *survival systems* to their young. Of course, animals are limited and cannot do what humans are able to do (Genesis 11:6-7). Animals cannot create – they, only, keep duplicating.

*The eldership method* works. The word “*elder*” in Greek is “*presbyter*” and is defined as “*an older person.*” *The younger people* should submit themselves to the older person (I Peter 5:5). Older individuals have many solutions to living a problem-free life. Peter was getting older when he said, “*The elders which*

*are among you I exhort, who am also an elder and a witness [experience] of the sufferings of Christ and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed. Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre [money], but of a ready [willing] mind; Neither as being lords over God's heritage but being ensamples [examples] to the flock"* (I Peter 5:1-3). Peter was saying that the younger people should be taught by *the elder or older ones*. *The elder men* have so many more experiences to pass on to you. They can help you bypass many pitfalls. God's *educational method* is through proper examples from *the elderly* in the church. Experience is of *great value* to God. The elders must speak God's *supreme words* and be *humble* examples to the young who *lack life's experiences*. *Eldership* is not a position in the church but *a right*. They are worthy of *acknowledgement*. The Jewish synagogues follow this system. Christians, also, follow the same method to a degree. The Apostle Paul relates to this procedure.

### Paul's Church Teaching

Here is how it works. When Paul thought he was going to die, he started to instruct Timothy. Timothy was *a much younger evangelist* (not an elder). Since he was not an elder, he needed added instruction from Paul regarding how he should behave. This is the first principle Timothy was to follow, "*Rebuke not an elder [older person], but intreat him as a father [informed]; and the younger men as brethren*" (I Timothy 5:1). First and foremost, the elderly are *a special group* in The Churches of God. They are not to be talked *down to*

or snickered at behind their backs. Too many young people seem prone to this type of behavior. Timothy should encourage them. *The younger* were to be treated like *brothers* and Timothy was not over them. He never acted like *a high and mighty boss*. There were two types of *elders* in the church, “*Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word [God’s word] and doctrine [teaching]*” (I Timothy 5:17). One particular *group of elders* was equipped in The Word. The elders who were preaching The Word of God were worthy of double honor. Their expenses can be reimbursed. Elder preachers are to be respected for their labor. They are to be just like *a firstborn son* receiving twice as much inheritance (Deuteronomy 21:17). Those laboring in God’s word are to get double honor. This proves that *tithes* do not go to the ministry. *Tithes* are only for *the widows, orphans* and *Priests* of Levi or Melchizedek. They can receive *tithes* because they do not have *an inheritance*. Elders receive their family’s inheritance so they do not need *tithes*. They, too, must receive double honor (I Timothy 5:17-18). Clearly, Paul describes how *the labourer* is worthy of his reward (an ox receives food but not tithes). To receive *double honor* means more than *financial needs* but higher *respect* for their *profession*.

So, there are *two types* of *elderly* in the church. There are elders who rule by *the examples* of their lives and there are *elders* who are *experienced in the scriptures* and can *teach* God’s word. This is God’s method of *teaching* – God first, then *the angels* (spiritual elders) and, finally, human elders with successful life experi-

ences. God's *educational methodology* is clear. It is an *eldership system* from God down to the human family. God uses the same method in *the local churches*. Here is God's warning to *the ministry*, "*But if any* [elders, widows, younger] *provide not* [work] *for his own and specially for those of his own house, he has denied the faith* [Christianity] *and is worse than an infidel* [rejects god]" (I Timothy 5:8). Ministers are to support their own families through their labor and serve as an example to the church, but they do receive basic needs like an ox who is fed for his work (I Corinthians 9:9).

Here is what The Apostles and elders in the churches did, "*For yourselves know how you ought to follow us* [apostles]: *for we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you; Neither did we eat any man's bread* [human needs] *for nought* [no labor]; *but wrought with labour and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you* [members]: *Not because we have not power* [for needs of survival], *but to make ourselves an ensample* [example] *to you to follow us*" (II Thessalonians 3:7-9).

God's *educational system* is without flaw. Even the financial needs of the church are cared for. God's *entire school methodology* is perfect and self-sustaining. *Eldership* is the key to a *perfect educational system*. Even *The Prophets* were selected by *free choice* unless they were of The Levites (by genealogy). Prophecy is by *free choice* and, therefore, is *cyclically* dependent upon human nature. *The truth* is passed on by *elders* after being taught by The Word of God.

## CHAPTER 3

### WHAT IS A PROPHET?

Some prophets (like Jeremiah) were chosen when they were in their mother's womb. In the same way, God chose Israel (by genealogy) because of Abraham and his faithfulness. Other *prophets* were *selected* for specific purposes as God deemed it necessary. Prophets were God's assistants. They warned the people by prophesying their future but only in part (I Corinthians 13).

#### Daniel, The Prophet

Israel and Judah went into captivity as slaves because of their corrupt behavior. The Prophet Daniel continuously warned them to turn back to God since they were His children. Isaiah 1 prophesied and foretold this event. (Read the book, *The Ten Lost Tribes*).

First, Israel (The Ten Tribes) was divided from Judah. This left Judah with 2<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> Tribes. Then, Israel went into captivity. Later, Judah went into captivity as well (conquered by King Nebuchadnezzar).

Judah remained in captivity for seventy years. God chose Daniel to be a Prophet and lead the people. Daniel was chosen because he had a right heart. While

Daniel prayed, an angel (God's assistant) said, "*And he said to me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand the words that I speak to you and stand upright: for to you am I now sent. And when he had spoken this word to me, I stood trembling. Then said he to me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that you did set your heart to understand [without a personal agenda] and to chasten yourself before your God, your words were heard and I am come for your words*" (Daniel 10:11-12).

In The Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve had *free choice* to decide between The Tree of Life or The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. Daniel had the same *free choice*. Why did God pick Daniel as His Prophet?

*Prayer* gets God's attention. But, what made God think more about Daniel was the fact that he *repented*. He scourged *himself*. He searched his heart and mind. That was his real reason for turning to God. Daniel wasn't thinking of himself or feeling sorry for himself because he was a slave in captivity. He was concerned about God's people (The Jews) and, above all, he wanted to please God. His *heart* and *mind* were teachable, so God taught him *the truth*.

## Genealogy or Repentance

God selected His Prophets based upon genealogy or a person's *heartfelt repentance*. Genealogy is important to God because the forefathers (such as Abraham) were so *faithful* to Him. Nothing guarantees any particular person will be used by God. Each person (on their own) has to come to *repentance* before God can

*teach* and use them for His purpose. Samuel's mother dedicated her son to God's service. He was chosen through *genealogy*. Samuel's mother taught him about her promise to God. When Samuel reached the right age, she brought him to The Priest for training. Samuel proved *faithful* in living his personal life. So, God used him as a Prophet. Samuel had *free choice* and chose to follow God.

### Jonah And The Fish

*The Scriptures* reveal another example regarding how a Prophet of God is chosen. God used Jonah and *the big fish* in a unique way.

The Ninevites of Assyria were a violent and wicked people. God was ready to punish them, but He always gives mankind a warning before He punishes them. It should never be a shock when God strikes. He forewarns like any loving Father would.

Jonah, a very patriotic person for his nation of Judah, knew Assyria would take his people captive. God saw Jonah's dedication and called him to warn The Ninevites to *repent*. Jonah balked. He hated the fact that The Assyrians could conquer his people. He told God "no" and ran away so God would not use him.

Because of Jonah's disobedience, he was swallowed by *a big fish* in the sea. For three days and three nights, Jonah was lost in a type of *wilderness* (being without God). Jonah finally *repented*, so God delivered him from his trial. Then he went and preached to The



Ninevites and they repented. Jonah was angry but had succeeded in his mission. Why was he so upset? Jonah had been used by God to seal Israel's fate. God was going to use Assyria to capture Israel and make them humble so they could repent.

At the end of *The Book of Jonah*, The Prophet sat with great anger in the hot sun. Jonah would rather have been a zealot fighting The Assyrians. God had pity upon Jonah and made a tree grow to shade him. This entire book is extremely vital to Salvation. *The Book of Jonah* reveals the difference between two Prophets – Jonah and Christ.

### Greater Than Jonah

Jesus, *A Prophet of God*, speaks about this situation, “*Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master [Rabbi], we would see a sign from you. But he answered and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it [three days and three nights], but the sign of the prophet Jonas [Jonah]. For as Jonas [Jonah] was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Ninevah shall rise in judgment with this generation and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas [Jonah] and behold, a greater than Jonas [Jonah] is here*” (Matthew 12:38-41). Deuteronomy 18 reveals Jesus was a Prophet of God.

My, how awesome! The difference between Jesus and



Jonah as *Prophets* was revealed. He, also, condemned The Pharisees and their generation. The fact that Jesus was in the grave three days and three nights is proof of Christ's *Messiahship*. But, no one seems to accurately count which three days and three nights. Why is this?

Jesus, The Christ, was greater than Jonah, not because the three days were significant, but for another important reason. "*Then Jesus said to them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while you have the light, less darkness come upon you: for he that walks in darkness knows not where he goes. While you have light, believe in the light, that you may be the children of light*" (John 12:35-36). Jesus was *the light or the truth* sent to *The World* to save it but His own people did not accept Him. Being evil, they only knew He was dead for three days and three nights. But which three days and nights? Darkness set in at 12:00 noon when Jesus was crucified. *Days are counted using dark and light*. That day ended at 12:00 noon. How does one start counting? There weren't twelve hours in those days as Christ said (John 11:9). No one knows if He was resurrected on the first day of the week because it was still dark when Mary came into the tomb and He was already gone (John 20:1). Christ could have been resurrected by light and darkness on The Seventh Day Sabbath.

What made Jesus greater? He was more than a *Prophet*. He is a *greater Prophet* because He was to be *The Savior* for all mankind. He will, also, be *the judge* at *The White Throne Judgment*. Now, for a big

*surprise.* God picks His *Prophets* through either genealogy or knowing what is in their hearts. Any Prophet He chooses must have a good heart. So, *who can be a Prophet?* The Apostle Paul said, “*Be you followers of me, even as I also am of Christ*” (I Corinthians 11:1). One can be a Prophet by becoming like Christ. It all depends on what gifts God gives, “*I would that you all speak with tongues [foreign language], but rather [than tongues] that you prophesied: for greater is he that prophesies than he that speaks with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying*” (I Corinthians 14:5). Do you get it?

“*A Prophet,*” or “*an oracle*” in Greek, means “*one who only speaks God’s word.*” Wow! Paul said The Church of God should only *speak God’s words.* That is why Paul said to follow him as he followed Christ. Christ is a *greater Prophet* who *speaks God’s truth* and is *The Light of The World* (John 1:9 and 17). This is an earth-shaking statement from *The Bible.*

Everyone can be a Prophet of God by living *every word* that proceeds out of the mouth of God (Matthew 4:4). But, it must be by your decision (free choice) to follow God (I John 4:14). You are, also, to be *witnesses* of Christ. Jesus Christ was *The Greatest Prophet* in the world. All Christians should be *Prophets* and do the same works Jesus did. Your main job, if you are one of His, is to *be* a Prophet by only speaking God’s word.

## CHAPTER 4

### A CIRCLE AND A LINE

Jesus is compared to *the sun* (Malachi 4:2). Why? It has to do with mathematics. God devised mathematics – algebra, geometry, trigonometry and calculus. How do you know this to be true?

#### The Universe

The universe reveals all of God's visible and invisible *creations*. It can *clearly be seen* and will give you *an understanding* of His *eternal power* (Romans 1:20). There is *no logical reason* for anyone to deny that God exists and is *real*.

Logic (*common sense* and *intelligence*) demands that a *super* or *great mind* is necessary for *creation*. It could not have happened by accident. The length of time doesn't matter. It would take forever (without end) to construct the creation (Isaiah 55). It could never have been accomplished through Science. Mere man certainly cannot create *a single blade of grass* in any laboratory. (Read the book, *God's Science Vs. Human Science*).

Thousands of years have passed and science is still trying to find out how *the creation* started from *nothing*. Computerized calculations are being used to sim-

ulate *a super mind* and, still, no one knows the answer. Mathematics proves that *creation by accident is foolishness*. It is impossible!

## Circles, Triangles and Space

When children first learn mathematics, they use blocks or objects of different shapes. Seeing and feeling are involved along with the rest of a child's senses. Reality is what your senses tell you *is true*. Being *truthful* demands *a creator* just because of *the vastness of the universe*. Your understanding of *space* and *earth* makes you think of *space* in *various forms*. Anything that is built has a form: rectangles, angles, circles or lines. Straight lines imply *a beginning* and *an ending*, or do they?

## Alpha And Omega

How did mathematics and higher math begin? Amazingly, it all started with *a straight line*. If you draw *a straight line* uninhibited, it would never end. It is eternal and forever (ages and ages without end). To mathematically compute it, you need an alphabet and numbers. God declares that He is *The Alpha* and *The Omega* – the beginning and the end of *a straight line*. “*Alpha*” and “*Omega*” is “*the starting point*” and “*its conclusion*.” The Hebrew and Greek languages have the same definitions. *The Old Testament* is mostly in Hebrew and *The New Testament* is in Greek. Why?

*The Book of Matthew* is thought to have originally been written in Hebrew and translated into Greek.

*The New Testament*, from its origin, is about *Salvation*. Christ told The Samaritan woman that many individuals did not understand what they were *worshipping* (which gods). The Jews knew who they *worshipped*. Then He said, “*for salvation is of the Jews*” (John 4:22).

You should know how to seek *The One True God* and *Father of all* (Isaiah 55:6). Isaiah states you must first come to understand God through the power of His mind and thoughts (Isaiah 55:8). The Jews rejected Jesus, so He turned to a more worthy nation (Matthew 21). The known world, in that day, was controlled by The Roman Empire but, educationally, they looked to The Greeks who were considered “*the wise of their day*.” It is exactly what Paul said, “*I am debtor both to the Greeks [wise] and to the Barbarians [the unwise known as ignorant]; both to the wise and to the unwise*” (Romans 1:14). *The New Testament* was changed from Hebrew except when it addressed The Israelites. Read about God accepting The Gentiles into The Body of Christ in Acts 15 (read all of this chapter). It was The Gentiles opportunity to be taught about The True God. The Jews in Jerusalem were The Bishops of The Home Church. The Roman Empire slowly placed Greek Bishops around The Mediterranean Sea over the next two to three hundred years. These Bishops were educated in Greek philosophy.

## The Gnostics

Education, from The Time of Babylon in The Land of Shinar, grew in all nations (Genesis 10). Each nation

had their own type of knowledge known as *The Gnostics*. Remember, Gnosticism began at The Tower of Babel.

*The University System* migrated from Shinar through all of Mesopotamia to Asia Minor, Turkey and Greece. It became *a worldwide system*. Once it spread to The Roman Empire, all Europe accepted *Babylonian knowledge as the truth*.

Asia, India, The West (The Americas) and others had *their own various traditions of the same truth*. The entire world in Christ's day taught their versions of Gnosticism. It wasn't a religion as much as it was *the knowledge of life and mankind's purpose*. It was *a philosophy*. It is about *the knowledge of all living things, the universe* and to find what it's all about.

*A Liberal Arts Education* is a Bachelor's Degree in a study of all subjects pertinent to getting a Master's Degree and a Doctorate. Language, mathematics and science were the foundation. *Language was the entrance to understanding*. Mathematics taught how to measure *knowledge and the universe*. Science gave it meaning or *the truth of reality*.

## The Human Intellect

Your five senses are the beginning of understanding. The more your senses grasp information, the greater your knowledge (*gnosis*) becomes and the closer you come to *the truth*. *Awareness* comes through *inspiration*. You begin to use your *imagination* and come to

*conclusions* about *reality*. You guess through hypotheses as to *the theories* of *reality* and *truth*. When one finds an answer to a problem, they are *inspired*.

By guessing, you create possibilities (*a hypothesis* is a sensible probability). Options are *different choices* that could help discover the answer. Today, too many theories are accepted as *truth*.

Science is filled with possibilities but not necessarily *the truth*. Science cannot be expected to have the capabilities to know all the possibilities. Today, *with computers*, you increase the possibilities of reality. A computer is *a mechanical device* that helps your *mind*, *mathematically*, *calculate more variants and options*. Then, you arrive at your *theories*.

“*Mathematics*” is “*a tool for measurement*,” while “*science*” is “*an attempt to grasp the possibilities for truth*.” Science is based upon *physics*. Physics is the basis of how *the physical universe works*. This “*knowledge of all things*” is “*The Law of Physics*.”

What a person’s five senses detect or perceive comprises *their universe*. There can, of course, be other *dimensions*, like *the spiritual dimension*. *Spiritual dimensions* are impossible to understand, *intellectually*. Jesus said, “*Verily, verily, I say to you* [Nicodemus], *We speak that we do know and testify that we have seen; and you receive not our witness. If I have told you earthly things* [physical] *and you believe not, how shall you believe, if I tell you of heavenly things?*” (John 3:11-12). There it is!



***Spiritual truth can only be understood by a spirit-filled mind (with God's Holy Spirit). A physical mind can only comprehend the physical world through the known Laws of The Universe. Spiritual reality is not understandable when you have an unconverted mind. The human intellect tries to understand universal mysteries through mathematics and science.***

***The universe has many shapes and forms. What shapes and forms compose the universe? There are squares, rectangles, angles, circles and lines. That is math. One line plus one line creates two lines – on and on. Straight lines can continue to infinity unless they are hindered. When a line is obstructed, it can become an angle, square, triangle or circle.***

**Mathematics is the study of increasing, hindering or changing a form (angles, squares, triangles and circles). One plus one is two and so on.**

**Algebra is the study of changing a straight line into other forms by adding, subtracting, multiplying or dividing through different formulas.**

**Geometry is the study of different forms that are found in the universe. Geometry is *the geography of the universe through measurement*. Trigonometry is the study of measuring triangular forms in the universe.**

**Calculus is the study of calculating the possibilities which can be proven to be true. Finally, derivatives determine what conclusions can be real or prophecy (which is the ability to foretell the future).**



**When humans only know the physical dimensions, they will only understand knowledge *physically*. That is why, at The Tower of Babel, they began to worship *the creation* instead of The Creator (Romans 1). Their philosophy (the study of life) was Gnosticism. This began a Worldwide Babylonian System because unconverted humans can only understand physical things (circles, squares, lines and angles).**

***Spiritual reality demands a change of mind from physical imaginations to spiritual. “Repentance” is “a change of mind to God’s mind” (Isaiah 55, Philippians 2:12 and Luke 1:35).***

## CHAPTER 5

### SPIRITUAL MINDS

When you repent, God gives you His *Holy Spirit*. Jesus said The Holy Spirit leads you to *all truths* which includes *the spiritual truths* (John 14:13-14). By free choice, you must want to eat from The Tree of Life.

#### Circular Thinking

God always thinks *circularly*. God's straight line can bend into *a perfect circle* (externally). That is why God compares Jesus to *the sun* (Malachi 4). Christ is The One who understood because He was filled with God's Holy Spirit from birth (John 3:34). Christ told you what you must do to enter The Kingdom of God (John 3:5). Unless you are born of *water and spirit*, you cannot be in The Kingdom of God.

Water *cleanses* your body but, in the end, you die. All that is left is God's Holy Spirit so you can have *a right mind and heart*. You become a Son of God (like Jesus). Just as Christ was given *life* by God, you will, also, be given Eternal Life. You will no longer be like a straight line. You will be circular like the sun (self-sustaining). "*Spirit*" is "*perpetual and unending.*" *Life inherited* (by heredity) from God is *a gift*. It is *the same Spirit* that Christ had from *birth*. It is God's Holy Spirit (Luke 1:35). With *The Spirit* from God, His

*breath, His Holy Spirit and a sound loving mind, The Mystery of God will be solved. You literally fulfill or become The Law of Christ. “For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death” (Romans 8:2). The Law of The Spirit of Life is a requirement or command from God to ensure Salvation (like Jesus).*

Your body is destined to die, but God’s Holy Spirit gives you *life*. You have life when you have God’s Holy Spirit. This is *a gift* from God through His Son, Jesus (Matthew 10:28).

Just as *the sun’s glory* radiates and gives *life* to the earth, you will, also, radiate God’s *glory* and be able to give life. You become *One* with God and Jesus. God, Jesus and you are *the true trinity* of The God Family. God will, then, be “*All In All*” which is The Great Mystery. (Read the book, *God’s Puzzle Completed*).

## The Mystery Of God

What *mystery* did God keep from *The Prophets*? Peter said, “*Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come to you: Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ [God’s Holy Spirit] which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow*” (I Peter 1:10-11).

What is The Mystery of God? Who would be The Christ and suffer for *everyone’s sins in the flesh* so

they can receive *Salvation, glory* and God's *goodness*? When would this happen? Do you understand what *The Prophets* did not know? Everyone knew The Gospel of God from The Garden of Eden until Jesus was born (in the flesh). But, there was still *a mystery*. Who was The Messiah and when would *The Savior* come?

*The Mystery of God* is "*Christ – In You*" (Colossians 1:27). *The Mystery* was who The Messiah would be. Peter reveals God's secret, "*To whom it was revealed, that not to themselves [prophets], but to us they did minister [preach] the things, which are now reported to you by them [Apostles] that have preached the gospel to you with the Holy Ghost [Spirit] sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into*" (I Peter 1:12). Wow!

All prophecy revolves around *the mystery* of who The Messiah will be and when He will come. This is all about *World History*. *Prophecy* becomes *history*. Jesus told His Disciples not to reveal who He was (Matthew 16:20). *The Mystery of God* is "*Christ – In You*" (Colossians 1:27). Until *the prophecy* occurred, it was to remain *a mystery*. Why?

The reason God wanted *Salvation* to be *a mystery* was, "*Jesus said to them, If you were blind [because of a mystery], you should have no sin: but now you say, We see; therefore your sin remains*" (John 9:41). My, my, how wonderful and great God is to consider every possible outcome.

God's *Mystery of Salvation* must remain a secret until

you *repent* and desire to change above *all else*. Until you do, God will not make *known* (even to His Prophets) *The Full Truth of The Gospel*. It is a matter of *free choice* and the fruit from which tree you decide to eat (metaphorically speaking).

*Prophecy is cyclical and constantly repeats* over and over again until you are teachable and ready to be taught. That is why *The Prophets* and *angels* desire to know what you understand. All *mankind* must come to Christ in his/her order (I Corinthians 15:22-23). “*All*” is in *the present substantive mood* (grammatically) meaning “*it is conditional.*” You must choose to come “*To Christ*” through *repentance*. It is your *free choice*. When you repent, God will give you His Holy Spirit and The Mystery of God (“*Christ – In You*”). You must continue to grow to become like Jesus (Ephesians 4:13).

### From Babes To Maturity

You start *as babes* and while you are still carnal, you begin to come to Christ (I Corinthians 3). When you are a child, you think as a child; but when you mature (like Christ), you put away childish things (I Corinthians 13:11). At first, you only know *in part* (doctrines and prophecy). When you become *perfect* or *complete*, you will know all things. This is God’s *way of teaching* (His methodology) (I Corinthians 13:9-10).

You know very little as a babe, child or adolescent. In adulthood, you may not know much of The Tree of Life and The God who created you. But, if you continue to pray and study, you will begin to grow to the

stature of Jesus. Later, when you are resurrected, you will be *a Son of God*.

The Mystery or *process of maturing* is clear. God teaches you higher mathematics and pure science when you are able to fully comprehend it. What a wonderful Father you have. It is time to, scripturally, understand what role *doctrine* plays in *The Mystery of God*.

## CHAPTER 6

### WHAT IS DOCTRINE?

The most you can know is only *“in part”* and it, also, applies to *prophecy* (I Corinthians 13:9). *“Doctrine”* is *“a teaching of what is known.”* You have to conclude that any teaching is only *a part of the truth*. All *doctrine* is only *a piece of the truth* and something is *lacking*. *“Prophecy”* is, also, *“a doctrine”* or *“a teaching.”* Each *doctrine* or *teaching* brings you more and more truth.

#### Parable Of The Talents

Jesus explained that if God gave you *a talent* as a gift, you better not bury it. If you do, you are liable to have *that talent* taken from you. It will be given to a person who increases *their talents* (Matthew 25). Notice, even *The Prophets* had only *a part of the truth*. *The whole truth* is still *a mystery*. Jesus is *The Author* and *Revealer* of that *mystery*. Only Jesus has God's *entire story*. *“The Mystery of God”* is *“Jesus.”* He is *The One* who gives you *the truth* (John 1:17).

#### First The Prophets

*The Bible* reveals truth *little by little*. As you read *The Bible*, each *doctrine* begins to tell *The Truth* of *The*

*Gospel.* You see Jesus manifesting *that truth* in His *human life* (Hebrews 1:1-2).

When Christ began His commission, He had to *battle with Satan in the wilderness*. Satan used *the same deceptive tactics* he used with Eve. Satan told Jesus to jump from the pinnacle (top) of The Temple because he knew the angels were, scripturally, guaranteed to save Him. Satan's quote was scripturally *perfect* (Psalm 91:11-12). Satan preached *biblical doctrine* exactly as it was written.

Jesus already *warned* the evil one, "*Man shall not live by bread [food] alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God*" (Matthew 4:4). When you study *The Bible* (God's way), you will know *the whole story*. He left *The Bible* for you to read, study and, little by little, understand. To know some of The Word of God (on a particular subject) is *not enough*. You will still not comprehend or know *the truth* of God's *Mystery*. *Doctrine*, by itself, is knowing *a truth – partially*. Unless you continue to *grow spiritually*, you will be *ignorant* in regard to *The Mystery of God*. You will still be in *darkness*, which is Babylon. You must continue to gain more knowledge in order to understand *good* from *evil*.

### Only God Is Good

First, you need to realize that *The Prophets* gave *doctrinal teaching*. You, also, need to understand that Jesus is *the way* to *grace, mercy* and *the truth*. It is the only way to know *the truths* that God wants to reveal



to you. Secondly, Christ is *The Author of Scriptural Truth*. To be on Jesus' side, Christ must be "*In You*." He is *the exact image* of what *The Gospel of Truth* is. He accomplished this through the works He did. He said, "*Believe you not that I am in the Father and the Father in me? The words that I speak to you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwells in me, he does the works*" (John 14:10). My, my, do you realize *the spiritual depth* of what Jesus told Philip?

Jesus was informing you that His *doctrinal teachings* did not come from Him but from God. Jesus was not **The Word of God** before His human birth (through inheritance). This will become clear as you go on. (Read the book, *Who And What Is The Word*).

Christ proclaims that He speaks God's *words*. He can prove He is The Messiah, "*Believe me that I am in the Father and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake*" (John 14:11). Christ just told you *all the words* He speaks are not His but His Father's. How can you be sure? Jesus told you, it is The Father "*In Him*" who does *the work*. *All the miracles and life examples* He left were not done by Jesus. They were done by God, His Father.

What was Jesus able to do? "*Then answered Jesus and said to them, Verily, verily, I say to you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he sees the Father do: for what things soever he does, these also does the Son likewise*" (John 5:19).

Jesus was God's *word in the flesh*. What Jesus did in

His *life* was a duplication of what He saw The Father do (through the thoughts and Mind of God). How can this be? How could Jesus have seen and heard what The Father did and said?

Now, for an *amazing truth*. Only God can perform *miracles* (like giving life) or do *works* beyond *the physical dimensions* or *laws*. God *builds* all things (Hebrews 3:4). God is *a spirit* and, therefore, does *spiritual things*. He gives His *truth*, which must be *spiritually discerned*.

### God's Holy Spirit

God's Holy Spirit removes *all fear*. Through God's *love*, He bestows His power upon you so you can have *a sound mind* (II Timothy 1:7). How did Jesus *see* or know God's *word* and duplicate God's *works*? Christ *inherited* everything from God. Jesus said you will *see* so that you can understand truth, too (Luke 1:35).

The angel announced that it was God's Holy Spirit which made Jesus *Holy*. Jesus *inherited* all that is in His Father (Hebrews 1:2). God's Holy Spirit is what God is and you can become *Holy* through your personal *spiritual growth*. Christ was God's *First Begotten Son* who was given all the abilities of God *in full measure*. These were given to Jesus at His human birth (Luke 1:35 and John 3:34). God's Holy Spirit is what The Prophets and repentant Christians have in common with Jesus, The Christ.

When God gave you *life* through "*The Spirit – In*

*Man,*” it was only *slightly* above the animals. You will need one more change. That change is to have God’s Holy Spirit become a part of you so you can, literally, become like God and His Son. According to your *free choice*, you can be like God by having “*Christ – In You.*” God’s system of *reproducing* Himself is *The Gift of Life*. Your human bodies are a type of *womb* used for gestation. By receiving *the nourishment* of God’s Holy Spirit, you will be ready for *a new birth* (resurrection).

### Tribulation – God’s Birth

*In the future*, during The Millennium and, ultimately, under The New Heaven and on The New Earth, “*all things will be new*” (prophetically) (Revelation 21). “*Rejoice you with Jerusalem and be glad with her, all you that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all you that mourn for her. That you may suck and be satisfied [nourished] with the breasts of her consolations [a birth]; that you may milk out and be delighted with the abundance of her glory [resurrection and new body]. For this said the LORD, Behold, I will extend peace [no more tribulation and labor] to her [Mother of All] like a river [Holy Spirit] and the glory [God’s goodness] of the Gentiles [the world] like a flowing stream [made clean]: then shall you suck [nutrition], you shall be borne upon her sides [birth] and be dandled upon her knees. As one whom his mother comforts, so will I [God] comfort you; and you shall be comforted in Jerusalem [City of Peace]*” (Isaiah 66:10-13).

Clearly, *this process is the gestation period for the*

*world* to reach maturity, so each can be reborn like *a new babe*. God is describing how He will reproduce Himself to *the whole world*.

“*Tribulation*” is “*a period of time in prophecy when God causes labor pains*” (human works) in order to bring the world to repentance and then to *be reborn*. God is *The One* who, through His *seed* from His *root* (beginning), can cause *a new birth* from *The Mother of All – New Jerusalem* (Galatians 4:26). Elihu tells you, “*The spirit of God has made me and the breath of the Almighty has given me life*” (Job 33:4). When God *breathes*, like a woman in travail, a child is finally *born*. What happens while *the babe* is in *the womb*?

### Prophecy Foretold

Continue with the comparison of God’s *reproduction process* to *a birth*. “*Think you this to be right* [deciding good and evil], *that you said, My righteousness is more than God’s?*” (Job 35:2). Elihu reveals the human life experience using Job as an example (Job 35:3-10). God allows humans to suffer and be in pain like Job experienced (even to the death). What is *the reason*? People always have a reason to refuse to seek God. “*But none said, Where is God my maker, who gives songs [joy] in the night*” (Job 35:10).

Humanity brings *pain* and suffering upon themselves. While you are *in darkness* (without understanding), God has the power to deliver you to a good life filled with *happiness* and *joy*. Elihu gives you the answer, “*Who [God] teaches us more than the beasts of the earth and*

*makes us wiser than the fowls of heaven?”* (Job 35:11). Everyone is born like the animals (survival of the fittest). God is *The One* who teaches you to have *wisdom*. You will be able to see better than *the birds* – more like *an eagle*.

“*Doctrine*” is “*truth*” but it is a progressive teaching. To become *dogmatic* about *a truth* without knowing every *Word of God* is to have *human righteousness* like Job. Humans can only understand “*in part*.” God is *The Only One* who can give you a *Doctorate Degree* and bring you to *birth*. *Doctrine* is *the beginning of spiritually growing in God’s righteousness and perfection*.

## CHAPTER 7

### HUMAN PROPHECY

***Your spiritual gestation period is the human experience. As long as you are choosing what is good or evil by human imagination, you will be in tribulation. "Tribulation" can be defined as "human labor" (works). The Sabbath was made for man and not man for The Sabbath (Mark 2:27-28). God, with His Son, does the work so everyone will, eventually, be given Salvation.***

#### Solomon – The Preacher

***"Ecclesiastes" in Hebrew means "a speaker to a congregation." It comes from the same word "Ecclesia" in Greek, which means "The Church of God." Israel is God's church or congregation in the wilderness (Acts 7:37-38). God's congregation or the called-out ones (God's chosen people) have been in the wilderness (the world). They are on their own without God. Being without God is their tribulation.***

**After The First Century, just like Israel, (Isaiah 1) The Christian Churches of God became corrupt (Revelation 2 and 3). *The Remnant* of Israel along with repentant Gentile Christians were the true followers of Christ. God's Churches and *the called-out ones* (His congregations) consist of both *The Remnant of Israel***

and *The Remnant of Christians*. They follow God after they have been given His Holy Spirit. They comprise God's *two witnesses in the world* (the wilderness) (Revelation 11). Solomon *spoke to The Churches of God and allowed the world to listen* (should they choose). Since God gave Solomon *wisdom*, he preached about *the human experience and the best it could offer*.

### All Vanity

Who is *The True Savior*? Is it God through The Son Jesus or is it someone else? That is The Mystery of God. Who is The Messiah and how can you find Him? *The other mystery is Babylon, The Great*. "*The Queen of Heaven*" is "*a Jezebel*" or the progenitor of *this mystery*. She is *the mother* of everyone who has been *deceived* by Satan. Without The Tree of Life and The Holy Spirit, humans would follow *their own imaginations* in deciding what is *right* or *wrong* (II Corinthians 10:5).

### Truth In Unrighteousness

Paul said The Truth of The Gospel of The Kingdom of God and Paradise was known from the very beginning. He said God becomes angry when humans decide on their own and follow their human nature regarding what is *good* or *evil* (Romans 11:18). In *The Bible*, it is called "*doctrines*" or "*the commandments of men*" (Matthew 15:9). *Doctrines* are *human guesses* as to what The Word of God means. However, they are only *the feeble teachings of men*. Some of mankind's teachings can be good, but they can, also, be



bad. They can only *guess* and nothing more. You may understand God's *kingdom* and Salvation; but, trying on your own to teach or get Salvation is "*holding the truth in unrighteousness*" (Romans 1:18).

### Solomon And Cain

Remember, Cain couldn't bear his punishment. In his entire human existence, he could not find The Tree of Life. He was willing to do *the work* instead of letting God do *the work*. *He died an unrepentant man. He held the truth in unrighteousness.*

Solomon, in his latter life, experienced *the fullness of human existence*. He did it all. He was the wealthiest man on earth. He did everything he wanted to do. But, the difference was, God gave Solomon *wisdom*. He could discern the difference between *right* and *wrong*. Whenever he did something, he knew what he was doing and was very responsible. He understood *the point of life* (human life) only when he had grown old. That is when he preached *The Book of Ecclesiastes*. From the beginning he said, "*Vanity of vanities... all is vanity*" (Ecclesiastes 1:2). "*Vanity*" in Hebrew is like "*the wind*." Life goes by rapidly and everything that is accomplished is *useless* (everyone dies in the end). Nothing lasts.

Solomon stated his purpose while living in this *life*, "*And I gave my heart to seek and search out by wisdom concerning all things that are done under heaven [God's abode]: this sore [painful] travail [birth pains] has God given to the sons of man to be exercised therewith*"



(Ecclesiastes 1:13). “*Exercised*” in Hebrew connotes “*the idea of what you are so busy doing in life.*” It is the human experience which is learning on your own, without God, yet, having the wisdom to know better. Left to yourselves, in time, you come to the right conclusion (through pain and suffering). But, it all depends on what you choose. Everyone experiences pain and suffering, but only because God allows you to decide for yourselves. You have *free choice*.

This is *the path* or *the way* Solomon chose, “*And I gave my heart to know wisdom and to know madness [wild, unruly] and folly [pleasures]: I perceived that this also is vexation of spirit [intellect]. For in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increases knowledge increases sorrow [depression]*” (Ecclesiastes 1:17-18). Trying to find *the answers* about *life* on *your own*, even with Godly wisdom, will only end in *sorrow*. You will be forever learning and never come to *the truth*. *Education* and *science*, by human effort alone, also, ends in nothing (death). Life Eternal is yours through *true repentance*. It is *foolish* to endure *life experiences* on your own.

After leading a life of *parties, good times and drunkenness*, Solomon was not productive. Solomon knew, through *Science* and other *physical knowledge*, that without God, *vanity* leads to *nothing*. The end is still *death*. Solomon’s life, with all his *authority* and *wealth*, amounted to *vanity*. Here is the best you can experience in *this human life*, “*I know that there is no good in them [human life], but for a man to rejoice and to do good in his life. And also that every man should eat*

*and drink and enjoy the good of his labor, it is the gift [God's creation] of God"* (Ecclesiastes 3:12-13). To live the best human life, you must do *profitable good works* like Christ (Matthew 12:12). You can have joy in this life by doing *good works* and enjoying *the labor and fruits of your work*. By following God's *way of living*, you can *eliminate* many of *the penalties in life*. That is *the most* that human life can offer.

Solomon tells you, "*Let us hear the conclusion [by man's effort] of the whole matter: Fear God and keep His commandments: for this is the whole duty of man"* (Ecclesiastes 12:13). Solomon discovered, by living every aspect of human life, that you should accept *The Commandments* of God as your obligation in life. It is not your place to tell God how you want to *worship* Him. The best human effort or work you can do is to keep God's *commandments*.

Human *prophecy* (man's attempt to define God's *word*) can never be profitable. *The Bible*, The Word of God in its entirety, is God's *way to live*. Solomon preached that human works are *vanity* and *produce* nothing useful. It certainly cannot give anyone Salvation. *Prophecy* is cyclical and dependant upon the various conditions of humanity. God will not accept *human folly*.

## CHAPTER 8

### BEGINNING TO END

God doesn't want you to study *doctrine* alone because *the whole* (everything) will not be fully understood. Satan used that deception on Eve first. He tries to fool as many individuals as he can. Doctrines, being part of *the truth*, must be *understood* from Alpha to Omega (Genesis to Revelation). That is God's *truth*.

#### God's Pain

What gives God His greatest disappointments? It is the fact that all His children do not listen to Him. It is no different than any other parent who loves their family. *The Bible* covers the entire Mystery of God. It is written for those who choose to learn God's *word* and it is guaranteed that you will know *the truth* through His Holy Spirit. It *pains* God greatly to watch His children continually disobey Him (II Peter 3). However, God is "*longsuffering*," which means "*continual pain*." Watching His children go through horror and pain when they dishonor Him brings God a great deal of sorrow. He cries out to *the entire heaven, the heavenly host* and *the whole earth*. God has tended to all His children's needs, but they still rebel against Him (Isaiah 1:2). He has tried to *live* with His children *six times*. God has dwelt in the world six times and, each

time, mankind turned their backs on Him. Before the seventh time, He will try to *save them*. God is constantly warning His children to honor Him and pay strict attention to all His *words*. That is like any loving parent.

### An Example

God has duplicated the family system so Christians can experience how He feels. God is *love* and He *desires to give* Christians all He has. He, willingly, gave His *own life* through His Son, Jesus. Yet, how many of you are still rejecting Christ and God? He has revealed Himself and His *greatness* through *the entire universe* (Romans 1:20). God created an annual cycle of winter, spring, summer and fall. These seasons were given *as signs* to reveal His *predestined plan* so you can know His *prophetic purpose* (Colossians 2:16-17). Then, He sent *The Prophets of Old* to preach The Gospel of Christ (I Peter 1:10-11). Finally, He sent His *First Begotten Son in human form as a servant* (an *example* and author of *The Word of God*) (Hebrews 12:2). What *patience!* God had to endure all this pain. Yet, all this fell on deaf ears. Too few listen and too few are interested in God.

### God's Wrath

When The Times Of The Gentiles are fulfilled (the conclusion of rule by humans without God), His *wrath* will be *manifested*. God will become *angry* for a very good reason. In the time of Noah, God destroyed mankind in *the flood*. Why? He destroyed them because they

were wicked and violent (Genesis 6:5-6). Genocide was at hand. God had *to act* before they *annihilated* each other. In *deep sorrow*, He had to change His *mind* for *their good*. God had to *kill* His *family* for *their own good*. Later, He would resurrect them and save them through His Son, Jesus. How many times and in how many ways has God attempted to get Christians to listen to Him? This was necessary so they would not have to go through The Tribulation. *The time* of human self-rule (The Time Of The Gentiles) is coming to an end and God will unleash His *anger* so *Christians* can *turn away* from *their rebellious world*. (Read, *The Times of The Gentiles*).

### Holding Truth In Unrighteousness

When a child knows better and still insists upon *dishonoring their father*, there is *nothing more to say*. Pain is given for *their own good* so they won't *destroy* themselves later on. "*For they* [human fathers] *verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he* [God] *for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness*" (Hebrews 12:10). God chastises and manifests His *anger* for your own good to get you to *listen* to His *word* only as *a last resort*. God will do anything to ensure that everyone will, eventually, have Eternal Life. What patience and endurance He has for everyone. God gives the reason for His *wrath*, "*For the wrath* [anger] *of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness*" (Romans 1:18).

Those who knew better will receive God's *wrath*. They

understand, biblically, God reveals Himself through His creation. Falsely, they looked to *the creation*. Civilization wound up in wickedness and violence. From *the time of the flood*, they were violent and behaved like *wild animals* (a bear, leopard and a lion – The Mark of The Beast).

Peter writes, “*For this they willingly [on purpose] are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old and the earth standing out of the water and in the water. Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved to fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men*” (II Peter 3:5-7).

*Prophecy is cyclical and repetitive* depending upon *the different choices* mankind makes. Also, when people repent like Jonah and The Ninevites, God relents and does not carry out His *wrath*. God only *punishes* to awaken His children or to stop *their unrighteous behavior*. *Prophecy is conditional*. When Christians cause enough *pain, horror and suffering* for themselves, God looks into *their hearts* and sees their intentions. He always *reacts appropriately* for their good. *The ultimate anger* from God is to *wake them up* and make them desire to change and repent, “*Now no chastening for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness to them which are exercised thereby*” (Hebrews 12:11). Over and over again, it is all determined by *an individual’s choice*. Again, it is *conditional*. God blesses *mankind* by meeting *their needs*. They *corrupt*

themselves by refusing to change. Only then does God punish until they *repent* and *honor His words*. The cycle is blessings, corruption, chastisement (captivity), destruction, repentance and, then, back to blessings, which is *a new beginning*.

### Final Judgment

People will become *so violent* and *destructive* to the land, animals and other individuals that *no flesh* will be able to live on this earth. When that happens, God will step in with *total destruction*.

The Day of The Lord took place with Judah when *the temple* was destroyed in 70 A.D. It was a day of *darkness* for Judah (The Jews). *The temple* didn't have *one stone* left upon another. This was because *The Priesthood* was *corrupt* and turned God's *house* into *a commercial business*. That was God's *judgment of wrath* upon Israel. They had to go into *captivity* (Luke 21:24). His *wrath* is repetitive when a nation keeps sinning. Darkness will continue until individuals *repent* and are *willing to honor God*. To honor your Father, you must listen to *every Word* of God (Matthew 4:4). His children constantly need all of God's *word* so they can learn to have the wisdom to know what is *good* and what is *evil*.

From *the beginning* to *the end* in The Garden of Eden, God's *word* and message is, "*Seek you the LORD* [God] *while he may be found, call you upon him while he is near*" (Isaiah 55:6).



## CHAPTER 9

### MANY ANTI-CHRISTS

The Apostles knew that the first event Jesus prophesied would be *a falling away from the truth* because of *false prophets* (Matthew 24:4-5). That is why they said that *The Messiah* could come in their day. Paul warned them that The Day of Christ could not come until a series of events transpired. *The Church* had to experience *a falling away from the truth* followed by *a man of sin* occupying God's *temple*. The Temple of Jerusalem was still there until 70 A.D. when those events transpired under Titus. When they saw *the man of sin* corrupting *the temple* before it was destroyed, The Christians fled to Pella. They left as Christ had instructed them.

#### The Falling Away

Everything that was prophetically told by Jesus transpired in that first generation (Matthew 24:34). *The falling away from the truth* occurred when The Time of Sorrows began.

Kingdom will turn against kingdom and nations will become embattled with famines, pestilences and earthquakes in various places. That is when *the false*



*prophets* shall arise. Paul told them this in *The Book of Thessalonians*. II Thessalonians 2 was written many years before The Fall of The Temple of God in 70 A.D. Paul said that *a man of sin* (Titus) had to come and desecrate *the temple* (Matthew 24). Once *the man of sin* came and destroyed God's *temple*, a great falling away had to take place (II Thessalonians 2:3). When Titus sat in God's *temple*, he did exactly as Paul said. He was the conqueror and sat as God in The Temple of God. *The great falling away* was to follow as prophecy and history proves. Paul told The Thessalonians that he had previously told *this truth* to them (II Thessalonians 2:5-10). You are ready to move forward, historically, to the days after *the destruction of the temple* in 70 A.D.

### Multiple anti-Christ

Here is what The Apostle John said would follow *the falling away from the truth*. He warned of events that would occur before The Messiah returned, "*Little children, it is the last time* [of truth]: *and as you have heard* [preached] *that anti-Christ shall come, even now are there many anti-Christ*s; *whereby we know that it is the last time* [prophetically]" (I John 2:18).

Jesus could return anytime from John's day to these present days. He may come next month or next year. *Prophecy* requires *specific events to occur* before God will allow Christ to *return* (Acts 1:6-7). Only God knows when that day and time will be. Jesus cannot return until The Times of The Gentiles are fulfilled (completed) (Luke 21:24). *The bride* must become

worthy to be Christ's *wife* (Revelation 19:7-8). Until these prophecies are fulfilled and completed, there is no specific date for Jesus to return. Only God, The Father knows when this will occur.

There are many *false prophets* claiming to have The Knowledge of God. They make *guesses*. Even Jesus waits for His Father to tell Him when to return as King of Kings. Moses said not to believe these false prophets (Deuteronomy 18). John warned that, in the meantime, there will be many anti-Christis. Who are these anti-Christis? You are about to discover that they are *the many harlots of the world's beast powers* who devour Christianity and the nations of the world.

*The Time of Sorrows* continues as Jesus foretold (Matthew 24). "*Beloved, believe not every spirit* [human intellect], *but try* [test] *the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets* [John's day] *are gone out into the world. Hereby know you the Spirit of God* [God's word]: *Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh* [human] *is of God: And every spirit that confesses not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh* [for real] *is not of God: and this is that spirit of anti-Christ, whereof you have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world"* (I John 4:1-3).

Wow! This is amazing. From John's time until The Messiah returns, there will be *many* who claim to be *the saviors of the world*. Some who claimed to be these *man-made saviors* include Nero, Charlemagne and Hitler. Many more will come until *the final anti-Christ*

appears as *the world's savior*. They will deny Christ as The Messiah since they think they *know* what is *good* or *evil*. Even *science*, mankind's *final discipline*, claims to know what is *right* and *wrong*.

### The Final anti-Christ

In the days of *the last anti-Christ*, you, as a Christian with God's Holy Spirit, will know by *the fulfillment* of The Times of The Gentiles who *the one final anti-Christ* is.

*Gentile world rule* will have The Mark of The Beast. What is The Mark of The Beast? John gives you the answer as he continues his letter. What is the difference? "*Beloved, let us love [agapé] one another: for love is of God; and every one that loves is born of God, and knows God. He that loves not knows not God; for God is love*" (I John 4:7-8).

That's it. The Mark of The Beast is all those who do not *love* with God's *love*, but are *like beasts* (a lion, a bear and a leopard). That is The Mark of The Beast in *The Bible*.

Those who claim to be *saviors* but cause *war* and *killings* are *anti-Christ*s. They claim to save the world by killing others "*en mass*." When *the world* reaches *the climax* of human rule, which will be *seemingly peaceful*, World War III will be upon all nations. The world, already, has weapons of genocide.

The one who claims to be *the savior* of the day will be

*the final anti-Christ. He will say “Peace, peace; when there is no peace” (Jeremiah 6:14), just as every anti-Christ has claimed throughout the years.*

Vespasian became *the hero of the day and a man-made savior* by winning many wars. *The last anti-Christ will claim the same, but suddenly World War III will explode. At The End of Days, all nations of the world will be gathered, once again, in Jerusalem (Zechariah 14).*

This will be *a world war involving the entire planet. The false peace bringer will come. However, it will end when Christ returns. The Time Of The Gentiles will end and The Time of The Wedding Feast will be announced during The Millennium. The whole world will be invited, both the good and the bad (Matthew 22). Until then, prophecy states there will be many anti-Christ*s just as there were in Christ’s time.

## CHAPTER 10

### PROPHECY DOES REPEAT

*Scripture* constantly proves *prophecy is cyclical*. The world begins with *blessings* but *corruption* and *destruction* follows. The Resurrection will bring blessings from God. Since the beginning, God has pleaded with His *children*. From The Garden of Eden to Israel and The Gentiles, God cycles His predestined *Plan of Salvation* over and over again. God's *will* is to Save The World (I John 4:14).

#### Mystery Of God

Why does God keep His *will* and *purpose* a secret? It is clear! The answer is *free choice*! Faith and trust in God are prerequisites. Unless your *faith* and *trust* in God is absolute, you cannot have guaranteed joy and happiness. God wants His *sons* to be like Jesus so they can be *productive as creators* because that is what God *expects* of His *Creation*. *That's what being saved and following Jesus is all about*. If He made everyone *perfect* in the beginning, then everyone would be like *a computer* or *a robot*. There would be no need for *creative ability*. They would have been a mere reproduction (robot) of God. Well, that has never been and never will be God's *purpose*. Making everyone the same limits a person's intellect and heart. It contra-

dicts God's *loving purpose*. Only God knows *good* and *evil*. Therefore, He has implemented *a perfect plan* to make His Sons *perfect* but, only, when they make the choice to follow Him. Then, His Sons will have *the liberty to create* whatever they choose by doing *good works*. *That is the main point in order for you to be given Salvation*.

*Doctrines* give you *partial knowledge of the truth*. These are prophecies. You will always have the choice to choose *liberty* instead of *slavery*. No one or anything can be *harmed*. That is The Kingdom of God. You have, finally, come to *the essence of Salvation* and how God wants you *to worship* Him. Faith demands *free choice*. Liberty is God's goal so *the world* can have *eternal joy* and *bliss*. Even the angels must decide, *by faith*, to follow God (I Corinthians 6:3). Humans and the angels must choose, *by free choice* (in faith), to follow God. One third of the angels rejected God and joined Satan's side because they, also, *lacked faith* in God. In order to have *liberty* and be individually productive and fruitful, you must grow, *spiritually*, in *Godly faith* through love. God is love. God's *will* is to be "*All In All*" (I Corinthians 15:28).

### Why Prophecy Repeats

*Prophecy is cyclical* because every human thinks differently. Everyone's *desires* differ greatly. It would be a pity if everyone wanted *the same thing*. *The world* would be *violent* and *destructive* because each of you would choose to *live forever* unless life became *too painful*.

That is *human nature* in its *current form*. *Survival of the fittest* is not the solution. That makes everyone like *the beasts* and carry The Mark of The Beast. It is *vital* for you to *grow* in God's *love* by *doing no harm* and *doing good works*. Through experience, you can (as Solomon and Job learned) *fulfill The Law*. Fulfilling *prophecy* can only be done by having *absolute faith* in God. God's *educational methodology* begins with you as a *bachelor* (on your own). Then, you place yourself under a *Master* (Christ) in order to earn a *Doctorate* and become like God, who is *Holy, perfect* and knows *all doctrine* (teaching) and *prophecy*.

My, how simple is God's *predestined will* and *purpose*. That is why *prophecy* does not set dates. The Will of God continues under The New Heaven and on The New Earth where *the remnants* become The Bride of Christ (Israel and The Gentiles). *The guests* are *the sheep* who are *faithful* but need to grow in God's *glory*. Those not allowed to attend The Wedding Feast are in *outer-darkness* and are still on their own, doing whatever they want to do.

God never gives up, even in The Kingdom of God, because He is not The God of *the dead* but of *the living*. God is *longsuffering, forever*, until *everyone repents* (II Peter 3). God, through Christ and His Bride, continues to call those in *outer-darkness* to come to His eternal feast, "*And he said to me, Write, Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he said to me, These are the true sayings of God*" (Revelation 19:9). *The Book of Life is a Marriage Registry*.

## CHAPTER 11

### ELIJAH TO COME

God always sends *an “Elijah”* before He reveals and unleashes His wrath. Noah preached righteousness years before the flood came. The flood was a world baptism. Jonah convinced The Ninevites to repent and saved them from God’s *anger*. He was The Elijah of that day.

Elijah came *to prophesy* in Israel’s time, but The Jews did not repent. God issued a worldwide curse. John, The Baptist, *in Elijah’s spirit* (Holy Spirit), came to warn Judah. But, Herod had him killed. The world curse continued (as The Time of Sorrows) with Christ’s death.

#### Remnant Of Israel And Christianity

It seems that each time God warned people or a nation, they always refused to repent. Jonah’s preaching to The Ninevites was *an exception* because only *a remnant* or small part of the world got *the message* and repented. Judah refused to worship The One True God because they were making too much money in His temple.

*The curse* will continue throughout the whole world



until The Time Of The Gentiles concludes with *a world war*. *Temple worship* was corrupted by *The Priesthood* because they were robbing God of His *tithes* and, even worse, stealing from the orphans and widows (Malachi 4:6, Isaiah 1:17 and Isaiah 58:6-7). *The world curse of Babylon* continues by *two women*. Because the world follows Babylon, it has worshipped *wickedness* from The Tower of Babel to this present day. This will continue during The Time of The Gentiles until The Messiah comes.

Zechariah described a scroll that explains the curses for the whole world (Zechariah 5). In his *vision*, he saw *an ephah* which covers the world. It is *weighted down* by *lead* in its center. This *enormous lead weight* is held down by *two women*.

The first woman is Eve (choosing Satan's teaching), who is known as The Queen of Heaven because she is *The Mother of all living*. She follows *The Babylonian teaching* of The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. The second woman is represented by Egypt. She is Isis or Ishtar (Easter). She promotes *immoral fertility*, just like the rabbits. Her Egyptian name is Semiramis. She married her own son who was eventually killed. She, then, claimed that the baby she carried was her dead husband resurrected. Then, *he* was resurrected like Christ and took the place of The True Savior to come. He was supposedly born around December 25<sup>th</sup>.

Babylon continued to spread from Egypt and Sumeria to Nebuchadnezzar's Neo Babylon (New Babylon),

Syria, Turkey, Greece, Rome and the rest of the world. The World Curse of *individual wickedness* continues through the religion of these two women.

### God Confuses The Languages

At The Tower of Babel, God confused the languages. He *separated the races* by giving them *an inheritance of land* in The Days of Peleg (Genesis 10:25 and Deuteronomy 32:1-10). A prophecy was given regarding the world and these Queens of Heaven. Their choice to *continue to eat* from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil devoured the entire world.

### Prophecy Of Polytheism

God declares that because The Truth of The One God and Father of all has been desecrated by “*hold [ing] the truth in unrighteousness,*” His wrath or anger will eventually be unleashed upon the world (Romans 1:18). As the religion of these two women infected *the whole world, a human trinity* was created. Some religions claim Jesus, Mary (The Queen Mother) and The Holy Spirit compose the final worldly trinity (Revelation 12:1-4).

“*Jeshuran*” (meaning fat ox) was “*Israel,*” who was *blessed* by God but became *lazy*. God *blessed* them above everyone else (Deuteronomy 32:13-18). Because they forgot The One True God and followed Polytheism (Baal), *the curse* and Time of Sorrows will continue until The Time of The Gentiles concludes with The Return of The Messiah.

## The Final Elijah

God always warns *the earth* before He unleashes His *wrath*. This is God's *methodology* (way of teaching) to get everyone to change, "*Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it*" (Proverbs 22:6). This Proverb is *a prophecy* about how God teaches and guarantees that everyone will change. The change occurs when you are *old*, come to full *maturity* and accept "*Christ – In You.*" This solves The Mystery of God (Revelation 10:7). When The Seventh Trumpet sounds and The Messiah returns, everyone will bow down and accept Jesus as Lord and King of Kings.

God is ready to *pour out The Seven Last Plagues* upon those who have *The Mark of The Beast* (Revelation 15:1-8). *The tribulation period* will conclude and *The Saints* (144,000 Israelites and The Gentiles – remnants of Christianity) will be clothed in God's *glory* because they will become The Bride of Christ. They will be made *worthy* to be *clothed in white*, which is God's *glory* and His *righteousness* (Revelation 19:8).

Who are those on *The Sea of Glass* (a mirror)? Those on The Sea of Glass are those who came out of The Great Tribulation. A mirror is a prophecy of the future. They sing *The Song of Moses* and *The Song of The Lamb of God* (Deuteronomy 15:1-3). *The Sea of Glass* is *a prophecy* (I Corinthians 13:12). The Messianic Jews of Israel's Twelve Tribes (144,000) and The Remnant of Gentiles know *The Truth of The Word of God*.

**The Promises of Abraham and The Song of Moses are completed with the death of Christ as The Lamb paying for *the world's sins*. Those who reject God's Holy Spirit commit *the unpardonable sin* (Matthew 12:31). God is ready to release *The Seven Last Plagues*. The world is ready to be invited to come to The Wedding Feast of Christ and His Bride. They must be *witnessed to* because they are under the spell of The Mark of The Beast. (Read the book, *The Mark of The Beast*).**

**God's final Elijah, *The Witnesses of God*, will give *their prophecy* to the world before God corrects the world with *The Seven Last Plagues*. *The Book of Revelation* discloses what God's *two witnesses* will do.**

### **The Final Babylon**

**The Babylonian End-Time revolves around Jerusalem. The city will become like Sodom (not growing in righteousness) and Egypt (worshipping many gods). All major religions will be involved in this End-Time. *All nations* of the world will assemble to attack Jerusalem (Zechariah 14). When *The Seven Last Plagues* of God are released upon the world, *the beast power* (guided by Satan) will turn against The Great Whore (Babylon). They will know The Great Whore fornicated with their many gods.**

**Christ warns His people to come out of Babylon, “*And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her [Babylon], my people [remnant of Israel and Gentiles], that you be not partakers of her sins [Jerusalem] and that you receive not of her plagues*” (Revelation**

18:4). “*And he said to me, The waters which you saw, where the whore sits, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues. And the ten horns which you saw upon the beast, these shall hate the whore [Babylon] and shall make her desolate and naked and shall eat her flesh and burn her with fire*” (Revelation 17:15-16).

*Jerusalem*, as a city, is worshipped by *the major religions* of the world and is *blamed* for all the world wars.

*The spiritual city* of Sodom and Egypt is where Jesus was crucified (Revelation 11:8). God’s *two witnesses*, The Remnant of Israel and *the faithful* Gentile Christians, will be martyred and resurrected 3<sup>1/2</sup> days later to meet Jesus in *the clouds* when He returns (Revelation 11:11-12).

### Elijah’s Witness

Who are these witnesses? The Witnesses are The Church of God and The 144,000 Israelites. What will they do? After The Two Witnesses are resurrected, they will meet Jesus in the clouds at The Sound of The Trumpet (Matthew 24:30-31). What trumpet? “*And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, the kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord [God] and of his Christ; and he [God] shall reign forever and ever*” (Revelation 11:15). *The two witnesses* are The Messianic Jews and *the faithful* Christians, both of whom become The Bride of Christ. The Bride of Christ is *the witness* who *marries* Jesus. This is *the commission* He left to

The Churches of God when He was resurrected, “*But you shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and you shall be witnesses to me both in Jerusalem [martyred] and in all Judaea and in Samaria and to the uttermost part of the earth*” (Acts 1:8).

The Bride of Christ is God’s *two witnesses*. The Messianic Jews and *faithful* Christian Gentiles are The Bride and will announce *their coming marriage* to Jesus, The Messiah. The Bride of Christ shows her love for Jesus by being willing to *die* for Him as He died for her.

John, The Baptist, in the spirit of Elijah, also, gave *his life* by being put to death by *Herod* as a witness of *The Coming of The Messiah*. Elijah prepared the way for Jesus just as The Bride of Christ prepares herself to *witness* Christ. The Bride becomes *worthy* to marry her *Husband* (Ephesians 5:31-32).

*Prophecy is cyclical* and repeats itself over and over until it, finally, comes to pass.

## CHAPTER 12

### WHY CHRIST CAME

Jesus said, “*For the Son of man [Jesus Christ] is come to save that which was lost*” (Matthew 18:11). What did The Messiah come to restore? *Jesus, The Promised Seed* would come to destroy Satan’s deception (Genesis 3:15). Christ came to cut off *the serpent’s poisonous head*. The Messiah will come and destroy all of God’s enemies. Christ will return *The Kingdom to God* so He can be “*All In All*” (I Corinthians 15:25-28).

#### The First Cause

God tells the world to, “*Remember the former [history] things of old: for I am God [Elohim] and there is none else; I am God and there is none like me*” (Isaiah 46:9). There is no god like God, The One True Father. There is only One God who built all things and will build everything for The Sons of God (Hebrews 3:4).

Scientifically and philosophically, God is known as *the first cause or the beginning*. He is *The Genesis of everything* (Isaiah 46:10). God can and does *build* everything. There is *no other*. Moses was *a prophet and a witness of a testimony* (example) or *a shadow of things to come* (Hebrews 3:5).



*The Law of Moses was a shadow or type of prophecy and Moses was faithful. He was to witness the way God would bring perfection. The Law was to bring everyone to Christ, The Author of Perfection (Hebrews 12:1-2 and Galatians 3:24-25).*

**Jesus came to restore perfection and teach about *The Tree of Life*. He became *the school master* (Matthew 23:8). Christ is your *Elder Brother* and your teacher. He will restore *The Tree of Life (perfection)*. Jesus didn't *build all things*; rather, His Father did (Hebrews 3:4). Jesus came to build His *house* for The Bride of Christ so they both could live in God's *house*. It is *the house* God and The Son are building (John 14:1-2). That is what Christ is presently doing. He is building *a place* for His *wife*. That's it!**

**Jesus gave His Bride *an engagement ring* (The Holy Spirit) to cement *their contract (The New Covenant)* (Hebrews 10). Christ requires His Bride to be *perfect and Holy* like His Father (Ephesians 1:4).**

**The original marriage in The Garden of Eden was with Adam when he received life through God's breath (Ruach) (Genesis 2:7). Next, God made a helpmate who was an equal for Adam (Genesis 2:18). In Hebrew, "*a proper helpmate*" connotes "*an equal*." Therefore, Eve had to be *equal to Adam* because she came from *his bone and flesh* (Genesis 2:20-23).**

**In Hebrew, "*Ish*" means "*man*." "*Isha*," with the feminine ending "*a*," means "*woman*." Therefore, they were of the same DNA. They had similar intellects**



and were *free to choose* according to their desires. They were *independent, free-choice thinkers*.

After Eve was deceived by Satan, the husband-wife relationship changed. Adam was not deceived like Eve. Adam became her Lord or Master and cared for her to *the death*. Adam was *a type* of Christ (Romans 5:14). Adam was *a prophecy* of The Messiah as *a savior* to come for His Bride. Paul said this relationship was *a great mystery*, which *The Bible* will prove (Ephesians 5:32). Now Adam, as *her Master*, was to care for her (Genesis 3:16). Since Eve came out of Adam, it proves he had “X” and “Y” genes (he was both male and female). Adam and Eve were both called Adam (Eve Adams) since she came out of Adam (Genesis 5:2). All homo-sapiens and human Sons of God came from Eve, *The Mother of all living* (Genesis 1:26 and Genesis 3:20).

Since Adam was *a type* of *The Future Messiah* (Savior), Jesus had to come and restore *marriage* as it was in the beginning (Matthew 19:4). In the beginning, Adam and Eve were equal (the same). Jesus must come and restore *marriage to its initial pristine condition* (it was *very good*) (Genesis 1:31). The Messiah and God are all about *the original marriage* (becoming one flesh as equals). *Prophecy is cyclical*. Jesus, as *the mono-genus* (First Begotten One by God), is *The Author* or *The Writer* of The Word of God.

### God's Will And Word

The Apostle John wrote that Jesus, in *the flesh*, be-

came God's *word*. The Word of God was made *flesh* by *inheritance* (John 1:14). God gave Jesus all things as The Word of God (Hebrews 1:2).

*This Word of God* consisted of all God's *glory* (goodness). Christ, because He had God's *word* in Him from *birth*, was *Holy*. God's Holy Spirit was given to Him by God without measure (John 3:34-35 and Luke 1:35). God's Holy Spirit made Jesus *Holy*. He received it as a *gift* from God through *inheritance*. God's *glory* is all of God's *goodness* which is His *righteousness* (Exodus 33:18-19).

## Jesus The Faithful

The Apostle Paul wrote that *Salvation* comes by *faith*. Everyone grows by "*faith to faith*" (which is *spiritual growth*). *The just* (in the judgment) shall live by *faith* (Romans 1:16-17). As God's *word* (through inheritance), Jesus had to prove He was *faithful*. He said that by Himself (His human self), He could do *nothing* (John 5:19). However, with The Word of God in Him through *The Holy Spirit*, He was *everything* God created. Just as Christians must grow *in faith*, so did Jesus with God's *genes* and His personal teachings.

Jesus was The Firstborn Son over His own house (Hebrews 3:6). *This "house"* was His "*Bride-to-be*." The Savior had to do all the work for His *bride* and *their house*. The title "*Bishop*" in Latin and Greek means "*an overseer of a household*." Bishops or Overseers must provide for their house or they are as bad as an *infidel* (unbeliever) (I Timothy 5:8).

**Jesus is your Overseer who is responsible for building, providing and caring for His *House* along with His Bride. How clear! Notice what Revelation declares, “*And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness and the first begotten of the dead and the prince [not God] of the kings of the earth. To him that loved us and washed us [in the word] from our sins in his own blood [life]”* (Revelation 1:5). It took *faith* on Christ’s part because He could do *nothing* by Himself. He knew *faith* (by the gift of inheritance by The Holy Spirit) made Him *Holy* and *perfect*.**

**You need to *live* by the same *faith* Jesus had. He is *The Author* and *The One* to follow even to *the death*. You must, through *faith* and with God’s Holy Spirit, *grow into perfection* by every *Word of God* (Matthew 4:4). You must *become* like Him (Ephesians 4:12-13). Salvation comes through believing in God and becoming like Christ who completes *The Mystery of God*. You must have “*Christ – In You*” (Colossians 1:26-27). *Jesus is The One who will restore what had been lost*.**

## CHAPTER 13

### GOD AND MARRIAGE

Is God married? Christ said God is your Father (Matthew 23:9). God could not be a Father *unless* He is *married*. Who is The Father's wife? God wouldn't break His own commandment regarding adultery, would He?

#### What Is Marriage?

“*Marriage*” in English comes from “*Baal*” and in Hebrew means “*The Lord or Master*.” Eve followed Satan's advice to decide *right* from *wrong* on her own. At that time, Eve became subservient to her husband.

When Israel sinned by building *the golden calf*, God's relationship with The Israelites changed and He became *a Master* over them (which was a type of contract). Israel was, contractually, in *a marriage covenant* with God. Since Israel sinned, *The Law of Moses* permitted those who were married *to divorce*. According to *The Law of Moses*, the word “*married*” is “*Baal*” or “*Master*” in Hebrew. If the husband was found to be displeased with his *wife*, he was legally allowed to divorce her.

God's *purpose for marriage* had to change. In the beginning, a man and a woman were *equal* (being of

the same blood and flesh). Male and female were the same and were partners. Now, remember, the man was honored as first, because he came from God. *The Mystery of Marriage*, being *the same* in every aspect but one, is *the predestined purpose* of The Kingdom of God. The one difference is *the woman* came from *man* (as all humans have *come from God*). God's *ultimate predestined goal* is for Him to be "*All In All*" (I Corinthians 15:28). Marriage *culminates* when the world is *married to God* as *One Spirit* which is Holy and in *the exact image* of God.

### Everything Is God

"*Genesis*" is "*a beginning of heaven and earth.*" The Psalmist cries out, "*The earth is the LORD'S and the fullness [completeness] thereof; the world and they that dwell therein*" (Psalm 24:1). Since God is The Only One who *builds all things*, He *owns everything*. *All things* come from God including the first humans. All humans came *from Eve, The Mother of All*. God is *all and everything* that is or *can be*. God *created* and is The Owner of everything.

### A Husband

Only God, who made everything, knows how everything should *work*. He knows the ingredients, the substance, essence and *purpose* for everything He created. Only He knows what is *good* or *evil* for His creation.

*A husband is an owner* who is responsible for all his *property*. He made it and he must be responsible as

its *caretaker*. God started with *nothing*. Nothing *existed*. From His *own being*, He *made all things*. He is, therefore, *the caretaker* and *The One* who can make you *perfect*. He is your *husband* and *caretaker*. No one else can do *a more perfect job* of making something out of *Oneself*.

### God's House

*A house* is where *a person dwells*. God's *dwelling house* is *perfect* because God is *perfect*. He is not subject to *error* (mistakes) or *sin*. Therefore, He is *Holy, absolutely pure* and without *any blemish* or *mistakes*. He is *The One God* who is *Holy, righteous* and *flawless*. He is *The Only One* worthy to be worshipped. Everything else is blemished and subject to *sin*.

### The True Trinity

For you to be "*One*" with *God*, you must be exactly like Him in every detail. God's *plan* is to reproduce Himself in His *image* (Genesis 1:26). Until you have *no sin* and are *flawless*, you cannot be like God. Until then, you cannot be *One* with Him. God's *plan* is for you to become *a Son* like Jesus. Jesus, as a human, could not be God. He admitted this over and over again, because He was in His human state. Until He became *the exact image* of God with God's *glory* (goodness), He wasn't God.

Making any human *a saint* is *a sin* (like Mary, Christ's mother). What makes Mary or any Christian *Holy* is God's *Holy Spirit* (Luke 1:35). As long as anyone

is *human*, they are not *One* with God and cannot be in His *trinity*. Adam, Eve and Satan comprise a *false trinity* and a *false doctrine* or *teaching*. Isis, Osiris and Horus of Egypt were all another false trinity. They could not have been a *Holy Trinity*. Surprisingly, neither could God, Jesus in the flesh and The Holy Spirit be a *trinity*. The Holy Spirit is not *another being* or a God. It is *the power* from God which makes you lose *all fear*. This Holy Spirit allows Jesus Christ and all true Christians to be filled with God's *sound mind* and *love*. The Holy Spirit is God's *very essence* of *who* and *what* He is. *Wisdom is the same*. Wisdom is not a *being* like Jesus but *an inherent attribute* of God. There is only *One Trinity* and that is God! Until you become in God's *exact image* (like Jesus sitting next to God's throne as Melchizedek), you and no other *human* can be a part of *any trinity*. Only Jesus is *part* of God's *trinity* because He is in God's *exact image* (Hebrews 1:3).

### Three In One

Christ answered *the trinity dilemma*. When it is still a *mystery* to you, there is no answer. It all became a *mystery* when mankind decided, on their own, what was *good* or *evil*. *The Bible* presents the cause of this folly very simply and clearly, "*Professing themselves to be wise, they become fools. And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image [idol] made like to corruptible man [including human Jesus] and to birds and fourfooted beasts and creeping [snakes] things. Wherefore God also gave them up [free choice] to uncleanness through the lusts [human genes] of their own*



*hearts [desire], to dishonour their own bodies between themselves. Who changed the truth of God into a lie and worshipped and served [religion] the creature [including humans] more than the Creator [God], who is blessed for ever. A-men [for sure]"* (Romans 1:22-25).

This should be very *simple* to understand. Looking to any human as a God is *idolatry*. Why? Because no human or any part of *the creation* can be called *The One* God. Only God Almighty is The Creator and builder of *all things* (Hebrews 3:4). Jesus did not become God, as His *Son*, until He received God's *glory* following His murder, resurrection and ascent to heaven (John 17:5). At that time, Christ became *One with The Father*. Now, to explain "*The Three-Part Trinity*."

Jesus prayed, "*That they all may be one [with God]; as you, Father, are in me and I in you, that they also may be one [married] in us: that the world may believe that you have sent me*" (John 17:21). This great mystery is being revealed to you. When Jesus returns to *Save The World*, the world will become *One* with God through Jesus (I John 4:14). God is One. Jesus is One. You and all mankind will become *One* with God and Christ. That is *The Divine Trinity*. So, God, Christ and repentant Christians comprise The True Trinity. God is your Husband who *owns* everything because He is The Creator. God will be *married* to *everyone* because His *Sons* will be just like Him. *Kind after kind*. Prophecy is unending and keeps *cycling itself around and around* until everyone *believes* and *accepts* Jesus as their Lord. God is calling you and everyone else to be His *Sons* (Revelation 21:5-7). Who will heed His



call? In The Kingdom of God, with Jerusalem as *The Mother of Us All*, He will continue to make *all things new* according to His *plan*. Everyone, in their time, will be brought to His Son and Christ's Wife (Revelation 22:17).

In order to know The Plan and Will of God and how His *prophecy* is carried out, He will reveal His *mystery*. Do you hear what God is telling you? Glory to God in *the highest* for His *unbounded love* and His *eternal mercy* for His *creation* and all mankind. Try to grasp this great mystery being revealed before your eyes. It is worth all the gold in the world to know where your treasure really lies.

# **GOD'S MYSTERY FULFILLED**

## **Part 5**

**By**

**ART MOKAROW**

***God's Mystery Fulfilled* is Part 5 of *The God's Puzzle Solved Collection*.**

**These 5 books comprise Vol. I and are meant to be read together.**

<b><i>God's Puzzle Solved</i></b>	<b>Part 1</b>
<b><i>God's Puzzle Completed</i></b>	<b>Part 2</b>
<b><i>The Mystery of God</i></b>	<b>Part 3</b>
<b><i>Prophecy Is Cyclical</i></b>	<b>Part 4</b>
<b><i>God's Mystery Fulfilled</i></b>	<b>Part 5</b>

**Written by Art Mokarow**

**Copyright TXu 1-727-296 – *God's Mystery Fulfilled***

**All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.**

# Contents

<i>PREFACE</i>	v
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	vii
<b>“CHRIST” IS “GOD’S MYSTERY”</b>	1
<b>SATAN WAS GOD’S CHERUB</b>	7
<b>GOD’S MANY SAVIORS</b>	13
<b>FROM FAITH TO FAITH</b>	19
<b>FROM BELIEF TO BELIEF</b>	25
<b>BABYLON, THE GREAT</b>	31
<b>THE PROMISE OF ABRAHAM</b>	37
<b>A MAN AFTER GOD’S HEART</b>	43
<b>THE WICKEDNESS OF THE WORLD</b>	49
<b>DENOMINATIONS</b>	55
<b>GENTILES’ END OF DAYS</b>	61
<b>WHO IS THE ANTI-CHRIST?</b>	67
<b>IS THERE A TRINITY?</b>	73

## PREFACE

When did the creation of the world begin? In the beginning, only God existed. There was nothing. There was darkness, silence and no atmosphere. God was *the only light*. God has *no darkness* in Him (I John 1:5). God has *life*. He is The God of *The Living* (Matthew 22:32). *Life can only come from life*, so only God can give Life Eternal. For you to know The Mystery of God, you must start from *the beginning*. You need to learn about *the genesis of all things*. The Hebrew word for “*genesis*” (“a beginning”) is defined as “*genes, the source of all.*” When did *this beginning* start and when will the end come? That is *your prophetic and historical quest*. This book travels from *the beginning of prophecy* to its *historical end*.

All books by Art are absolutely free. This book includes as many scriptures as possible to follow The Word of God – *The Bible*. Should you have comments or criticisms, please list scripture for any rebuttal. As usual, no money can be accepted for this book. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given). Your job is to make yourself approved to God.

**Art Mokarow**

address: Box 1197 Montgomery, TX 77356

email: [art@mokarow.com](mailto:art@mokarow.com) (Comments and Questions)

websites: [www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com](http://www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com) (Books)

[www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net](http://www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net) (Articles)

## INTRODUCTION

What is *predestination*? God predestined *a mystery*. It involves *The Will of God*. To “predestine” is to “fore-know.” The beginning was before *the foundations of the world*, “According as he has chosen us [the saints] in him [God] before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame [sinless] before him in love” (Ephesians 1:4).

My, my this Plan of God began before The Creation of The World. God pre-planned His *purpose* and *work* before anything ever existed. The Prophet, Isaiah wrote about God’s *thoughts* and *words*, “For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways [mankind] my ways, said The LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my [God] ways higher than your ways and my thoughts [mind] higher than your thoughts [humans]” (Isaiah 55:8-9). God thought out His *entire plan* and *purpose* much like an architect who draws up a complete set of plans for a park, town or city.

The Words of God are God’s *words*. They are not The Words of Christ. God states that His *words* will produce all He has predestined (Isaiah 55:11). God’s *words* will finally *come to pass*. That is *prophecy*, which becomes *history as it unfolds*.

God tells you to *prove all things* and *hold fast* to what is *good*. Humans must prove The Word of God for themselves (I Thessalonians 5:21). *Faith* in God can be substantiated and proved. You can depend on *The Bible* to reveal *the truth*. The Will of God came first to His *mind* and then His spoken word *fulfilled* all of

His thoughts. God's predestinated *thoughts* were intended to be *a mystery*. This mystery was and is only revealed to His *saints*. Paul wrote to *the saints* and *the faithful* of his time (Ephesians 1:1). *The Mystery of God was known*. Why? This Epistle is *a mystery* and can only be understood when God reveals it to all *the faithful saints*. "*Having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself*" (Ephesians 1:9).

### What Is God's Mystery?

"*That in the dispensation [conclusion] of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him*" (Ephesians 1:10). That includes everything *in heaven and on the earth*. This mystery is revealed to the faithful. Those who do not search for God will not be led to the truth. Why do only *the faithful* and *the saints* understand? The faithful have a great responsibility. Much is expected of them.

Jesus declares that only those who know better *will be held responsible*. On the other hand, those who are ignorant of *sin* cannot and will not be held accountable (John 9:41). God expects mankind to be responsible for their actions when they know the difference between *good* and *evil*. When they do know and understand – *beware!* Much will be expected of them. Once you know *The Truth*, you are required to keep it. Those who do not know, do not have the capacity to see or understand *The Truth*. They look to their other interests or to *man-made idols* such as fame, power and money. These are their *gods*. These are the mini-gods they look up to and give honor to.

## CHAPTER 1

### “CHRIST” IS “GOD’S MYSTERY”

“*Christ – In You*” is The Mystery of God (Colossians 1:27). What in the world does that mean? It means you must grow or mature to The Stature of Jesus (Ephesians 4:13). Is that The Mystery? *The scriptures* reveal that The Mystery is far more than just being like Jesus. The Mystery of God is actually *prophetic*.

#### In God’s Image

God demands mankind to be made in His image before they can *live* forever (Genesis 1:26). In fact, God has chosen *the heavenly host* to assist Him in helping you and anyone who has decided to follow Him. *The Book of Hebrews* states Jesus, as Melchizedek, is greater than *the angels*. In fact, the purpose of *the angels* is to *minister* or *serve mankind* in achieving their goal of becoming like Him (Hebrews 1).

Jesus is *the firstborn* as *The Son of Man* (human) and is *The Author of Salvation* (Hebrews 12:2). He was *the first human* to become like God. The rest of humanity has the same end goal (Ephesians 1:10). Could this be *the mystery*?

*A mystery is an unknown element.* Since you must be-



come like Christ, The Mystery of God lays out the blueprint to achieve this end. That is scripturally clear and simple to understand. *A mystery is a secret that only the saints can understand. God is the only one who can reveal this mystery to you.*

### The Clues

How does God reveal *this mystery*? Isaiah, The Prophet writes, *“to whom does God teach knowledge or doctrine?”* (Isaiah 28:9) (Paraphrased). To have *true knowledge* is to understand *a fact or truth*. *“Doctrine”* translated in Hebrew is *“a teaching”* which means it could be: 1) fact or 2) not all truth. *One* is *“a fact”* [true knowledge] and the other is *“a process.”* *“Doctrine”* is *“a fact”* which is partially true and leads to greater truth and understanding.

In order to receive *knowledge*, you must be *eager* and *teachable* like *a new-born babe*. A baby is *helpless, innocent* and very willing to *learn*. God knows humans do not care to *learn* until they make a decision to want to know. That is why The Truth of God is *a mystery*. You are saved by *faith* because you are convinced *your teachers* know what they are *teaching you*. You do not have *blind faith*, because you have been *tested* and have *proved your faith*.

Prophecy is proven to be *true* when history unfolds exactly as the prophecy foretold. It is *absolute* or *certain* because, in each case, *the prophecy* transpires exactly as it was written thousands of years before. This is how you can prove prophecy (Deuteronomy 18).

Over 6,000 years of human history has now passed. You may wonder if biblical prophecy unfolds 100% of the time. If it does, *your faith* should increase as *The Bible* proves itself to be *true*. *Prophecy is proven true because it is The Very Words of God*. God explains His *teaching methods* to those who are *teachable*. It is futile to attempt to reveal it to the hard-headed.

### What Is Doctrine?

*Religions form denominations* because of their *doctrines*. Some view *their doctrines* as *truth*. Is *truth* and *doctrine* the same? *Some denominations* are so adamant about their beliefs being *the truth*, they become *dogmatic*. What is the difference between *doctrine* and *truth*?

God gives the answer, “*Give ear, O you heavens and I will speak and hear, O earth, the words of my mouth*” (Deuteronomy 32:1). It is important for *the entire heaven, the angelic hosts, the whole earth and all mankind* to hear God’s *words*. God is ready to tell His *entire creation*, in heaven and on earth, what His *plans* are. He has told you His *method of teaching*, “*My doctrine shall drop as the rain, my speech [word] shall distil as the dew, as the small [light] rain upon the tender herb and as showers upon the grass: Because I will publish [preach] the name of the LORD, ascribe you greatness to our God*” (Deuteronomy 32:2-3).

Your Father teaches you the meaning of *The Word of God* by example. He uses *physical comparisons* for *spiritual matters*. Jesus said “*spirit is spirit*” and “*flesh*

*is flesh.*” One is not the other. Since humans are not *spirits*, God uses *physical comparisons* so you can understand *spiritual things* (John 3:12).

*Doctrine* is compared to *rain* which gives *life* so *herbs* can grow. *Doctrine* is only meant as *an aid* to help you grow *spiritually*. (Doctrine is a process but not the final product of growth. The herb nourishes the growth, but the rain helps the herbs to grow).

*Doctrine* is only *a part of the truth* and is not *all the truth*. To attempt to make a doctrine the whole truth is nothing but *foolishness*. Ministers cannot be *dogmatic* about *a doctrine* because it is only *a process*. God wants you to understand *the whole truth* and not merely *parts* of the truth. Paul said *prophecy* is told “*in part*” and you will only know “*in part*” (I Corinthians 13:9). To understand *the whole truth* you must strive for *perfection* (I Corinthians 13:10). When you rely on *a particular doctrine* or *prophecy*, don't be surprised if it does not come to pass.

“*Doctrine*” in Hebrew means “*a teaching*” but it is only *part of a whole or complete truth*. You must not become *dogmatic* because it causes *a talent of truth* to be buried. You are liable to lose a talent you have been given. This causes you to stop growing *spiritually* and *hinders* your chances of becoming *perfect*. *Doctrines* are only *clues* to lead you to *the whole truth*, but they are incomplete within themselves. That is why Isaiah said in order to understand *knowledge* and *doctrine* (a message), you must grow. “*For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon*

*line; here a little and there a little” (Isaiah 28:10). Understanding “Christ – In You” as The Mystery of God is only a part of the knowledge of a doctrine. You have only a part of the truth. What is the whole truth concerning this mystery? You must glean “here a little” and “there a little” to get to the truth.*

### The Apostle Peter Knew

Jesus asked Peter, “*But whom say you that I am?*” (Matthew 16:15). Have you ever wondered why He asked this question? Peter answered, “*You are the Christ, the Son of the living God*” (Matthew 16:16). Then Christ replied, “*for flesh and blood [no man] has not revealed it to you, but my Father which is in heaven*” (Matthew 16:17). Jesus warned The Disciples not to spread the news that He was The Christ (Matthew 16:20). Why did He instruct His Disciples not to tell anyone?

An Epistle written to The Gentiles, *who were the elect, states, “Receiving the end [aim] of your faith, even the salvation of your souls [lives]. Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace [mercy] that should come to you. Searching what or what manner of time [when] the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand [prophecy] the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow. To whom it was revealed, that not to themselves, but to us [saints] they did minister the things, which are now reported to you by them that have preached the gospel to you with the Holy Ghost [Spirit] sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into” (I Peter 1:9-12).*

There you have it. *The Mystery of God* is defined and explained. *The Mystery of God* contains the clues of when *The Messiah* will come. *The Prophets of Old* knew *The Messiah* would come and would give *His life* for everyone's *sins*. Then, He was to be resurrected and become *God's glory* (His exact image) (Hebrews 1). *The Prophets of Old* and the angels did not know who He would be. They never understood when or how He could come. That is *The Mystery of God*.

God never relayed this information to *the heavenly host* (which included Satan). No one knew or understood who *The Messiah* was or when He would come.

Peter knew Jesus was *The Christ* through *a revelation* from God. That was the reason Christ said, "tell no man." This authenticated Peter's inspiration of Christ. In vision, Peter saw Jesus, Moses and Elijah in *The Kingdom of God* (Matthew 17). Peter's Epistle informs you that this is "a more sure word of prophecy" than what had previously been known by *The Prophets* (II Peter 1:16-19).

*The Prophets of Old* knew *The Messiah* would come from *the seed of Eve*. The Holy Spirit revealed this to them (II Peter 1:21). This Holy Spirit which was to be "In Christ" made Him Holy (Luke 1:35). The Mystery of God concerns who *The Messiah* would be and when He would come. That is why "Christ – In You" is *The Mystery of God*. This has been revealed, only, to *His saints*. Jesus is the morning star (The Day Star) (Revelation 22:16 and II Peter 1:19).

## CHAPTER 2

### SATAN WAS GOD'S CHERUB

Who is Satan? “*Satan*” in Hebrew merely means “*a deceiver*.” You need to resolve the problem of why God created Satan and who he was. You may be in for a surprise when you discover he was to be God’s *helper*.

#### A Cherub

Normally, you think of Satan as *the devil*. He did not become *the devil* or *the destroyer* until Christ was *resurrected*. Originally, God created Satan for a very high and honorable purpose. *The Bible* is very clear about the reason for Satan’s existence. “*You have been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering [jewels], the sardius, topaz and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle and gold: the workmanship of your tabrets and of your pipes was prepared in you in the day that you were created*” (Ezekiel 28:13).

Looking upon Satan when he was first created is similar to beholding *an awesome brilliant jewel*. His entire being radiated like the most precious gems ever conceived. He was beautiful to behold. Who was he? He was *the anointed cherub*. He was one of three who were created to fulfill an extremely important role. God ordained him, *personally*, for this high commis-

sion (Ezekiel 28:14). What was his job? *“You are the anointed cherub that covers; and I [God] have set you so: you were upon the holy mountain [paradise] of God; you have walked up and down in the middle of the stones of fire”* (Ezekiel 28:14). Of the three cherubs, Satan (as a blazing consuming fire) was to cover The Throne of God. *“For our God [Himself] is a consuming fire”* (Hebrews 12:29). Satan and the two other cherubs were God’s *right-hand assistants*. Wow! *“You were perfect in your ways from the day that you were created, till iniquity [harm] was found in you”* (Ezekiel 28:15). Satan, as a cherub, was *perfect and had complete wisdom and understanding* (Ezekiel 28:17). This is amazing.

### The Day Star

Jesus Christ declared, *“I am...the bright and morning star [The Sun]”* (Revelation 22:16). Christ is prophesied as *The Sun of Righteousness* (Malachi 4:2). There are many *suns in the universe* but Jesus is *The Only Light Bringer* (John 1:4-9). Righteousness is God in His Glory (all God’s goodness) (Exodus 33:18-19). Jesus is *The First Begotten Son in The Glory and Goodness of God*. There will be many Sons of God covered with The Glory of God (like the sun). This will be a chain reaction. You are to be *just like Jesus* who is in *the exact image of God* (Hebrews 1).

### Satan Is Lucifer

Here is a *future prophecy* about Satan, *“How are you fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!*



*How are you cut down to the ground [a snake], which did weaken the nations [world]” (Isaiah 14:12). Amazingly, you learn that some angels are light bringers (like Jesus). They are the cherubs anointed by God to assist Him in disbursing the truth.*

Isaiah, *in vision*, had an experience with a Seraphim. (Seraphs are angels with six wings. They are more powerful than the other angels). He was scared and said he had actually seen God on His *throne* (Isaiah 6:5). Isaiah told the angel he was *an unclean human* (a sinner), “*Then flew one of the seraphims to me, having a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar [sacrifice]: And he laid it upon my mouth [works] and said, Lo, this has touched your lips [to speak]; and thine iniquity [harm] is taken away and your sin purged”* (Isaiah 6:6-7). Isaiah had his mouth *purged of sin* so he could *speaking God's Word – The Truth.*

“*Angels*” are “*God's assistants*” to help teach the way to *righteousness*. They are part of the word “*us*” (all inclusive) in Genesis 1:26. They are of *Elohim – The One who builds all things* (Hebrews 3:4). “*Lucifer*” is a Latin word translated from “*Heylale*” in Hebrew by a monk in The Fourth Century. The Latin and Hebrew translations define the word as “*light bringer*” or “*day star.*” You are getting closer to understanding why Satan rebelled. He believed, *as a cherub, light bringer and day star*, that he should be The Messiah.

Satan's *desire* of being *first* became *his idol*. He *sinned*. Satan believed he should be *like* God and sit at God's *right hand* as *The Christ*. That explains his conversa-



tion with Eve. She would be *like* God and would know *good* and *evil* (Genesis 3:5). Does this remind you of Cain and Abel?

### The Wilderness Struggle

Notice what Satan said to Jesus after He fasted for forty days and nights, "*And when the tempter came to him, he said, If you be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread*" (Matthew 4:3). Here, Satan was not a *deceiver* because Jesus knew him. However, he tried to *tempt* and *fool* Christ into thinking that He wasn't actually The Christ. Satan believed *his own lie*. Satan, himself, was *the day star* or *light bringer*. This is the battle Satan wanted to win.

God never told any of *the angels* they were to be The Christ, "*For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father [the same] and he shall be to me a Son*" (Hebrews 1:5).

Angels were already Sons of God (those who called upon God's name). *The Son of Seth* (Enos), also, called upon *the name* of God. Those who did were regarded as The Sons of God (Genesis 5). Satan considered himself as God's *son* because he was a cherub and had called upon His name. Satan was one of God's *right-hand assistants* in bringing *light* and *the truth* to the world.

*The Book of Job* is an example of angels being Sons of God. Satan was one of them.

## Satan's Fall As Lightning

Satan didn't fall from heaven when he rebelled. Rather, he decided to leave his *first estate* and habitation (God's throne), along with one-third of the angels. Satan couldn't have been thrown from heaven because he still had access to God's throne in The Days of Job. When did God exile Satan from His presence?

Jesus, being a Prophet, foresaw Satan falling as lightning from heaven, "*I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven*" (Luke 10:18). When did this take place? "*Now is judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out*" (John 12:31). This occurred, exactly, at The Time of Christ's *crucifixion* (John 12:32-33). Amazingly, Satan did not fall to the earth until Jesus died and paid for *everyone's sins* with His blood. *The judgment* does not begin at The White Throne Judgment but before, as Jesus prophesied. Whose judgment?

## The Time Of Judgment

Some misunderstand the meaning of the word *judgment*. In Hebrew and Greek, "*judgment*" is "*a time for justice.*" Judgment is not necessarily a bad or evil event. Justice is a time of *fairness*. Christ said just before He announced Satan would be cast out of heaven, "*He that loves his life shall lose it; and he that hates his life in this world shall keep it to life eternal. If any man serve me, let him follow me [die for me]; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour*" (John 12:25-26). This is a

*time of proving* for a specific group of people. They are to be *judged* earlier than others. Finally, Jesus claims, “*And I, if I be lifted up* [crucified and resurrected] *from the earth, will draw all men to me*” (John 12:32). *The judgment* begins much earlier for these people.

The Apostle Peter explains who these people are. He tells you when *their time of judgment* begins, “*For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?*” (I Peter 4:17). There are only *two judgments* (John 5:25-29). *The judgment* for The Bride of Christ is during their lifetime. That is why The Bride is resurrected in *the first resurrection*.

Satan had already been *judged* and *cast out* of *The House of God* (in heaven) when Jesus was *crucified*. Satan, God's cherub who covered *the mercy seat*, became *ego driven* and obsessed with his own abilities as The Day Star, *the light bringer*. He wanted to be The Messiah instead of Christ. Just like Cain, Satan would not *repent*. Instead, he will be thrown into *The Lake of Fire*.

God's right-hand assistant/helper gave up his *high estate*. Satan will be found *guilty* (for causing all sin) in *The Last Judgment* (The White Throne Judgment).

## CHAPTER 3

### GOD'S MANY SAVIORS

The Mystery of God is to have “*Christ – In You.*” This mystery can be more confusing than trying to figure out who The Messiah is or when He was born. *A faithful priesthood* had to be chosen. The Priesthood had to be anointed by God. *This priest* had to be chosen from among *men*.

#### Priesthood Qualifications

*The Book of Hebrews* is an Epistle dealing with *The Priesthood*. It reveals who God chose as *high priest*. *The Book of Hebrews* clearly reveals that *angels* cannot be God's *high priest*. God shows you His Priesthood is chosen *genealogically* or *personally* by an *oath* from God. Either way, it is an *order* or *system* ordained by God, “*For every high priest taken from among men [human] is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins*” (Hebrews 5:1). It can't be any simpler. This definition for *The Priesthood* is very broad. It states that *any high priest* taken from among men (human) was to offer gifts and sacrifices. These sacrifices would lead them to their Father and His purpose. Biblically, there are Egyptian, Indian and Chinese *priests* from all corners of the world. There is another mystery regarding who will be honored and accepted by

God. Remember there are, also, *The Priests of Baal* which God hates (Hebrews 5:1-5). God only accepts The Priesthood from Aaron and Christ as Melchizedek. There are *many priesthoods*. The Real Priests of God are chosen by God. God looks into the person's heart when He chooses someone for *the priesthood*. Remember, God chose Abel because he offered a more excellent sacrifice than Cain (Hebrews 11:4). *Faith is a matter of absolute belief*. There is no other way to *Salvation*.

There are many *human forms* of religion and worship. Man has, also, imagined many false *saviors* to worship. It is predicated upon *free choice* and *faith*. God chooses by looking into a person's heart. What are your *desires* for doing what you do? What is the reason you strive so hard to attain what you want? Only God knows *the heart* and knows what is *genuine*. In history, man has chosen many *saviors*. But, only God can choose *The True Savior*.

### Many Biblical Saviors

When you consider who The Messiah is, your mind thinks of "*Salvation*," which merely means "*to save*." Save you from what? Throughout history, humans have worshipped *many man-made saviors*. In Hebrew, "*savior*" comes from the root "*yasha*." It is defined as saving individuals like those who follow God. A man-made savior can be a warrior or a leader who protects his tribe or nation. A savior is one who does *good works* like Christ did. In *The Bible*, there are *many saviors*.

**“Joshua” in Hebrew is “Yahshua,” the same as Jesus. It has the same root, “yasha.” Cyrus, The Mede, in *The Bible*, was a savior for The Jews because he allowed them to rebuild The Temple of God and return to Jerusalem. This is similar to *Joshua* who was God’s savior of Israel. Joshua led Israel into The Promised Land. *The scriptures* have many saviors or *yashas*. Biblically, this can multiply the problem. Who is *the savior* prophesied in Deuteronomy 18? (Read John 5:43-47 for further explanation). Who can be a prophet like Moses? This creates a real conundrum or dilemma. How can you be sure Jesus is The Christ? The identity of *The True Messiah* for *World Salvation* is still a mystery. The Muslims are waiting for *their Messiah* as are The Jews. The Christians are waiting for the second return of Christ as The Messiah. In fact, many pagan religions have *messiahs* as well. The Hindus, The Buddhists and others have *their saviors*. Amazing! Who is correct?**

**Jesus will tell you how you can know. *Doubting Thomas* asked Jesus, “Where are you going and how can we know the way?” (Paraphrased) (John 14:5). “Jesus said to him, I am the way, the truth and the life: no man comes to the Father, but by me” (John 14:6). Christ told Thomas that anyone can find *the truth* and *Eternal Life* but only by following Jesus. Why? “Believe you not that I am in the Father and the Father in me? The words that I speak to you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwells in me, he does the works. Believe me that I am in the Father and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works’ sake” (John 14:10-11). There is your *proof*. It is from The Word of God.**

Christ told you He could do nothing Himself (John 5:19). As a human, Jesus was just like any other man. He was totally helpless to do any of The Works of God. Yet, your Messiah was *The Savior of Mankind*. God was providing *the miracles* (such as *healing, walking on water* and *feeding the masses*). There are volumes written on what Jesus accomplished. These were all *good works*. But, they were *works* that only God could do. How? An angel told Mary it was God's Holy Spirit overshadowing Jesus that made Him Holy (Luke 1:35). Only Jesus received God's Holy Spirit without *measure* (John 3:34). Only He could *speak* every *Word of God*. God's *power* and *love* was only fulfilled "*In Christ*." That is what made Jesus God's *First Begotten Son*. He had all of God's DNA in Him. Only through "*God – In Christ*" could He do *the works* He did. That *proves* Jesus was The Christ. No one else or any *other savior* had God's *Holy Spirit* (or genes). He consisted of God's *mono-genes* (all of God's genes). King David had God's Holy Spirit just like many *other saviors* of God (Psalm 51:10-11). The only difference between Jesus and others was that all Christ did was through "*God – In Him*." Prophets, saviors and priests had only *an earnest amount* of God's Holy Spirit to complete a specific commission from God. Jesus, as a human, knew He was *helpless* and could do nothing by Himself. However, He had *great faith* in His Father. It is the same with Christians today. Only by *faith* or *belief* in God Almighty (El) can you fulfill *The Work of Christ*. You must follow Christ as your example and have "*Christ – In You*." Being born of human parents, you are helpless. Jesus, The Christ is *The Son of God* (a human born from Mary). He had to have *faith* in



**His *Father*.** Your Messiah said because of His human flesh, He was greatly troubled and asked God to not have Him go through His crucifixion (John 12:27-30). However, Jesus declared He was born for that very reason. God then *glorified* Him by *speaking out* to the people. It was as if they heard thunder.

### **By Faith You Are Saved**

Do you grasp the significance of these words? Jesus, as a human, was helpless. He could do nothing and He knew it. In order for Christ to be *your Messiah* and grant *Salvation*, He had to have total *faith* in God. Jesus was *not perfect*. It was *The Father* (God's Holy Spirit) who made Him *Holy* and perfect. It is the same with you as a Christian. Humanly, you can do nothing. You, also, must *grow in faith*. Jesus was *faithful* as God's *witness* (Revelation 1:5). He was *human* and had to *grow spiritually* from *birth*. *The Father* performed all of the *good works* of The Messiah through The Faith of Jesus. He proved He was *The Savior of The World by the works* God did "*In Christ*." There are *many saviors* but only one Jesus, The Christ. Christ was anointed by God when He went to heaven as *your sacrifice* after The Order of Melchizedek (Hebrews 7:16-21). Jesus was a *Priest* who was *ordained* by God through *an oath* as *your Savior/Messiah by The Works of God*. Through God, *the works* Jesus did proved Christ's *Messiahship*. He is *The Savior of The World* (I John 4:14). The Order of Melchizedek culminates in Christ by an Oath from God (Hebrews 7:21). It is not by genealogy like The Levites, but by God choosing who He wants.



## CHAPTER 4

### FROM FAITH TO FAITH

**By following The Four Gospels, The Apostle Paul proves Christ's Messiahship. You will learn about The Mystery of God as opposed to The Mystery of Babylon (Romans 1).**

#### **Holding Truth In Unrighteousness**

**Paul writes he is *a debtor* to both *the wise* and *the unwise* (Romans 1:14). *The wise* are *The Greeks* and *the unwise* are *The Barbarians*. A "*Barbarian*" in Greek is "*a foreigner*" or "*the uneducated*." The Greeks were *the wise of the day*. They were *the wise* for a very good reason. The Apostle reveals, "*Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain [proud] in their imaginations [thoughts] and their foolish heart was darkened*" (Romans 1:21). This is amazing!**

**Eve, being *The Mother of All Living*, her husband Adam and their sons (Abel and Seth) knew God personally. All of them taught *The Truth of God*. They knew about Paradise, The Garden of Eden and The Tree of Life in The Land of Eden. They were taught about *the seed of Eve* which would come to restore what was lost. They knew *The Truth of The Gospel* as clear as *a bell*. These truths were passed on from generation to generation.**

In the pre-flood days, God's *prophets*, from Seth to *Noah*, taught *righteousness*. After the flood, Noah and his sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth, preached *this same truth*. As each son's family grew, they became tribes. These tribes grew into nations during The Tower of Babel in The Land of Shinar (Genesis 10:32). The world knew The One True God and His *main purpose for Salvation*.

Paul tells you, the leaders of the nations became *vain* in their own thinking. What did these nations do? "*Professing themselves to be wise* [knew it all], *they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible* [eternal] *God into an image made like to corruptible* [dying] *man and to birds and fourfooted beasts and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness* [to death] *through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves. Who changed the truth of God into a lie and worshipped and served the creature* [science] *more than the Creator, who is blessed* [with gifts] *forever. A-men* [for certain]" (Romans 1:22-25).

Oh my, they knew more of The Gospel than Christians know today. They knew every aspect of *the truth* from God. They learned it, personally, through Adam, Eve, Cain, Abel, Seth and his sons. After the flood, Noah *preached righteousness and the truth* to his children (Shem, Ham and Japheth) (II Peter 2:5).

The whole world, at The Tower of Babel, knew of *The One Real God* and His Plan of *Salvation*. How did they change *this truth to a lie*?

## Origin Of Worldwide Religion

To keep *the nations* united at The Tower of Babel, they created *a worldwide religion*. They took *The Truth of God* and made it into *a lie* by *worshipping the creation* instead of *The Creator, The One True God* (Romans 1:25). This was *the genesis of all religions*. They taught *philosophy as a way of life*. True Christians were *to worship only God*. God, no one else, made everything (Hebrews 3:4).

The worship of humans, creatures or any part of the world and *the universe is a lie*. That includes any human or faithful saint, even Jesus when He was human. None of them should be worshipped.

Humans turn *physical things* into *idols*, which they claim to be holy. Many sell their man-made idols as God-related items. Worshipping *trees, birds, animals* and *humans* is not following *the path* to God. *Any religion* which looks to God's *creation* as *Holy* does not worship The One True God. All they do is worship *the creation*.

Jesus, over and over again, told you to worship *The Father*. Jesus called *The Temple* The House of God. Jesus said, as a human, He could do nothing of Himself (John 5:19).

Until Jesus was *glorified in heaven* as God's very Son, He was not in *The Family of God*. It was only after His *glorification* as God's Son that He became *the exact image* of His Father – The Image of God (Hebrews 1).

## The Unknown God

The Apostle Paul knew, according to *The Book of Romans*, that *The Nation of Greece* had *many wise individuals* who knew *the truth*. He, also, knew they held *the truth in an unrighteous way*. He tried to preach God's *truth* to them while in Athens, "*For as I passed by and beheld your devotions [prayers], I found an altar [no idol] with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore you ignorantly worship, him declare I to you*" (Acts 17:23). Paul knew they understood *The Truth of The One Real Creator*. Yet, they worshipped the creation instead of God. They knew full well what they were doing.

Paul's answer is, "*God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord [Master] of heaven and earth, dwells not in temples made with hands [no church building]; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed anything, seeing he gives to all life and breath and all things*" (Acts 17:24-25). This is quite clear! Paul knew they were *the wise* and were aware of *The One True God*. What they were confused about was the fact that no human and *no part of the creation* should be worshipped. Their worship was *a lie and a sin*. Paul gives you the details of God's *plan and purpose* (Acts 17:26-30). God gave each nation *a separate inheritance* to allow *free choice* so they could come to repentance. The Greeks were taught *the truth*. They taught *truth* but, as with all humans, through *their imaginations*, they made a *variety of faiths* (beliefs). Those different beliefs inspired many religions. That is why Paul felt, *as a debtor*, he

needed to tell *The Truth of The One God*. Look at all the millions of *different denominations* the world has today.

### From Faith To Faith

Paul lays out the systematic process of how God leads you to *the truth*, “*For I am not ashamed of the gospel [good news] of Christ: for it is the power of God [not Jesus] to salvation to every one that believes; to the Jew first and also to the Greek [both are “the wise” in their order]. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith*” (Romans 1:16-17).

The world originally knew *the truth*. They became confused, in Babylon, by *their human imaginations* (thoughts) (Genesis 11:6-7). All religions are in *Babylon*. That is why Christ said, “*Come out of her [Babylon]*” (Revelation 18:4). Paul felt he was *a debtor to the wise and the unwise*. He wanted to save them from The Wrath of God by revealing to them The Truth of God, “*For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness*” (Romans 1:18).

*Any doctrine or teaching* that leads to worshipping parts of God’s *creation*, human or otherwise, is *a lie*. It is *unrighteousness* and, by following this false teaching, it will bring God’s wrath upon anyone who participates.

## CHAPTER 5

### FROM BELIEF TO BELIEF

When you *repent*, The Truth can be revealed to you. This will cause you to grow in *faith*. God has chosen His *divine system* for an extremely vital reason.

#### Whatever Is Not Of Faith

The God of *free choice*, without a hint of *slavery*, is your True God. Only God can be your *True Father* and *Lord*. It wasn't right for Israel to want a king to replace God. Samuel was displeased and prayed to The Lord (I Samuel 8:5-6) (Paraphrased). Here is God's answer, "*Hearken to the voice of the people in all that they say to you: for they have not rejected you, but they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them*" (I Samuel 8:7). This was idolatry. Only God is your Father and Teacher of good and evil.

God tells Samuel, "*According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them out of Egypt even to this day, where with they have forsaken me and served other gods, so do they also to you*" (I Samuel 8:8). This was a great sadness for a Father who only wanted *good* for His children.

So, the people at The Tower of Babel spent their time worshipping *the creation* instead of *The Creator*. They

rejected God as their only Lord and King. Instead, they chose *humans* as their *gods*. Others chose to worship trees, plants, mountains, insects, fish and animals. The American Indians are an example of worshipping *the creation* instead of The True God – The Creator.

Israel knew *the truth* but they still wanted another king as their savior. This happened when those in The Land of Shinar wanted Nimrod to be their king (Genesis 10: 9-10). He was *the genesis* of all *human kingdoms* and *religions of the world*. They knew *the truth* of God and *Salvation* in its *totality*. It's as if an idea comes to a person's mind and that idea (whether good or evil) is perpetuated. An example is when God creates a person's beautiful, flawless skin and they decide to mutilate it with tattoos. Or, a hairdresser takes beautiful hair and creates a hairdo that resembles spikes and spokes coming from the head. These are examples of the results of mankind's foolish decisions.

### Paul's Christian Doctrine

Paul said, *the truth* was passed on from one *faith* to another *faith* by deciding what was *good* or *evil* (Romans 1). The Apostle Paul tells The Gentiles his method of teaching *the truth*, “*Let every soul [life] be subject to the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God [which included Christ]*” (Romans 13:1). This is quite *an eye opener*. All the world has *free choice* to learn *the truth*.

The Apostle Paul used this method of preaching all the time. In fact, Paul insists if you do not allow people



to choose for themselves, you cause them to sin. You are to *judge no one*. “*Who are you that judges another man’s servant [Christ]? To his own master [Jesus] he stands or falls. You, he shall be holden [helped] up: for God is able to make him stand*” (Romans 14:4). It can’t be said any simpler. Christ is *your Master and Teacher*.

God allows you to choose to be a vegetarian or a meat and potato eater, to drink or not to drink alcohol and to choose *your day of worship*. Doctrines should not be *commands*. No one should be disfellowshipped over different understandings because being disfellowshipped causes rejection to others (Romans 14:1-2). This behavior can persist even after the second and third warnings. Ministers and elders are not to have *disputes* or *argue* over any doctrine. Paul concluded, “*And he that doubts is damned [judged] if he eat, because he eats not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith is sin*” (Romans 14:23).

### God’s Methodology of Teaching

God teaches *free choice* because He realizes that until one truly desires *The Truth of God*, He is *wasting His time and effort*.

God teaches everyone through either *their personal experiences* or through The Word of God. The choice is *yours*. God, however, will never give up. He states, “*My counsel shall stand and I will do all my pleasure*” (Isaiah 46:10). God never quits. Time is not an issue. But, achieving *the goal of God’s plan and purpose* is



(Ephesians 1:9-10). **God will, eventually, bring everyone to *repentance* because He is *longsuffering* and has great patience (II Peter 3:9).**

**“*Doctrine*” is “*a continuous spiritual process*” led by God’s Holy Spirit (I Corinthians 13:9 and Romans 8:8-14). *Doctrine is only partial truth*. God’s *Law* is a perfect example. You begin by keeping *The Letter of The Law* and, then, *spiritually grow by magnifying The Law*, which gives it *more honor* (Isaiah 42:21). The Jews are *blinded by The Letter of The Law*. Some Christians do not understand the magnification of *The New Covenant* which Christ brought (II Corinthians 3:13-14).**

**You are *saved by your faith* and what you *truly believe*. You *believe* in what you really *desire*. If you *desire this life and physical things* above God, it will cause confusion in *your thinking*. You will *lose* any Godly *wisdom* you may have had (Proverbs 18:1-4).**

**If you continue worshipping other idols above God, you will end up in *darkness*. Darkness makes you *blind* to any logic God may have given you. By not following God, you can end up in *outer darkness on judgment day*. Either you learn through the human experience of hard knocks with *pain and suffering* or you *follow* God and are led by His *Holy Spirit*.**

**When you *repent* and accept God, you become *teachable*. Then, God can step in as *a loving Father* and teach you *the truth*.**

**Moses gave *The Law* to bring you to *repentance*, but**

Jesus brought The Magnified Law with *grace, mercy and truth* (John 1:17). The Word of God is The Truth of God (John 17:17). God's *word* is more than *doctrine*. Doctrine may only have a *partial truth*. When confronted by Satan, Jesus said, "*Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God*" (Matthew 4:4). That is why Satan didn't know, for sure, that Christ was The Real Son of God. So, Satan tested Him by reciting *the scriptures*. Satan used *doctrine* to test Jesus by quoting Psalm 91:11-12 perfectly (Matthew 4:6). Satan discovered that Jesus was, indeed, The Christ. So, he left Him.

*Faith is the road to Salvation*. That is why Jesus related "*the way to God's house is narrow and straight.*" The gate to enter The Garden of God is *very narrow* and not everyone will fit on this narrow path. *Each gate* is represented by a *pearl*. The *pearly gates*, in The Kingdom of God, are guarded by The Twelve Tribes of Israel. *This entrance gate is the pearl of great price* that Jesus referred to. The central issue for *Salvation* is not some *doctrinal point*, which is only a *part of the truth*. *Salvation is a matter of faith*.

God, alone, understands *perfection*. You must accept God as *your only teacher* so you can become *perfect and Holy*. Why? God is *Holy*. Jesus is also *Holy* with all of God's *glory and goodness*. You, too, must become *Holy*. "*Belief*" is "*faith*" and it is the only road or way to *Salvation*. Lacking *belief* in God means you have other idols that you look to.

## CHAPTER 6

### BABYLON, THE GREAT

*Babylon, The Great, is a whore. She causes God's people to commit fornication. "Fornication," in this instance, is "an intermingling with another god." It all began at The Tower of Babel. The people were worshipping the creation instead of The Creator (Revelation 18:3).*

**This Babylon made the whole world drunk so, they, in their stupor, would fall prey to worshipping false gods. Even God's people – Israel, Christians and Muslims – fell prey. That is why Christ declares, "Come out of her, my people" (Revelation 18:4).**

#### Each Their Inheritance

**God saw those in Shinar trying to form a one-world government with one language. He knew that in the end, they would become violent and conditions would end in a world war. The conditions would be exactly like those prior to the flood. Because of their imaginations, they would contrive differences and wickedness would come to pass (Genesis 11:6-7).**

**He decided to confuse their languages so they could not communicate. To prevent even further clashes be-**

tween them, God separated them. He gave them *racially* divided inheritances. God still allowed them *the free choice* to follow Him or other conjured *mini-gods*.

### One World Government

God knew *family protection* was inherent within each race. Whether as a family or tribes with national cultures, conflict will occur. Two can only walk together when they are in agreement (Amos 3:3). They must think alike. Otherwise, differences can lead to war. In marriage, a man and woman may decide to get divorced. When they do not think *alike*, one may want to murder the other. Divorce is a better option than murder.

When Jesus described marriage, *the man and woman* must be *one flesh* and, therefore, never *divorce*. His Disciples couldn't understand how two people could always be in agreement. It is the reason Moses permitted *divorce* in *The Old Testament* (Deuteronomy 24:1-2). Here is what The Disciples said, "*If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry*" (Matthew 19:10). Jesus relates that some men and women have no problem not getting married. Others are castrated to be eunuchs and some decide to be eunuchs on their own. Finally, the last group (a man and woman, husband and wife) are able to learn to live together until one of them dies.

A couple becomes *one flesh*, over time, through dedication, commitment and a willingness to comply. It all comes down to whatever they choose.

Adam and Eve stayed together because Adam truly loved *his wife*. Eve came from Adam's *own flesh*. Adam was not deceived by Satan. Eve was the one who was deceived (I Timothy 2:14). Most loving mothers who *give birth* to a child would do everything possible to protect that baby.

Adam, likewise, was *willing to die for his wife*. That is why Paul told Timothy it was Eve who transgressed and not Adam.

Are you beginning to understand how *human nature* functions? The closer *the similarities* between people makes for a better opportunity to have *peace* and a *human paradise*. That is why God decided to make *man* in His *image* (Genesis 1:26). *When two think alike, they walk together in unity*. They are able to live in relative peace. That is why *love* (caring enough to die for each other) is the only way to stay together in *peace* and *tranquility*. That is why Adam was put in charge of Eve as *her Master*. He had a love so great, he was willing to die for her. He was *a figure* or *type of The Messiah* (Romans 5:14). *Love is the supreme gift* from God. It is *the state of perfection* (spiritually). You can become *glorified* like God and have *the same body* as Him.

“*Babylon*” is “*human nature*.” *All human beings*, not understanding their own hearts (desires), are different from each other. Until they are willing to die for *each other*, they cannot walk together as *one*. *Babylon, the great whore*, fornicates with others who *think, believe* and *desire the same things*. They *unite* not because

of love, but because of *individual desires* and end up thinking alike.

### What Is Sin?

*Sin is the transgression of The Law* because *The Law is just, Holy and good*. *The Law*, however, cannot change *human nature*. Only God can. Because of *your weak flesh*, God is *The Only One* who *knows good and evil*. You *must, literally, give yourself to God as a slave* (Galatians 4:1-2).

Accept Jesus as *your Master, husband, teacher and protector*, so you can become an *heir through adoption* from *human parents*. You will become *The Very Son of God* like Jesus (Galatians 4:7). You will no longer be *slaves*, because you will be like God and His Son. *Sin* is not only *the transgression of The Law*, but it is also *missing the mark* of becoming like God which is to be in His image (Genesis 1:26). The only answer to *human nature* is to be *divided* or *divorced* until you each, individually, *repent* and return to God. That is why God *wounded the head of the beast* at The Tower of Babel. Notice, God did not *kill the beast* (which is human nature) but delayed its fulfillment until *the end*. In the end, God will become *supreme* like *in the beginning*. God does not fail and will complete His *earthly plan*.

### God Divides The Races

The dividing of the races will be accomplished through The Wrath of God. God's *wrath* is revealed *from heaven* against those who "*hold the truth in unrighteousness*"

(Romans 1:18). How do those who hold the truth in unrighteousness corrupt God's *righteousness*?

They do so by worshipping *the creation* instead of *The Creator*. Religion caused individuals to make *mini-gods* from the fruits of God's labor (Hebrews 1:4 and Romans 1:25). They *worshipped* creatures of *all kinds*. They worshipped *the powerful humans* as gods. They worshipped Jesus as He was in the flesh and they worshipped Mary. That is not how it should be. That is *idolatry*.

Here is God's prophecy when He unleashes His *wrath* against those who know *the truth* in an *unrighteous way*, "And I [John] saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of God" (Revelation 15:1). The time period is clear. God, through *the seven angels*, will warn *the world* by *spanking* them *severely* with His *wrath*. *This wrath* is motivated by His *desire to warn you* before it is too late.

You will see *The Sea of Glass* which states it is a *picture* of those who have overcome the beast. They have come *out of Babylon* (Revelation 18:4). Most likely, John saw *The Sea of Glass* (as a mirror) in a vision. The Great Beast coming out of The Mediterranean Sea was a type of individual coming out of *all nations*. *This glass is described as a mirror* (I Corinthians 13:12).

These converted people sing *The Song of Moses* and *The Song of The Lamb* (Revelation 15:3-4). What prophecy does The Song of Moses foretell? "Give ear



[listen], *O you heavens* [many] *and I will speak; and hear, O earth, the words of my mouth* [God's words]" (Deuteronomy 32:1). God wants *the whole world to hear this song that was given to Israel*. "*Remember the days of old* [ancient times – a beginning], *consider the years of many generations* [history]: *ask your father* [elders] *and he will show you* [traditions]; *your elders and they will tell you*. *When the Most High divided* [divorced] *to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds* [continents] *of the people according to the number of the children of Israel*. *For the LORD's portion is his people* [Abraham]; *Jacob* [Israel] *is the lot* [property] *of his inheritance*" (Deuteronomy 32:7-9).

God completely *wounded the beast* (human nature) and gave each nation (from Shem, Ham and Japheth) *their inheritance*. He divorced (divided) the nations so they would not grow to despise each other. God had to prevent them from committing *genocide*. God never wanted the lands destroyed.

God loves everyone and wants to *save the world* through *The First Begotten Son, Jesus, The Christ*. That is the reason Jesus came (I John 4:14). Christ came to restore *The Tree of Life* through *God's Holy Spirit*. Now, *The Mystery of God* is made possible and everyone in every nation has *an opportunity* to have *free choice*.



## CHAPTER 7

### THE PROMISE OF ABRAHAM

The tribes and people from The Land of Shinar were divided at The Tower of Babel. Each individual could seek God when they decided to follow Him. That choice must always be made, independently, by each individual.

#### The City Of Ur

Terah was Abram's father and they lived in Ur. Ur belonged to Babylon of The Chaldeans. The Chaldeans were *a priestly sect* in Babylon.

Abram (later Abraham) was born and grew to manhood in Babylon. He was *religiously* educated in Ur (Genesis 11:27-28). He knew everything about Polytheism (religions of many gods) but, also, understood higher learning such as science, astronomy and mathematics. But, more importantly, he knew The One True God who made *all things* (Hebrews 3:4).

Historically, Ur was a great city because of its *Ziggurat*. It was built to duplicate *the temple* at The Tower of Babel. The Tower of Babel was *a pyramid shape* with levels circling to the top. The top was *flat* where The One God, called *Anu, The SkyGod* (from heaven), had His Holy House (The Temple). The pathway circling

the pyramid shape to the top represented *the stairway to heaven and Paradise*. *The Gospel of Christ* was preached by *The Prophets*, such as Enoch and Noah (preachers of righteousness) (Jude and II Peter).

Abraham had to come out of Babylon like all those who are called by God. Abraham, with his wife Sarai (Sarah), left Babylon to live in present-day Turkey. This was close to Mount Ararat where Noah and *the ark* landed after the flood.

One of Terah's sons (Haran) died in Ur before the family left. When they moved to Southern Turkey, they called their community "*Haran*" after the son who had died. Lot, Haran's son, joined Abraham and the rest of his family (Genesis 11:31).

Abram, unlike most in Babylon, worshipped The One God YHWH, instead of *the gods* of Babylon. Once Abram's father (Terah) died, Abram received God's call to follow Him.

### Abram's Call

*"Now the LORD had said to Abram, Get yourself out of your country and from your kindred and from your father's house, to a land that I will show you. And I will make of you a great nation and I will bless you and make your name great: and you shall be a blessing"* (Genesis 12:1-2). The first promise God gave to Abram was to be fulfilled. Of all the people on earth, only Abram chose to follow *The One True God*. Abram was called out of Babylon to grow *spiritually* and to *love* The One

**True God.** There was a second promise as well, “*And I will bless [give happiness] them that bless you and curse him that curses you: and in you shall all the families of the earth be blessed [paradise]*” (Genesis 12:3).

These are *the two promises* God gave. The first is personal, but the second gives *blessings for all nations* – everyone in the world. *This is The Messianic Promise. This guaranteed promise includes the entire world.* It foretells The Coming of *The Messiah to Save The Whole World* (I John 4:14).

Abram came to Sichem (The Plains of Moreh) where The Canaanites dwelt at that time. God promised to give *all that land* to Abram. In Bethel [house of God], Abram built *an altar near a mountain*. It was in present-day Syria in Lebanon. As Abram traveled south, there was *a famine in the land* so he detoured to Egypt. Besides coming out of *Babylon*, Abram had to come out of *Egypt* as well. Abram obeyed God’s *word* and did whatever he was told to do. He was *very faithful*.

Abram came out of Babylon. But he, also, had to come out of Egypt which was *full of sin*. In both cases, Abram obeyed God *in faith*. He, also, obeyed God’s *voice* in keeping His *commandments, statutes* and *The Torah*, which showed *the path to life* (Genesis 26:5).

Abram proved his *faith* by obeying God’s *voice and The Word of God given to him*. Abram was now ready to fulfill *the second promise to bless all nations in the world*. Abram’s first promise was sealed by God (Genesis 15:18). He was, also, able to deliver his kindred

(Lot) from Sodom and Gomorrah. The final promise had conditions.

Sarai (Abram's wife) had no children, but God guaranteed she would have a child. Ishmael was born to Abram, but the family lineage had to come from Abram's wife. Hagar, Sarai's maid, became a concubine to Abram as part of his property. She was not his wife and, therefore, her son was not *a legal son worthy of an inheritance*.

Sarai's name was changed to *Sarah* (meaning a princess) because she was *the mother of many nations*. Isaac was born miraculously and given Abraham's legal name. The generational lineage was *legal* only through one's *wife* and not a concubine. It was the same with Mary, Christ's *human mother*. Joseph, her husband, was not the father. *Legally*, Christ was *David's son* because his mother was of *The Tribe of Levi*. Jesus was *a son of David* because His *mother's* genealogy made it *legal*. When Isaac was born, miraculously, (as Jesus) in Abraham and Sarah's old age, the child was of the lineage that *The Messiah* would come from. Abraham *proved his faith* once again.

When Isaac had grown, Abraham was told to *sacrifice him* (much like a type of Christ). Abraham obeyed God's word *in faith* because he knew *Isaac* would be *resurrected*. Even Isaac was willing to be *the sacrifice* because he had faith in God (Hebrews 11:17-19).

Here is God's *complete guaranteed promise* after Isaac was replaced by a ram in the thicket, "*And said, By*

*myself have I sworn, said the LORD, for because you have done this thing and have not withheld your son, your only son [legally]: That in blessing I will bless you and in multiplying I will multiply your seed as the stars of heaven and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and your seed shall possess the gate [rules – elders] of his enemies; And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed [eternal bliss – happiness]; because you have obeyed my voice” (Genesis 22:16-18). That fulfills The Gospel of Christ where *the whole world is to be blessed. Paradise was promised. But that paradise was lost. The Abrahamic faith produces Salvation by loving God as He loves you. The Messiah as The Mystery of God is your guarantee.**

**Who is The Messiah? The Messiah must come from *the genealogy* of Abraham. When will He come?**

## CHAPTER 8

### A MAN AFTER GOD'S HEART

The Mystery of God is resolved through Abraham's lineage. You must be *faithful* even though you *sin*. The problem is your human heart. You must have God's *heart*.

#### Not Only Faith

When David went to fight *Goliath*, he did not *lack faith* in God. It goes without saying, David was *a weak man*. Certain parts of David's life resembled a puppet. He allowed *his flesh* to guide him.

When David became King of Israel, having all power and control over the people, he proved he was very *weak in his flesh*. He succumbed to Bathsheba and was guilty of adultery. She became pregnant with the king's child. He knew he could not have her as his wife, so he sent her husband into the front lines of battle to be killed. When the husband died, he married Bathsheba. As king, the people could do nothing about it. God sent The Prophet, Nathan, to warn David that he would be punished for breaking The Laws of God.

As soon as David truly realized what he had done, *he*

*repented.* He knew he was *guilty.* He turned to God and revealed his sorrow and deep repentance (Psalm 51, II Samuel 11 and 12). King David pleaded for *mercy,* “*Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me. Cast me not away from your presence; and take not your holy spirit from me. Restore to me the joy of your salvation and uphold me with your free [willing] spirit*” (Psalm 51:10-12). God gave David *mercy and a right heart* for the rest of his life.

Since no one was able to punish King David, God punished him for his sins. David's son died although he fasted for him. He, also, had to be punished for having Bathsheba's husband killed in battle. David was left to fight wars for the rest of his life. He was *a bloody man* and paid a bitter price for all his sins (II Samuel 12:13-21). David fought wars throughout his life and, later, his *own son* tried to take his kingdom from him (II Samuel 18). For this reason, God did not allow him to build *The Temple of God.* Solomon, a man of *peace,* built God's *temple.*

### Faithful Abraham

Abraham was *The Father,* or originator, of *the faithful.* Besides *faith,* he had The Love of God. God loved him because of his willingness to *sacrifice* his own son, Isaac. Abraham had *faith* but, also, *love* which is why God *blessed him.* Abraham was the one to *bless the world.* Abraham's progeny would produce The Messiah.

Abraham had *faith* and obeyed God's voice. He had

*a godly heart and love for his Father, God. Abraham did have a weakness. His weakness was listening to his wife and taking Hagar, his concubine, to have a child. Abram's weakness was similar to Israel's weakness when they built and worshipped the golden calf. For this reason, God codified The Letter of The Law so each point could be kept precisely. This was The Old Covenant.*

The Apostle Paul used an analogy to explain the difference between *The Old* and *The New Covenants*. “*O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched [confused] you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ has been evidently set forth, crucified among you? This only would I learn of you, Received you the Spirit by the works [deeds] of the law or by the hearing of faith? Are you so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, are you now made perfect by the flesh [human effort]?*” (Galatians 3:1-3). “*For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. But he [Ishmael] who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh [human works]; but he of the freewoman was by promise. Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from Mount Sinai, which genders to bondage [slavery], which is Agar [Hagar]. For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage [slavery to Rome] with her children. But Jerusalem which is above [heaven] is free [choice], which is the mother of us all*” (Galatians 4:22-26).

*Salvation is based upon faith as Abraham typified by the two covenants. The Old Covenant is an example of*



being in *slavery* (in Egypt). *The New Covenant* is *spiritual* and allows you to eat of *The Tree of Life*. God is calling all of you, but it is up to you to accept the invitation. When you have *faith*, you will receive God's *love*. *Love is the completion of The Magnified Law*, which is *spiritual, free* and does not have any works connected with it. No human effort is necessary. It is all a matter of *free choice* and *absolute liberty*, but it is dependant upon *a right heart!*

### Christ's Test

Jesus was *faithful* all His life (Revelation 1:5). As a human, He knew He could do nothing by Himself (John 5). Like Abraham, He proved His love for God and His Father's creation by offering His life. Just before He was crucified, Jesus recalled how *human* He really was, "*Now is my soul [life] troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour; but for this cause came I to this hour*" (John 12:27).

Christ knew He was only human and not like God. He knew He, of Himself, could do *nothing* (John 5:19). He had all *the pulls of the flesh* that every human has. Jesus, as a human, was completely on His own. Because of this, Jesus is very aware of your human temptations. Abraham and King David were completely human and not gods. There was every chance they could fail and *they did*. Jesus had to be *a sacrifice* without any blemish or *sin*. He had to be *the human body* prepared by God *in faith*. Jesus, also, had to show, through His *works*, that He had *a right heart* (showing His love for God and all mankind).

Was Jesus your Savior? He said *to not believe Him but the works* (human effort) He *accomplished during His life on earth*. He could have *failed* like David and many other men in *The Bible*. Jesus had to be *glorified* before He could become like God. That is why after His resurrection, when Mary approached Him, Jesus said, "*Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father*" (John 20:17).

Only The Priests could handle any sacrifice that was to be offered. Jesus, therefore, could not be *touched*. To be touched by a human would have made Jesus *unclean*. God's *prepared sacrifice* had to be *untouched* (Hebrews 10:5-17). Christ had to fulfill *the works* done by God. It was not done through His *human effort*. Of Himself, Jesus could have failed and proved He wasn't *The Messiah*. Christ proved His *works* by showing *faith, love* and that God was "*In Him*." *That is why The Jews and Muslims still look for another Messiah*.

### Christ's Human Return

When Jesus was accepted by God as *the sinless sacrifice*, He was *glorified* as God and Melchizedek, *The High Priest, forever* (Acts 2:34-35). This is the prophecy told by David (Psalm 110). Jesus could not have been The Melchizedek who met Abraham because He had not been born yet. Also, Jesus could not have met Abraham because He had not become *the acceptable sacrifice* until after His birth, crucifixion and resurrection. Christ was glorified and became One With God at His first coming. That is why The Disciples and Mary did not recognize Him when He returned.

**Why not?** (Read John 20:11-15). **Why did they not recognize Jesus?** (Read John 20:24-31).

**The Resurrected Christ was what *the scribes* call a *theophany*. “A *theophany*” is “a *divinity*” appearing as a human. Do you remember when Abraham met three men and had a meal with them? One was The Lord God and the other two were angels going to check on Sodom and Gomorrah.**

**Paul said you may, one day, entertain *angels unaware*. These are *theophanies* just like Jesus (after His resurrection). The Mystery of God proves Jesus was completely human as any Christian who has God's Holy Spirit. The difference is Jesus had God's Holy Spirit from His birth. Christians receive this gift through adoption. He was God's *First Begotten Son* from *birth*, which made Him *Holy* (Luke 1:35). Abraham, King David and Jesus proved *their faith* by having a *right heart* (desires) like God. Each received their rewards but all had to have *faith* and God's *heart* for *Salvation*.**

## CHAPTER 9

# THE WICKEDNESS OF THE WORLD

**The Wrath of God will be completed at The End of Days when The Times of The Gentiles are fulfilled (Luke 21:24). Jerusalem will be trodden down by The Gentiles and, at The End, The Messiah will come a second time to fulfill the purpose of His first coming.**

### Jacob's Time Of Trouble

**Here are Jeremiah's words decrying Judah's ways which provoked God to wrath. *"The children gather wood and the fathers kindle the fire and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven and to pour out drink offerings to other gods, that they may provoke me to anger"* (Jeremiah 7:18).**

**When Nebuchadnezzar took The Tribe of Judah into captivity, it was over the worship of other gods (especially The Queen of Heaven).**

**Jacob's *time of trouble* continues until Jerusalem is completely filled with the worship of false gods.**

**You are about to discover the origin of all the world's religions. This includes Babylon, The Great, The Christians, The Jews, The Muslims and others who worship The Queens of Heaven (which is idolatrous).**

## Two Queens of Heaven

*The Prophet Zechariah lifted up his eyes and saw a flying roll. A roll is a scroll or a book for everyone to read. "And he [angel] said to me, What do you see? And I answered, I see a flying roll; the length thereof is twenty cubits [30 feet] and the breadth thereof ten cubits [15 feet]. Then said he to me, This is the curse that goes forth over the face of the whole earth: for everyone that steals shall be cut off as on this side according to it; and everyone that swears shall be cut off as on that side according to it. I will bring it forth, said the LORD of hosts and it [wickedness] shall enter into the house of the thief and into the house of him that swears falsely [lies] by my name: and it shall remain in the midst of his house and shall consume it [wickedness] with the timber thereof and the stones thereof" (Zechariah 5:2-4).*

Wickedness is so prevalent in the world that everyone has been infected by it. *This evil curses the entire world. What is the cause of this wickedness?*

Zechariah received further insight, prophetically, from the angel, "*Then the angel that talked with me went forth and said to me, Lift up now your eyes and see what is this that goes forth. And I said, What is it? And he said, This is an ephah that goes forth. He said moreover, This is their resemblance through all the earth. And, behold, there was lifted up a talent of lead: and this is a woman that sits in the midst of the ephah. And he said, This is wickedness. And he cast it into the midst of the ephah; and he cast the weight of lead upon the mouth thereof. Then lifted I up mine eyes*

*and looked and behold, there came out two women and the wind was in their wings [flying]; for they had wings like the wings of a stork [giving birth]: and they lifted up the ephah between the earth and the heaven [in everything]. Then said I to the angel that talked with me, Whither do these bear the ephah? And he said to me, To build it an house [Temple] in the land of Shinar: and it shall be established and set there upon her own base” (Zechariah 5:5-11).*

In this trinity of gods, *a woman* is represented by *The Queen of Heaven* and she originated in *The Land of Shinar*. This was *Babylon* at the time of The Tower of Babel (Genesis 10:10). Nimrod was the first Emperor of The World and his mother was called *Isis* or *Ishtar* in Egypt. In English, it is “*Easter*” (one who has many children like a rabbit).

*The pre-flood Queen of Heaven was Eve, The Mother of All Living. The second woman was Ishtar in Egypt who was the post-flood Queen of Heaven. This wickedness, originated by these two women, covered the entire world. Both women started at the very beginning. This truth was held in unrighteousness – worshipping female humans as goddesses.*

### The Unrighteous Trinities

*Truth and righteousness are intertwined. The truth is God does the work while unrighteousness is done by human works. It is inherent in your very being to desire to make your own choices. Mankind always wants and seeks their own way. Wanting to be right is*

*natural*. Everyone must be what they want to be. The Mystery of God is “*Christ – In You.*” But, what does that mean? *The Prophets* and *the angels* didn’t know who The Spirit of Christ would be or when He would come. That is why Jesus, who was The Christ, asked if His Disciples knew who He was. Satan thought that since he was The Bright and Morning Star, he was to be The Savior. Mankind has been deciding for centuries what is The Truth of God. Only *the saints* and *the faithful* are allowed to know The Mystery of God.

### The False Trinity

The ancients in The Land of Shinar, the first Babylon, went astray in their attempts to follow The Truth. What did they do? They knew God as He *manifested the truth* to them through His *creation* (Romans 1:19). They didn’t worship or glorify God and were unthankful. What did they do? It is worth repeating because Christians still make the same mistakes. Those mistakes are made over and over again. Everyone is in Babylon. “*Professing themselves to be wise, they [Greeks and Barbarians] became fools*” (Romans 1:22).

What happened? Their imaginations and thoughts caused them, “[To change] *the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man and to birds and fourfooted beasts and creeping things*” (Romans 1:23). How clearly do you have to be told by God? God is not *corruptible*. He cannot die. Jesus, as *a human, could and did die*. His body was not *corrupted*. Christ did not sin! That is why His body was not allowed to decay (as it is written). As *a human*, He



*died* and, therefore, could not have been a part of *the trinity* until He was *glorified* as God. Mary, his mother, could not be part of *the trinity* either, because she was *a sinner* and her body decayed after her death.

The Holy Spirit is not another *god being*. The Holy Spirit is *the very power and essence* of God. Only God is *Holy* and *nothing else is worthy of worship*. There is only One God who has created everything. But, He will surprise mankind with all His future endeavors (Hebrews 3:4).

The Mystery of God does reveal a trinity. The conclusion of this book will clarify *this truth*. It isn't *The Law* which reveals *the truth*, but Christ (John 1:17). There are *many trinities*, whether it be Adam, Eve and Satan, or Osiris, Isis and Horus. It seems anything God has created, mankind worships as a mini-god. But, somehow they ignore The Creator – God. It is that simple. Individuals should worship *The Creator* and not His Creation. Certainly, nothing in the creation should be worshipped (animals, mountains, trees, plants or insects). That is *an unsolvable mystery* because it is not *the truth*.

Any man claiming to be Jesus, *The Savior is an anti-Christ*. Only Jesus, at present, is a God, exactly like His Father. The world is in Babylon because of their thinking and *human imagination*. Therefore, there are *many anti-Christ*s. So, *wickedness* is perpetuated by *the two women* who are The Queens of Heaven (Eve and Ishtar).



## CHAPTER 10

### DENOMINATIONS

The Apostle Paul wrote how God views *denominational* Christianity as both *the wise* and *The Barbarians*. Denominations began at The Tower of Babel.

God divided the nations so they could be free to choose *good* and *evil* on their own. Everyone needs an equal chance to become a Son of God.

#### A Summary

“*A doctrine*” is “*a teaching*.” God’s teaching methodology is like *a light rain* or *dew*. A severe down-pour produces a flood which can lead to many deaths. God’s teaching is *a gentle rain* that constantly brings *growth* and *fruitful results* (Deuteronomy 32:2).

God teaches *knowledge and truth* to those who are as babies and eager to be taught (Isaiah 28). “*Precept upon precept, line upon line, here a little and there a little*.” God has been teaching from *The Beginning* to *The End* – The Alpha and The Omega. God insists that you follow The Word of God and do not get hung up on any doctrine (Matthew 25). He teaches *the basics very simply*. Christ told you to live by *every Word of God* (Matthew 4:4).

## What Is Alpha And Omega?

*Throughout the scriptures, God and Christ declare they are The Alpha and Omega – The Beginning and The End. Each individual is going to inherit according to their personal works (Revelation 22:12-13). What does that mean?*

The Hebrew and Greek definitions for “*first*” and “*last*” are “*the beginning*” and “*the end*” which proclaims “*a purpose.*” Besides describing God’s *way of teaching*, *The Book of Revelation* announces God’s *Holy and righteous goal. The goal is to make man in His image. What image?*

The original Hebrew was pictorial and not an alphabet. “*Alpha*” in Hebrew is depicted by “*a shepherd’s crook*” and “*an ox.*” A shepherd *feeds his sheep* by moving them from one pasture to another.

The last Hebrew letter is “*TOV*” meaning “*goodness.*” Here is God’s *purpose. The beginning had goodness and the end will have the same goodness. God, at the end, makes all things new, just like the beginning. That is the beginning and end of The Word of God. That is how God makes you perfect in His image. In Greek, “Alpha” and “Omega” have the same meaning.*

## By Every Man’s Works

When Paul preached to a new group of Christians, he used God’s very basic system of teaching. He wanted to give the listeners *spiritual gifts* to make them *spiri-*

*tually strong* (Romans 1:11). He told them they must grow *doctrinally*, from *faith to faith*, in order to become *righteous*. Paul informed The Philippians that *Salvation was an individual matter* (Philippians 2:12-13). Each Christian must grow at *their own pace and understanding*.

Salvation is a gift. *Your personal rewards and inheritance* is determined by *your works*. Rewards are earned.

### Divided Denominations

Within every *denominational faith*, you will not find *two Christians who believe exactly the same thing*. Denominations *divide* congregations. *Each church group is divided* from another. Very few people *think exactly alike*. It is God's way of *teaching doctrine* so you are not being tossed *to and fro*. This is God's *doctrinal method* (Ephesians 4:14). "*And I, brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual, but as to carnal [human], even as to babes in Christ*" (I Corinthians 3:1). Do you understand?

The Mystery of God reveals Christians, in all denominations, are *only babes* and are just beginning to understand "*Christ – In Them*." If Christians remain divided because of *doctrinal teaching*, they will act like *human beasts* fighting and separating themselves from one another.

God condones *divided beliefs* as long as you do not look down on one another. Christians are to be *free* to

grow at *their own spiritual pace*. Paul was very clear about this point, “*Who then is Paul and who is Appolos, but ministers by whom you believed [in Christ], even as the Lord [Jesus] gave to every man?*” (I Corinthians 3:5). This can't be any simpler.

Ministers, with *their differing doctrines and teachings*, can, eventually, bring you “*To Christ.*” Those who *demand* you believe *one doctrine dogmatically* should be avoided at all costs. You should have *free choice* like *Adam and Eve*. When a denomination demands exactly the same understanding from everyone, *spiritual growth ceases*. Any minister that makes you follow a certain doctrine has helped bury *your talent* (Matthew 25). You will stop growing.

Paul describes *the one common creed* all Christians must believe in, “*For other foundation [creed] can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ*” (I Corinthians 3:11). Paul said, “*To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory*” (Colossians 1:27).

Every man's [minister's] work will be *tried and tested by fire*. This fire is not The Lake of Fire, but a fire which *tries one's faith*. “*That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold perishes, though it be tried with fire, might be found to praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ*” (I Peter 1:7).

“*Every man's [minister's] work shall be made manifest:*

*for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire [trial] shall try every man's [minister's] work of what sort it is. If any man's work [no divisions] abide which he has built [a ministry] thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he [minister] shall suffer loss [know he was wrong]: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire [loss]. Know you not that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit [Holy Spirit] of God dwells in you? If any man defile [destroy or corrupt] the temple [house] of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple [house] you are"* (I Corinthians 3:13-17). This is very simple to understand!

The Body of Jesus has *many parts* or *divisions* like hands, feet, skin and a heart. Each part has a *purpose*. When united, *the entire body is alive* and will receive *Salvation*. Denominations are God's different systems of teaching (His doctrinal method). *You can be separate in works and beliefs but united as a whole.*

By the way, you have just read God's purpose for *The Lake of Fire* as it *purges sin* (Isaiah 6:1-7). *Fire purges sin. Denominations are God's way of teaching truth through free choice.* That is why Jesus told *The Seven Churches*, who were all different denominationally, that He *loved them all* (Revelation 3:19).

## CHAPTER 11

### GENTILES' END OF DAYS

When humans are left to themselves without God, *violence is close at hand*. Many years ago, God allowed *mankind* to live for almost 1,000 years. Within this time they could sift through their own choices of *good* and *evil*. What was the outcome? Nothing but *violence* and *wickedness* ensued (Genesis 6:5).

#### God Divided The Nations

Before The Noachian *flood*, mankind was completely *wicked*. Everything they did was *evil*. Everyone held religious *faiths* and *philosophies* in *unrighteousness*. The Mystery of God was to remain *a great mystery* until The Times of The Gentiles were fulfilled (Luke 21:24). *This mystery*, which is like a puzzle, is not completed until *The Seventh Trumpet blows*, “*But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he has declared to his servants the prophets*” (Revelation 10:7). Jesus, The Christ, is The Messiah and will not return until *The Seventh Trumpet sounds*, which concludes The Times of Gentile Rule.

#### Nebuchadnezzar Till The Messiah Comes

With Israel and Judah (God's chosen people) com-

pletely corrupt, God gave *all rulership in the world* to The Gentiles (Isaiah 1). Nebuchadnezzar, ruler of Babylon, took Judah into captivity. This began *The Gentiles'* control of the earth until *The Seventh Trumpet* will sound.

When Israel entered The Promised Land with Joshua (as God's savior), their first conquest was The Kingdom of Jericho. God told Joshua that He would defeat His enemies. To prove The Word of God, The Israelites were told to circle the walls of Jericho for seven days. Each day, The Priests were to blow the trumpet. On The Seventh Day, they blew *The Seventh Trumpet* and *the city walls began to crumble*. Israel entered the city and slew the people without any resistance. This act symbolized God's people entering The Rest of God in The Promised Land. Jericho was *a type* of the future when Jesus would come to restore The Kingdom of God to Israel's control. Israel was *first*, then had become *last*, but will be *first* once again. Joshua (the savior) pictured God as King and Lord once again. As long as Israel had *faith* in God, He would give them *rest* in His *paradise*. Despite all of God's patience and pleading through The Prophets, Israel corrupted themselves by following Gentile ways. Since they refused to obey God in *faith*, they chose The Gentile *ways* once again.

When Samuel died, Israel wanted a human King as *their savior*. King Saul lacked faith. He was followed by King David, *a man who was given a right heart after he repented*. God promised David that *a savior* would come from his *seed* to be King of Kings.



## God's People Fail Again

Jesus, a son of David through his mother Mary's genealogy, was *The Promised Seed* and The Savior of The World. Mary was of The Tribe of Levi (like Moses) and would fulfill *The Word of God* (Deuteronomy 18). God sent His First Begotten Son who was *filled* with God's Holy Spirit. (He was The Word of God). Jesus said to Thomas (His Disciple), "*I am the way, the truth and the life: no man comes to the Father, but by me*" (John 14:6). He was The Messiah.

The Mystery of God is the manifestation of Christ through being filled with God's Holy Spirit. Jesus said, "*And I will pray the Father and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever. Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees him not, neither knows him: but you know him; for he dwells with you and shall be in you*" (John 14:16-17). Without God, The Gentiles cannot learn God's *truth*. Only those with God's Holy Spirit know *the truth* regarding who Jesus, The Christ is (Matthew 16 and 17).

## The Last Days

When Jesus came, *The Last Days began*. Because His people rejected Him, *The Last Days* had a curse which continued until The End of Time. *The Last Days* of The Gentile Rule continues until *The Seventh Trumpet sounds*. The End of Days came to The Jews in Jesus' day. Both Israel and Judah rejected *the groom* during *The Last Days*. Jesus divorced His wife (Israel and



Judah) for *a more worthy nation* (The Gentiles) (Matthew 21:43). At that time, The Gentiles became first, replacing Israel as God's new grafted branch in God's Holy Tree of Life (Romans 11:17-18). In 70 A.D., with The Fall of The Temple, *a New Covenant was codified causing The Old Covenant to vanish* (Hebrews 8:13). *A Remnant of The Gentiles along with The Messianic Jews will become God's people. It is time for The Gentiles to rule the world but, as with Israel, only a remnant will become The Bride of Christ.*

### God's Two Witnesses

Jesus prophesies His *two witnesses* will be Prophets for 1260 days (Revelation 11:3). The prophecy (in symbols) defines *these two witnesses*, "*These are the two olive trees and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth*" (Revelation 11:4). *What two olive trees? The original olive tree was Israel, but God took the wild olive tree (Gentiles) and grafted it into the natural olive tree (Israel) (Romans 11).*

*These two olive trees*, represented by The Messianic Jews and The Remnants of The Gentiles, will have to go through *the great tribulation* in order to be God's witnesses for 1260 days. After three days, God's *two witnesses* will be martyred and resurrected. After *their resurrection*, they will ascend to the clouds (Revelation 11:11-12). When is this?

*"And the seventh angel sounded and there were great voices in heaven, saying, the kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ;*

*and he shall reign for ever and ever*" (Revelation 11:15). God will take over all *the kingdoms of this world* and The Messiah will return to meet His *Bride* (Messianic Jews and Gentiles). *The Time of Gentile Rule is fulfilled and will end. How will Christians know when The Time of Gentile Rule is fulfilled? "And the nations [Gentiles] were angry [wicked] and your wrath is come [Plagues] and the time of the dead, that they should be judged and that you should give reward to your servants the prophets and to the saints and them that fear your name, small and great; and should destroy them which destroy the earth"* (Revelation 11:18).

The Times of The Gentiles will end when *the world* becomes *angry*. It is *the final result* of The Gentile Rule without God. The Mystery of God is completed by The Return of Jesus. Everyone, during The Millennium, will hear *the announcement* of The Wedding Feast. The Bride is ready to become Christ's wife (Revelation 19:7).

## CHAPTER 12

### WHO IS THE ANTI-CHRIST?

You now know there have been many *anti-Christ*s throughout human history. All of them claimed to be *The Savior* and *The Messiah*. *The Mystery of God is The Messiah*. When will He come?

#### Who Is The Final anti-Christ?

The Time of Gentile Rule ends when *the whole world becomes angry*. Why? Gentile Rule always results in nothing when they do not follow God. Survival without God is not possible.

*“Peace, peace when there is no peace.”* Who is to blame?

- 1) Most humans want their basic needs met. When their needs are met, they choose to spend the rest of their lives seeking *pleasure*. That’s about it. They want to be left to themselves.
- 2) *The supposedly wise* or *élites* want a man-made Paradise but seek it on their own. (Since survival demands safety, no wise war leader is needed).

God calls the first group *ignorant* (don’t care) and the

second group *fools*. Thousands of years of man's rule has proven this doesn't work. Israel wanted a king to rule over them. They were just like the nations around them who followed *idols*. So, God gave them what they wanted. This resulted in *the blame game* and is, also, the definition of The anti-Christ. There have been many *anti-Christ*s or *saviors* throughout history. They pretended to be Christ but, in reality, they were *anti-Christ*s.

### Is Jesus The Christ?

When the world unites under *a one-world government*, like it was in Shinar and The Tower of Babel, God knows trouble will ensue. Ultimately, there can never be peace. Someone will always be to blame. They will act like beasts and never be able to walk together in peace. (Read the book, *Morality and Economics*).

The final anti-Christ (*a world savior*) will prove to be wrong. The Jews will be the cause of the world's trouble because *The anti-Christ* will sit in God's *temple* as God. Jerusalem ends up taking the blame. After all, Jerusalem is in *Babylon* with the world's three major *religions*: Judaism, Christianity and Islam. Everyone wants *their Messiah* to come. World War III will be *the result* of Gentile Rule with *The Final anti-Christ*.

Who is *The Real Messiah* and *The Savior* of The World? Is Jesus really The Christ? Religion, again, is blamed for the world's dilemma. *The beast's* world rule, without The Real God, turns upon Jerusalem as *the culprit*. During this time of *world tribulation*,

hate and wickedness prevail and God calls Jerusalem, “*And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city [Jerusalem], which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified*” (Revelation 11:8).

This is the time of *the great tribulation*. *Tribulation* does not merely pertain to Judah as in 70 A.D., but will include all the nations of the world as they gather against Jerusalem (Zechariah 14).

Babylon is *The Great Whore* and *the major religions* worship this city and will fight over her. (Read the book, *Satan's Image*). So many want to know, “*Who is The Messiah and when will He come?*” Are The Jews and Muslims correct? Is Christianity right? Who is The Messiah? Is Jesus, The Christ, The Messiah?

### Mark Of The Beast

God's *wrath* is unleashed upon those who *hold the truth in an unrighteous way*. What is an *unrighteous way*? Everyone knows *the truth* regarding who God was and is. However, they don't stop there. They side-step God and, instead, worship His *creation* (Romans 1:21-25).

The Mark of The Beast carries *the number 666*. These numbers are the names of three men who were *beast-like*. They are Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, Cyrus, The Mede of Media-Persia and Alexander, The Great of Macedonia. All three are *beasts*, much like a *lion*, *bear* and a *leopard*. The fourth beast is *the most vio-*

*lent. The final beast will be an image of Rome and will have The Mark of The Beast. (Read the book, The Mark of The Beast).*

**Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, had great pride and didn't trust anyone. He had to live like a combination of a lion, a bear and a leopard. He lost his rational mind and, for seven years, lived in the wilderness as a ferocious beast. That is the example of The Mark of The Beast.**

*The final anti-Christ, along with the nations, will become wild with rage and turn against the great whore – Jerusalem. They will meet in Armageddon to attack Jerusalem. At the time of The Seventh Trump, World War III will be under way which is The Third Woe (Revelation 10:7). When two-thirds of Jerusalem falls with a great earthquake, it will divide The City (Revelation 16:18-19).*

### **The Apostle John's Prophecy**

**The Mystery Of God concludes at The Seventh Trump (Revelation 10). The Christians who are worthy will be protected by Jesus, their rock. Some of God's Two Witnesses, The Remnant of The Messianic Jews and an undisclosed number of Gentiles, will go through The Final Great Tribulation. Those protected in safety are willing to die for Him. They will be worthy to be Christ's wife (Revelation 19:6-7). The rest, who are commandment keepers, must prove they are willing to die for Jesus so they can become The Bride of Christ (Revelation 12:13-17).**

This woman will be in *great travail* with a child to be delivered (tribulation). Her *son*, Jesus, The Christ, is ready to return. Is Jesus really The Messiah, *The Savior of The World* (I John 4:14)? The Apostle John is responsible for revealing The Mystery of God. Was Jesus *the mystery*? How does a Christian know if Jesus is The Christ (I John 4)? John's first clue is that Christians must *test* or prove *the spirits*. What *spirits*? *A Spirit* isn't human. God and *the angels* are *spirits* and not part of *the physical creation*. This is a vital point. As Jesus said, "*Spirit is spirit and flesh is flesh.*" *Humans* and *spirits* are *two different species*. How can Jesus, The Prophets and The Christians still be human and, yet, be *spirit*, also?

*The Prophets* who spoke spiritually were led by The Holy Spirit to spread truth (I Peter 1:21). Jesus was also filled with *The Holy Spirit* (I Peter 1:10-11). The difference is Christ was filled with *The Word of God* from *birth*. It was given to Him without *measure* (John 3:34).

You are to try *the spirits* (I John 4:1). Those who profess Jesus is The Christ can be led by *the truth* of God's Holy Spirit. What is the difference? "*Hereby know you the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God*" (I John 4:2). Jesus was totally human just like The Prophets. The Prophets are, at times, led by God's Holy Spirit. Jesus, as The Word of God, only spoke God's *words*. He had God's Holy Spirit from birth, which made Him Holy. That is why Jesus said He was completely human and, of Himself, could do nothing (John 5:19).

***“And every spirit that confesses not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh [human] is not of God: and this is that spirit of anti-christ, whereof you have heard that it should come [anti-Christ spirit]; and even now already is it in the world”*** (I John 4:3). Christians can tell the difference because they have God's Holy Spirit (I John 4:4). Anyone claiming Jesus wasn't totally human is *an anti-Christ*. Even worse, some have the audacity to claim He never came at all. These are *false prophets – anti-Christ*s. They preach a *false savior*.

Now, you understand the difference between *the truth* and *the lies of false prophets*. From the beginning, God's Prophets knew a Messiah would come. However, they did not know who The Messiah would be or when he would come. Satan, as a cherub, with the rest of *the angels* did not know either (I Peter 1:10-12). The Apostle Peter states that in his day, they had *a more sure word of prophecy* because they had *witnessed “in vision”* that Jesus was *The Christ* (Matthew 16, 17 and II Peter 1:19-21). Christians, with God's Holy Spirit, have solved The Mystery of God. Most of *this great puzzle* is in place. Jesus is *The Christ* which resolves God's Mystery, which is *“Christ – In You” – The Hope of Glory* (Colossians 1:16-17).



## CHAPTER 13

### IS THERE A TRINITY?

There have been *human trinities* since the beginning of time. Adam, Eve and Satan were *the first trinity*. Eve was *The First Queen of Heaven*. After the flood, they were replaced by Osiris, Isis (Ishtar) and Horus. Is there *a true trinity*?

#### Numbers

Biblically, mathematical *numbers* have *divine meanings*. Some of them carry *prophetic meanings* like the numbers 3, 5, 7 and 12. Even those at The Tower of Babel knew these numbers. God gave The Prophets and the angels these divine astronomical numbers. Eventually, all mankind began to learn their meanings. The entire Gospel of The Plan of God was written in *the stars*. The number 3 is defined as *completeness*. The number 5 carries the meaning of *grace*. The number 7 denotes *rest*. The number 12 means *government* and *justice*. These divine numbers are seen in the seasons, months, years and time itself. The number 4 was reserved for *the earth* as it represents *the four corners of the earth*. The number 6 was *man's number* (as an animal).

Everything God created represented Him and His *Divine Gospel of Fulfillment*. No person on earth has

any valid excuse to not know God. God has left millions of clues.

### Number 3 – Completeness

The concept of number 3 was originated by God. Once again, mankind held *the truth in unrighteousness*. As usual, they took the meaning of the number 3 and formulated their own conclusions, but they have done it erroneously. Because they did not understand the true meaning of The Mystery of God, they took number 3 and applied it to humans. In doing so, they thought they could make *mankind perfect or complete*. Mankind turned *leaders, heroes and things* into a trinity which they felt represented *perfection*. But, *no human in the flesh* can be *perfect or Holy* (John 5:19). Even Jesus couldn't do anything of Himself. Only God is *Holy*. Nothing and no one can be in God's *exact likeness* or be able to create all things (Hebrews 3:4).

But, God's goal is to make you in His *image*. God's *purpose* is to be *All In All* (I Corinthians 15:28). Mankind has created *many human and angelic trinities*. The Sumerians at The Tower of Babel viewed *the angels* as gods. They didn't understand that only God is *perfect* and only He can do *everything*.

### Prophets And The Law

Jesus told you He did not come to *destroy The Law or The Prophets*. "*Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled* [made perfect]" (Matthew 5:18). It is a change

from *a human being to a spirit being*. God offers this free gift to anyone who follows Him. Until you become like Jesus and God, you cannot become *perfect* (I Corinthians 13:10).

### Author Of Salvation

Christ is *The Author of Your Salvation* (Hebrews 12:2). Jesus, as God's *First Begotten Son*, wrote *The Book with God's words* (God's work). What is God's work? The people asked Jesus what they must do in order to do *The Works of God* (John 6:28). "*Jesus answered and said to them, This is the work of God, that you believe on him whom he has sent*" (John 6:29). (Read the book, *God's Work*).

The knowledge God is giving you is a miracle. Jesus, throughout His life, *lived every Word of God*. He wrote *The Book of Salvation*. He set *the example*, through *free choice*, of being unblemished and perfect. You must sacrifice yourself for Him, as Christ sacrificed Himself for you.

### The Real Trinity

The number 3 is God's divine number for perfection. Christ, in His final prayer to God, defines God's *trinity of fulfillment*, "*And for their sakes* [disciples] *I sanctify* [made perfect] *myself*, [free choice] *that they* [disciples] *also might be sanctified* [made perfect] *through The Truth*. *Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe* [faith] *on me* [Christ] *through their word* [preaching]. *That they all may be one; as The Fa-*

*ther, art in me and I in you that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe [faith] you have sent me"* (John 17:19-21).

**This is *The Mystery* of God – *complete in perfection*. This is "*Christ – In You*" which is *The Hope of Glory* (Colossians 1:27). This is God's *trinity* or *The Number of Perfection*.**

### Hope Of Glory

God's *trinity* is not a *great mystery* to followers of God. *This mystery "In Christ"* is made known to God's people (*saints* or *the faithful*). God's people are His *called-out ones*. Where or what are they called-out from? They are *called-out* from "*those who hold the truth in unrighteousness*" (Revelation 18:4). They are still in Babylon. Notice, God's *trinity* has another goal and purpose. Christ came to save *the world* (I John 4:14). Jesus prayed that *the faithful*, as God's *sons*, may witness so *the world* may believe as well. Jesus came to *Save The World* as He prayed, "*I in them and you in me, that they may be made perfect [fulfilled] in one; and that the world may know [faith] that you have sent me and have loved them, as you have loved me*" (John 17:23). How clear do you need it to be? The True Trinity is when The Father, God's Son, Jesus and *the whole world* are *One*.

*The potential for Salvation of The World* continues under *The New Heaven* and on *The New Earth* when God will make *all things new* (Revelation 21:5). Wow! (Read the book, *God's Will*). The prophecy in Reve-

lation *guarantees* and *promises* you *Salvation*. God never gives up until all will receive *Eternal Life*. “*And he said to me [John], It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give to him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. He that overcomes shall inherit all things [as Christ]; and I will be his God and he shall be my son*” (Revelation 21:6-7). My, oh my, how great God’s love is for you.

The Potential for *Salvation* continues into The Kingdom of God. The Bride of Christ, now His *wife*, becomes a *priestess* to bring *the new faithful* to *Salvation* (Revelation 5:10). *The Wife of Jesus* is now *The Real Queen of Heaven*.

God and Christ are The Beginning and The End. God began with *goodness* (God’s glory) and will end with *goodness*. The creation of The Bride and God’s Holy Spirit is *The Loving Mystery of God*. “*And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come [free choice]. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will [potential free choice], let him take the water of life freely*” (Revelation 22:17).

Your decision to follow God and His Son allows you to win the greatest lottery of all time. It’s a free gift. You don’t need to buy a ticket. Your gift is *Eternal Life*. It is from The Father who created you, fed you, looked after you and wanted you to follow His Way because He loves you.